GENEALOGICAL NOTES

—ON—

A BRANCH OF

—THE—

FAMILY OF MAYES

—AND ON—

THE RELATED FAMILIES

—OF—

CHAPPELL, BANNISTER, JONES, PETERSON, LOCKE, HARDAWAY, THWEATT AND OTHERS

BY EDWARD MAYES
OF JACKSON, MISS.

SUBJECT TO CORRECTIONS

PRINTED BY HEDERMAN BROS., JACKSON, MISS.

CHAPTER I.

PRELIMINARY.—THE NAME.—A SPECULATION.

The family of Mayes is probably of Dutch origin. Certain it is, that in Holland there was a family of some historical celebrity of the name of Maas, or Maes,; and, according to Mr. Kirk (as shall presently be shown), it was, even so far back as the year 1476, considered an "ancient" family.*

The name was spelled indifferently, Maas, or Maes; the pronunciation given in the Biographical Lexicons being Mas, the **a** having the sound of "a" in "far." Quite a number of this name are mentioned in the histories and biographical encyclopedias.

Remembering that the family is described as being "ancient" so far back as 1476, it becomes interesting to note these coincidences:

1. The Dutch name for the river Meuse is Maas. This river rises in France, and taking generally a northwestern course, passes through Belgium and Holland, emptying into the North Sea by three mouths, after a course of 434 miles.

2. The Dutch city of **Maes**tricht (Dutch, **Maas**tricht) is situated in Holland, and is on the Meuse, or Maas. Its name is supposed to be a corruption of **Trajectum ad Mosam,** or **Mosoe Trajectum**; i. e., the "bridge or passage of the Meuse," there having been a bridge or passage over the river at this place, in very early times. This is not only a very ancient city, but also is now considered one of the strongest fortresses

*—Charles the Bold; Kirk, vol. 3, p. 442.

in Europe. (See **Meuse** and **Maestricht,** in Lippencott's Gazetteer.)

Here was the earliest known home of the family of Mass or Maes; and it is a natural or reasonable inference that the ancient family took its name from the river. The spelling and pronunciation, in each case, are the same; it was the home of the family; and the common course in the origin of family names points to that conclusion.

3. **Mr. Kirk,** as stated above, speaks of the family as of the year 1476, and denominates it as then an "ancient" Dutch family. The earliest mention of the name in England which has rewarded a search conducted at intervals as occasion offered for about forty-two years and in many large libraries, is in the case of Thomas Mase, who was buried from St. Peter's Chapel, Cornhill, London, September 6th, 1560. This date, it will be observed, is nearly a full century after the year 1476, when Mr. Kirk describes the Dutch family, of a name certainly **idem sonans,** as "ancient." There is a well-known historical fact which renders it not at all unlikely that the people in London, who in the sixteenth century were calling themselves Mase, Mease, Mayse—were connected by blood with the "ancient" Dutch family of the fifteenth century mentioned by Kirk. That fact was the existence of the Hanseatic League, and the trade relations established by that organization with adjacent countries and especially with London, in England, and the establishment of Dutch communities there. For it must be remembered that the Dutch were always and mainly a nation of traders and of roving merchants.

The **League** is usually regarded as originated by a compact made in 1241 between the cities of Lubeck and Hamburg, to provide for the security of trade; to which compact other cities soon acceded, 'till at its best the League embraced 85 towns. By concessions from Henry III (1216-1272) and the sovereigns who succeeded him, the London factory gained command of both the import and export trade of England, and engrossed the carrying trade almost to the exclusion of British merchants. England, however, in 1597, revoked all

special privileges of the Hanseatic merchants.* But it will be observed that those privileges and the great factory of the Hanseatic merchants in London did continue until after the date when the name of **Mase**, or **Mease**, or **Mayse**, begins to appear in the public records of that city. Many of those "Easterling" merchants, and of their junior sons, and employes, married English women, or formed other relations with the English people, and settled permanently in England, notwithstanding the penalty of expulsion from the Hanse and forfeiture of all interests in its affairs.† Especially must this have been true after the power and influence of the League began to fail.

4. It appearing historically that there was an "ancient" Dutch family named **Maas** or **Maes**, it is inherently probable that some of its members participated in this great commercial and semi-military movement, and found lodgment in some of the great factories or settlements established in adjacent countries—and no place more likely than in London. This probability, and the linguistic processes by which the rougher Dutch forms of **Maas** or **Maes** may be transmuted into the softer but similar English or Irish form of Mase, or Mease, or Mayse, or Maze—are illustrated and emphasized by the fact that, but a short time later, just such a movement and change in that family is known to have occurred.

In the year 1871 the writer fell into a long correspondence with Rev. John Maze, a Wesleyan minister, who resided in Ireland. His family were wealthy linen manufacturers of Belfast; and he sent the writer several photographs of his kinspeople. Mr. Maze wrote that this Irish family was numerous about Belfast; were Protestants; and spelled their names in **both forms** of Maze and Mayes, although known to be the same family; that they were **all** descendants of three brothers—Dutchmen—who had followed William of Orange from Holland, as his soldiers, in 1688, (when William landed an army of 15,000 men at Torbay to support his pretensions)

---

*—The Universal Encyclopedia; title, **Hanseatic League, or Hanse Towns.**

†—**Memoirs of the Quisenberry Family**, vol. 2, p. 9-10.

and who finally settled about Belfast in Ireland, where their descendants were numerous and thriving in 1871.

One line of that Dutch family having certainly established itself in the seventeenth century in Ireland under the name of Mayes, there seems no reason why the same thing should not have occurred at an earlier date with other lines coming through London.

In view of this probability, it will be interesting to note some of the more interesting members of the old Dutch family.

In his biography of **Charles the Bold of Burgundy,** Mr. Kirk gives a very interesting account of Jacob van der Maas who died quite heroically in 1476 at the battle of Morat, when Charles was defeated and slain by the Swiss. "Amongst so many bodies, his alone was given up to be entombed with those of his ancestors," Vol. 3, pp. 439-442. In Motley's **Rise of the Dutch Republic,** Vol. 1, pp. 95-109 account is given of the abdication in 1555 by Charles V. of his sovereignty over the Netherlands; at which ceremony, Jacob Maas, "a member of the council of Brabant, a man of great learning, eloquence and prolixity." delivered an address on behalf of the States-General; and again in 1588 this same man was conspicuous in the diplomatic negotiations for peace between Spain and the Netherlands; Motley's **United Netherlands,** Vol. 2, p. 359-373. Englebert Maas was, in 1564, chancellor of the province of Brabant; **Rise of the Dutch Republic,** Vol. 1, p. 455. Andreas Maas (or Maes), born in Brabant in 1515 or 1516, died in 1573, and is historically known as an orientalist scholar; **Lippincott's Biographical Dictionary.** Nicholas Maas, born 1632, was an eminent painter; as also was his son, Godfried Maas, born 1660; **Lippincott's Dictionary.**

CHAPTER II.

THE NAME IN ENGLAND.

The earliest authentic accounts which have been found in England of persons bearing the name of **Mayes** date from the second half of the sixteenth century. There seems to have been quite a number of them at that period in the city of London, as is shown by the old parish registers of marriages, births and deaths, many of which registers have been published.

At that time, as was then commonly the case with all proper names, the name was spelled phonetically and variously; that of the same person being often spelled in different ways, even in the same document.

Thomas Mase was buried from St. Peter's chapel, Cornhill, London, on the 6th of September, 1560.

William Mease was buried from the same chapel on December 19, 1567; and his widow married Godfrey Willson in the same chapel, on January 23rd, 1569.

John Mayse was buried in Kensington parish, on May 24th, 1568.

William Mease was licensed by the Bishop of Lincoln, in London, on June 12, 1573, to marry Isobell Tressam, spinster.

William Mease was buried from St. Peter's Chapel, on September 24th, 1573.

Giles Mase married Elizabeth Pursell at Kensington parish, London, on February 25th, 1595; christened a daughter, Mary,

on January 9th, 1596; and buried her on the 23rd of that same month.

George Mase buried a child from the same parish, on August 29th, 1598.

Richard Mayes, of Edmonton, Middlesex, was licensed on January 31st, 1620, to marry Elizabeth Richmond, spinster.

William Mayes was buried from St. James', Clerkenwell, on July 14th, 1636.

Robert Mayes, aged 28, came over to Virginia in the **Assurance**, in July, 1635.*

The foregoing disconnected memoranda are of but little interest except in so far as they may indicate the place of birth and the family connection of

William Mease (or Mays)

He was the ancestor who immigrated to Virginia; and in order to understand clearly his life and history, it will be well to state briefly in another chapter the history of the settlement in which he took part.

---

*—Hotten's List of Immigrants, p. 111.

CHAPTER III.

THE MAYES FAMILY IN VIRGINIA.

In 1606 a great joint stock company was formed in England for the establishment of two colonies in America, and one of them was the Virginia Company. The summer of that year was spent in preparations for planting the first colony. The king had a code of laws framed, which gave no popular liberty or control; and by that code religion was established in the colony according to the doctrine and rites of the Anglican church. On the 19th of December, 1606, a squadron of three small vessels sailed for Virginia—"earth's only paradise." The enterprise was ill concerted. Of the 105 on the list of immigrants, there were but 12 laborers and few mechanics. They were going to a wilderness, in which, as yet, not a house was standing; and there were 48 gentlemen to 4 carpenters. Neither were there any men with families.

On the 26th of April, 1607, the immigrants entered the James river, and after a search of seventeen days, on the 13th of May, they reached the peninsula about fifty miles above the mouth of the stream, which they selected for the site of the colony and gave the name of Jamestown. The settlers sent out exploring parties, and began fortifications. A fortnight after landing they had to repel an attack by Indians Their prospect must have been a dreary one, for nothing answered to their expectations. From the unsuitable character of the settlers dangerous factions prevailed from the first, until John Smith obtained control and maintained some sort of order. No one would work, and famine and the Indians preyed upon them mercilessly.

The prospects of the colony were so discouraging at the beginning of the year 1609, that, in the hope of improving them, the company applied for a new charter, with enlarged privileges, which was granted. Under this charter another expedition, which was greater than any preceding it, and consisted of nine vessels, sailed from Plymouth on the first of June, 1609. This fleet, however, was scattered by a hurricane; and only six of the vessels finally reached Jamestown in August. In September John Smith departed for England, leaving at Jamestown three ships, seven boats, a good stock of provisions, nearly 500 settlers, 20 pieces of cannon, etc. George Percy was president. Jamestown was then strongly fortified with palisades and contained between fifty and sixty houses. But no effort had been made by tillage to replenish the provisions; the stock was soon consumed, and the horrors of famine was soon added to other calamities. The intense sufferings of the colonists were long remembered, and this period is referred to as "the starving time." In six months their number was reduced to sixty, and such was the extremity of these that they must soon have perished but for the opportune arrival of succor. On the 23rd of May, 1610, Sir Thomas Gates, who had been cast away at the Bermudas, in the hurricane mentioned above, with his vessel and passengers reached Jamestown with 140 of his company, in two small vessels which he had built. So forlorn was the condition of the colony, however, that Gates reluctantly resolved to abandon it. The whole colony, accordingly embarked, and was under sail down the river, when it met a fleet of three vessels bringing supplies and new settlers from England, with Lord Delaware who had resolved to come out in person as governor and captain-general.

Gates and his disheartened companions turned back with these newcomers, and all were set vigorously at work to restore the settlement. The administration of Lord Delaware was highly wholesome, and under his judicious discipline the settlement returned to order and contentment. His health failing, Lord Delaware returned to England in the spring of 1611. Sir Thomas Gates had already gone thither; and Sir Thomas Dale had been sent to Virginia with the appointment

of high marshal, bearing a code of extraordinary laws, which practically placed the colony under martial rule

In June, 1611, Gates returned to Virginia with 300 additional settlers and a considerable stock of cows and other cattle. In this party was **William Mease**, our ancestor, who went out as a minister of the gospel of the Established church, being then 37 years of age.* He landed in Virginia with his party, bound on this mission, four years after the first settlement of Jamestown, and more than eight years before the arrival of the **Mayflower** at Plymouth colony.

During the year 1611 and the next, the colony in Virginia began to expand. New settlements were made at Dutch Gap, Henrico, and Bermuda Hundred; individual grants of property began to be made, and many signs of prosperity appeared. In 1612 the systematic culture of tobacco was established by John Rolfe, who two years later married Pocahontas.

In the spring of 1613 Sir Thomas Gates left the colony finally, and the government fell to the hands of Dale, who remained at the head until 1616. In this year, 1616, John Rolfe was in England, and Pocahontas with him; and while there he wrote a letter to King James I, in which he described in detail the condition of the colony and of the various small settlements. This letter is published as an appendix to Bishop Meade's "Old Churches and Families of Virginia" Vol. 2, p. 430, where it may be found. He says, among other things:

"At Kequoghton (being not far from the mouth of the river, thirty-seven miles below James Towne on the same side) are twenty—whereof eleven are farmers; all those also maintayne themselves as the former. Capten George Webb, commander. **Mr. Wm Mays** (sic) minister there * * * So the nomber of officers and laborers are two hundred and five. The farmors, 81; besides women and children, in everie place some—which in all amounteth to three hundred and fifty-one persons—a small nomber to advance so great a worke."

The little settlement of twenty men (with some of the women and children) at Kequoghton, of which William Mease

*—Virginia Historical Collections, vol. xi, p. 137.

was minister, was located at what is now known as Hampton. It is a pleasant thing to know that our first American was self-devoted to so noble a calling, and followed it under circumstances which argue so much of piety and disinterestedness.

It will be noted that Rolfe's spelling of the name shows very clearly that it was then pronounced exactly as it is now. The spelling went through several formative changes before it settled into its present lettering. The ancestor and his immediate family wrote it as above given; but others even then wrote it "Mayes," amongst other forms.

The year 1619 was remarkable in the annals of the colony. It is hardly an exaggeration to say that it witnessed the creation of Virginia as an independent community. From the beginning of that year we may date the definite ascendency of Sandys and his party, an ascendency which was maitained 'till the dissolution of the company, and during which the affairs of Virginia were administered with a degree of energy unselfishness and statesmanlike wisdom perhaps unparalleled in the history of corporations. Everything was done to encourage permanent settlers rather than mere traders. Apprentices, unmarried women, and neat cattle were sent out. In the year 1619 alone over 1,200 persons were sent out, half as private settlers or servants, half at the expense of the company.

On the 22nd of March, 1622, a memorable massacre occurred in the colony. On the evening before, and on that morning, the savages, as usual, came unarmed into the houses of the planters, with fruits, fish, turkeys, and venison to sell. In some places they actually sat down to breakfast with the English. At about the hour of noon, the savages rising suddenly and everywhere at the same time, butchered the colonists with their own implements, sparing neither age, sex, nor condition. Three hundred and forty-seven men, women and children fell in a few hours. The destruction might have been universal but for the disclosure of a converted Indian named Chanco, who, during the night before, revealed the plot to one Richard Pace with whom he lived. Pace gave the alarm to the governor, whose vigilance then saved a large part of the colony.

The court of James I, jealous of the growing power of the Virginia company and of its too republican spirit, seized on the occasion of this massacre to attribute all the calamities of the colony to its mismanagement and neglect, and thus to frame a pretext for dissolving the charter. An inquiry was instituted at London. The company, supported by the colonists, resisted the high-handed proceedings of the king and his officers; and some of the colonists repaired to London, in the year 1623. for the purpose of testifying in behalf of the company. Amongst this number was **William Mease**, an abstract of whose evidence, favorable to the company's management is still extant.*

The resistance of the company and of the colonists, however, was unavailing. In November, 1624, the company was dissolved by a writ of **quo warranto**, which was determined upon a technicality in the pleadings. This act was in substance a confiscation, effected by tyranny. Virginia thereby became a colony of the crown.†

At some time after giving his evidence as above **William Mease** returned to Virginia, but exactly when he returned is not known; and neither is the exact date of his death. Sometime about the year 1638 he purchased from one Ed. Townstall (or Tunstall) a tract of 250 acres of land which had been patented to Townstall, lying on the south bank of the Appomattox river. He was living in the "New Towne" of Jamestown city about the year 1650. Died at Henrico.‡ He had two sons—Henry and John. "Colonel" Henry Mease, as he seems to have been styled, had a grant of 2,000 acres of land in Stafford county on the 7th of June, 1666, as shown by the Va. Land Grants, Book 5, p. 630.

IX.—John Maies, so his name was written, described as the son of William Mease (or Mays, or Mayes), was born about 1615, apparently. He received a patent, dated August 7th,

---

*—Virginia Hist. Collections, vol. viii, pp. 180, 181; **Idem**, vol. xi., p. 137.

†—The foregoing history is extracted from the article on "Virginia," in vol. v. of the "History for Ready Reference."

‡—William and M. College Mag., vol. 13, p. 117: The Va. Mag., vol. 11, p. 411; Proc. Virg. Hist. Soc., vol. 11, p. 137, 163.

1667, to 293 acres, 2 roods, 33 poles of land, described as being "on the south side of Appomattox river, 125 acres, part thereof, being part of a patent of 25 acres granted to Ed. Townstall, and by him sold to William Maies, father to the said John Maies, adjoining to the said Maies' land next the river." Also he received another patent dated October 27th, 1673, for 89 acres, 23 poles of land in Charles City county, described as being "on the south side of Appomattox river, beginning (etc.) at the easterly end of ye long slash, neigh Samuel Woodward's head line." (Charles City county records, book 6, p. 134, and p. 481; William and Mary College Magazine, Vol. xiii, pp. 117, 119).

This John Maies married a daughter of **Henry Newcomb** (X). The date of his death is not known. He had children, **Daniel** and Henry; perhaps others.

Henry Mayes, son of John above, was born about 1645. He had a land grant, on April 24th, 1703, of 292 acres in Henrico county (Va. Land Grants, book 9, p. 524); another on January 24, 1717, of 283 acres in Prince George Co. **(Idem,** Book 10, p. 363), 143 acres of which he conveyed to James Baugh on November 12, 1719. Had two other grants of 200 acres each in Prince George Co., on July 14, 1718, and Sept. 8, 1728 **(Idem,** Book 10 p. 403, and Book 13, p. 463). He had sons—Thomas, William and Mattox.

Thomas Mayes, son of Henry, above, had a land grant in 1710, of 274 acres in Northumberland Co. **(Idem.,** Book 3, p. 6).

William Mayes, son of Henry, above, had a grant of 401 acres on Dec. 16th, 1714, and another of 1,200 acres in Prince George Co.. on Oct. 13, 1727; and another of 200 acres in King and Queen Co., on Aug. 26, 1731; and another of 400 acres in Amelia Co., on Jan. 10, 1735 (Va. Land Grants, Book 13, p. 276; Book 14, p. 299; Book 17, p. 4). His will, executed April 13, 1751, was probated in Amelia Co., on Oct. 26, 1752 (Will Book 1, p. 98), and mentions his wife Elizabeth, his sons John, Gardiner, and William, his daughters Elizabeth, Ann, Milicent, Sarah, Margaret and Johanna; also, William's daughter, Winifred; and it was witnessed by Judith Mayes.

Mattox Mayes, son of Henry, above, had land grants in Brunswick Co. in 1736, 1741, and 1747; and in Halifax Co. in 1768 and 1780 (see Va. Land Grants; Book 17 p. 139; Book 19, p. 1101; Book 28, p. 250; Book 37, p. 352; Book A, p. 367). A Mattox Maise, supposed to be a son of this man, was a private in the 6th Virginia Regiment, Revolutionary army.

VIII.—Daniel Mayes, to assume the proper spelling by using the "y" instead of the letter "i," son of John Mayes (ix), was born about the year 1640, but little is known of his life. By the will of his grandfather, **Henry Newcomb,** above named, dated March 21st, 1682-3 he was devised 549 acres, 4 roods and 22 poles of land situated in Prince George county (land records of that county, Vol. 1, p. 492). He died prior to the 8th of May, 1721, but the date is not more exactly known.

VII.—John Mayes, Sr., son of Daniel Mayes (viii) was born about the year 1663. On the 8th of May, 1721, he executed to Henry and William Batte a lease of 449 acres of land, described as being part of the tract which Henry Newcomb had devised to Daniel Mayes, of whom John is declared to be the heir. (Land records, above cited). On Nov. 25th, 1723, he had a survey made of 243 acres of land in Prince George county and the land was granted to him on July 9th, 1724 (Prince George Co. Surveys; Va. Land Grants, Book 12, p. 72). On Sept. 28th, 1732, he received another grant of 845 acres in the same county (Va. Land Grants, Book 14, p. 494). He had sons—John and Matthew.

John Mayes, Jr., son of John above, born about 1690, with Mary, his wife, on Nov. 1, 1723, conveyed 100 acres in Henrico Co. to Wm. Dodson Jr., all being then of Henrico (Book 1, p. 266); and John, Jr., himself had a grant of 953 acres in Amelia Co., on Feb. 9, 1737 (**Idem,** Book 17, p. 478). His wife was named Mary, and they had children: Elizabeth, born Sept. 30, 1722; Mary, born June 2, 1724; William, born June 11, 1726; George, born July 19. 1728; Lucy, born Feb. 21, 1730.

VI.—Matthew Mayes, son of John VII, above, was born about 1686. On May 22, 1712, a survey was made for him of 398 acres of land (see Prince George County surveys, p. 751), for which he received a grant, on July 14, 1718; and he re-

ceived another grant, on Sept. 5, 1723, of 994 acres in the same county; and another, on 20th of August, 1734, of 400 acres in the same county (see Va. Land Grants, Book 10, p. 403; Book 11, page 206, and Book 15, page 273). His wife was named Elizabeth, and they had children: Matthew, Drury, and Delilah. Drury Mayes was born Jan. 13, and was baptized Feb. 20, 1727. Delilah was born July 20, 1733, and was baptized Aug. 26. He received a grant of 400 acres in Amelia county, on March 15, 1735; and another, on Jan. 2nd, 1737, of 1,200 acres, also in Amelia county, adjoining the land of William Mayes. (See Va. Land Grants, Book 17, pages 33 and 458). About 1736 he married, second, Anne, daughter of **Matthew Pate** (VII). He was a farmer, and died about the year 1763. His children, or two of them, were Matthew and Joseph.

Joseph Mayes, son of Matthew (VI), born about 1740, had a grant of 400 acres in Halifax county, on May 1, 1780 (Book A, p. 248), and a grant of 180 acres in Brunswick county, Sept. 1, 1797 (Book 39, p. 580).

V.—Matthew Mayes, son of Matthew VI, above, was born in 1720, the exact date not being now known, and lived in what is now Dinwiddie county, Virginia. He was a farmer; and married a **Miss Martha Chappel** about 1758. He was a Lieut.-colonel in the Virginia troops during the Revolutionary war; and the orderly book of Maj. William Heth, of the 3rd Va. Regiment, which is still in existence, makes mention of the fact that on the 1st of July, 1777, he was one of the field officers of the day named in the general orders published at "headquarters Middle Brook." He is called **Lieut.-Col. Mais.*** He, later in the year 1777, died, leaving four sons: Matthew P., Robert C., Edward, and Stephen, and a daughter, Martha. His widow, afterwards, in July, 1779, married a Mr. Jesse Woodward and had several children by him. Of the sons Stephen and Matthew moved to South Carolina, and are presumably ancestors of many of the South Carolina and Tennessee Mayes's and those of North Mississippi, of whom there are quite a number. Matthew P. married Frances Brown, and had a son, Pas-

*—Va. Histor. Assn. Publications, vol. xi., p. 375.

cal Irwin Hayes, who married Mary Parker, and had a son, Irwin Brown Mayes, who married Martha A. Jarrett, and had a daughter, a Mrs. Treadway. Edward Mayes, above, remained in Virginia, near Petersburg; and presumably is ancestor of some of the Virginia Mayes's. The daughter, Martha, married a Mr. Barner and moved to Kentucky, where she left a large family.

CHAPTER IV.

THE FAMILY OF MAYES IN KENTUCKY.

IV.—Robert Chappell Mayes, the oldest son of Matthew (V), was born about the year 1765. He also was a farmer at the old home in Dinwiddie county, Va.; and on Feb. 16th, 1789, married **Agnes Thweat Locke,** of Amelia county* In 1794 he moved with his family to Kentucky, then recently admitted into the Union as a State; and he seems to have settled first in Fayette county, near Lexington; from whence, after a few years, he removed to Christian county, in the vicinity of Hopkinsville. He died about the year 1835, leaving five sons: Daniel, Robert Chappel, Matthew, Richard L., and Thomas H.

R. Chappell Mayes, Jr., the second son of Robert C. Sr., was born in Fayette county, Ky., about the year 1795. He was a lawyer, and lived in Christian county, where he died. He married Martha Walden, and had three children: Robert Henry, Alexander Chappel and Kate.

Robert Henry Mayes, son of R. Chappell Mayes, was born about 1828. About 1855 he moved out to California, where he engaged in merchandizing and farming. He married Mahalia Ann Moffett. He died when 45 years old; had several children: (1) Robert Sperry Mayes (children, Florence Mabel; Agnes Claudia; and Bernice); (2) Martha, who married an Allen, and died without living descendants; (3) Mary Frances (who married a Neighbors, and had children; Mrs. Myrtle N. Royal, Ione Eulalia, Ada May, Blanche and Robert Burrel); (4) James Moffett Mayes (who married Mary Stevens,

*—Wm. and Mary Quarterly Mag., April, 1908, p. 271.

and had children: Gertrude, Walter, Stella, and Fern); (5) Clara Mayes; (6) Annie Chappel, who married a Keltz, and died childless; (7) Una Eupha, (who married a Dodson, and has a daughter, Ruth Valmere Dodson); (8) Estella R., who married a Yager (no children); (9) Henry Mayes, died childless; (10) George Melvin Mayes, died childless. These relatives live in and about Los Angeles.

Alexander Chappell Mayes, second son of Robert Chappell, Jr.. above, married April 19th, 1859, Annie Mary McGowan* and had two sons: (1) Walter Mayes, born Feb. 24, 1862, died June 10, 1864; (2) Hugh Mayes, born May 11, 1864, married Ellie T. Allen, of Brunswick Co., Va., and lives in Princeton, Ky. Hugh Mayes' children are (a) Hattie Allen, born March 23, 1890, died June 13, 1890; (b) Virginia Bacon Mayes, born April 15, 1892; (c) Annie Meade Mayes, born May 11, 1896; and (d) Dorothy Allen Mayes, born Oct. 13, 1904.

Kate, daughter of R. Chappell Mayes, Jr., above, sister to Alexander C., married J. N. Beadles, of Mayfield, Ky.. and died leaving a son, Robert Beadles, who lives in Mayfield.

Matthew Mayes, third son of Robert C., above, was born in Fayette county, Ky.. on Nov. 1, 1797. He was twice married: first, to Mary Crump, who lived only one year, and died leaving one child which died in infancy; second, on Jan. 4, 1843, to a widow, Mrs. Elizabeth Ann Utterback (born Caldwell). He was a lawyer and lived in Cadiz, Ky., where he died April 15, 1871; his widow surviving him only ten days. As a lawyer he was successful; and his reputation equalled any in the State. In speaking, he was not ornate, preferring to be forceful in argument; adroit, yet fair, in handling testimony strong and astute in applying the law. It was said of him by the old attorneys of the state, that his knowledge of the law was most remarkable, that he was never surprised

---

*—This lady was born 21st of March, 1838, in the "McGowan home," Princeton, Ky. She lived and died at 61 years in this residence, and was never away from it more than two weeks at one time. This property now (1905) belongs to Hugh Mayes, having been owned by him and his maternal ancestors for over 70 years continuously.

in court, and that no opponent could spring on him a legal point with which he was not familiar. He died quite wealthy His children by the second marriage were: (1) Emma Caldwell; (2) Robert, born August 25, 1849, died April 27, 1868; (3) Julia Elizabeth.

Emma Caldwell Mayes, daughter of Matthew above, was born in Cadiz, June 24, 1845; married Dr. Charles Parks Bacon, Jan. 23, 1866, moved to Evansville, Ind. in 1873. She has only one child, Emma Mayes Bacon, who was born October 27, 1867, and married Oct. 8, 1895, Mr. Clarence Leslie Hinckle, a business man of Evansville, Ind., and has a daughter Charline Mayes Hinckle, born in Evansville, April 6. 1900.

Julia Elizabeth Mayes, daughter of Matthew, above, was born in Cadiz, Oct. 30, 1852; married Albro LaFils Parsons on June 25, 1873, and settled in Louisville, Ky. She has four children: (1) Leo Mayes Parsons; (2) Elizabeth Bacon Parsons; (3) Dr. Albro LaFils Parsons; and (4) Mayes Julian Parsons—all living in Louisville.

Elizabeth Bacon Parsons, above, was married on Jan. 1st, 1908, to William B. Eagles.

Richard Locke Mayes, fourth son of Robert C. (IV) above. was born in Fayette county, Ky., on Dec 16, 1805. He studied law 1825-6, and was licensed at Hopkinsville, in 1827; practiced for one year at Columbus, and then settled at Mayfield, where he lived until his death on Jan. 13, 1861. On the 11th of June, 1839, he married Elizabeth Anderson. He represented Graves county in the legislature from 1836 to 1845; and was commonwealth's attorney by appointments of Gov. Letcher and of Gov. Owsley (1840-1848), and was a member for Graves county of the State constitutional convention of 1849.* His children were four, as follows: Rollin A., Mary E., John A.. and Agnes.

Rollin Anderson Mayes, lawyer and banker, son of Richard L., above, was born at Mayfield, on March 22nd, 1840;

---

*—**Hist. of Kentucky,** by Collins, vol. 1, p. 367; **Id,** vol. 2, p. 292; Letters from Rollin A. Mayes.

died in January, 1905; married (1) Isabella Boyd, of Christian county, on Nov. 5, 1863, who died in 1865, and (2) Sue Campbell, of Nashville, Tenn. on Dec. 22, 1874 (who died on April 30, 1876); and (3) Sophia Morris, of Obion county, Tenn., on March 29, 1877. By the first marriage he had one daughter, Bertie, who married Robert L Alexander, of Owen county, and who now resides in Paragould, Ark. By the third marriage Rollin A. Mayes had two children: (1) Robert Morris Mayes, born April 26, 1880; who married Georgia Galles, of Las Cruces New Mex., and who is now cashier of a bank at El Paso, Texas, and who has a child, Susan, born Oct. 27, 1904; and (2) Sue Campbell, born Nov. 15, 1881, who married C. T. Newman, of Ashland Ky., at which place she lives.

Mary Elizabeth, second child of Richard L. Mayes, above, was born July 8, 1842; married in 1861, A. P. Thompson, a lawyer of Paducah, Ky., who was then colenel of the third Ky. regiment, C. S. A., and who was killed in battle at Paducah, March 25, 1864; no children of this marriage. She married, second, on Aug. 28 1866, J. N. Beadles, then of New Orleans, La. (the same who had previously married her cousin, Kate, as above). Her children are Jas N. Beadles, Jr., who moved out to Seattle, and W. W. Beadles, who married Jan. 2, 1902, Ella H Wingate, of Woodford county, but was left a widower without a child, on July 8, 1903, and now lives in Mayfield, Ky.

John A. Mayes, third child of Richard L.. above, was born Aug. 13, 1844, married Mariana Stanfield; died Aug. 3, 1886, without children.

Agnes, fourth child of Richard L., above, was born Aug. 28, 1847; married Wm. J. Slayden, then of New Orleans, La., (afterwards of New York City), and died on Dec. 20, 1888. She left two children, Acton B. Slayden, who lives in New York City, and Mary Agnes Slayden, who married in 1912.

Thomas Hardeman Mayes, fifth child of Robert C. Mayes (IV), above, was born on March 16, 1807; married Susan Elizabeth Marquess, about the year 1834; was a farmer and lived near Mayfield, Ky.; and died Nov. 20th, 1880. He had ten children: (1) Thomas Franklin, born in 1835; (2) Robert

Chappel, born in 1837; (3) George Washington, born in 1840; (4) Harriet, born in 1842; (5) William Marquess, born in 1844; (6) Eugene born in 1846; (7) Elizabeth born in 1848; (8) Kate, born in 1850; (9) Richard Locke, born in 1855; and (10) Emma Etheridge, born in 1865.

Of those children, George W., William, Eugene, Kate and Richard, died childless. George W. married a Miss Wheat, and lived for a time in Columbus, Miss., but died at Mayfield, Ky., about 1879.

Thomas Franklin Mayes, above, married Anna Cochran. and had two children: (1) Lillie, who died unmarried; and (2) Rose, who married Archibald Sutherland, of Paducah, Ky., and has two daughters, Lillie Mayes and Lorraine Mayes, and perhaps other children.

Robert Chappel Mayes, above, married, in 1860, Fredonia Charlotte Stephens. He is a physician, and moved to Brownwood, Texas with his family. He has children living; (1) William Harding; (2) Hervey Franklin; and (3) Flora Gooch Mayes, born in Sept. 1883; all of Brownwood. His first wife died in 1886, and he married again in 1895, to Emma Latham, by whom he has three other children: (4) George; (5) John Chappel; and (6) Emma Kate. William Harding Mayes was born May 20th, 1861, married Jessie Wise in 1886, and has by this marriage four children: (1) Emma Etheridge Mayes; (2) Tyty Mayes; (3) William Harding Mayes, Jr.; and (4) Wendell Wise Mayes. His wife died in 1899, and in 1900 he married Anna Marshall, by whom a son, Lewis Ousley Mayes. He is the managing editor of the Mayes Printing Company. Hervey Franklin Mayes was born Jan. 22nd, 1873, married Edna May Abney in 1901. and has one child, James Hervey Mayes, Jr.

Harriet Mayes, above, daughter of Thomas H., married Demetrius Pollock Coulter, and died about 1895, leaving three children: (1) Eugene Coulter, of Mayfield, Ky.; (2) Susan, who married Dr. Sisson, of Wingo, Ky.; and (3) De Otto Coulter, of Mayfield, Ky.

Elizabeth Mayes, daughter of Thomas H., married James

W. Boon and has one son, Mayes Boon. They live in Nashville, Tenn.

Emma Etheridge, daughter of Thomas H., married R. M. Chowning, of Fulton, Ky. She has two children—a boy and a girl.

Houl. Daniel Mayes, of Kentucky and Mississippi.

III.—Daniel Mayes, first son of Robert C., (IV), above, and of his wife, Agnes (Locke), was born in Dinwiddie county, Va., on the 12th day of February, 1792. In 1794 he was carried by his father to Fayette county, Kentucky, as told above, for a time, and finally to Christian county, where he was reared near Hopkinsville. He did not have the advantages of a collegiate course; but still he managed to acquire an unusually fine education in English branches. He began life at Hopkinsville.

Toward the close of the war of 1812-1815 he enlisted in the Kentucky troops, but saw no actual service; the battle of New Orleans took place, and the war practically terminated, before the detachment of which he was a member arrived upon the scene of action.

From a public speech made by him at a later date (in 1845) the following extract is made for its biographical value:

"From my earliest reflections on the subject, I have been opposed to the creation of banks by the States. In 1818 the legislature of Kentucky incorporated, at one session, fifty banks. I was then a very young man and the editor of a newspaper printed in Hopkinsville, called **The Western Hemisphere.** After those charters were granted, I wrote and published, under the editorial head, article after article, endeavoring to prove that if those banks went into operation great injury to the currency and business of the country would follow; and I tried to prove, and, as I thought, did prove, that the banks would fail, and leave the community in debt, without currency, and without credit. My object was to prevent the evil by preventing the taking of stock. Banking was then a favorite policy. I made many enemies, and no friends; injured the circulation of my paper, and forty-eight of the

banks went into operation. In about eighteen months forty-six of them failed; prices had advanced, and speculation had become the order of the day; currency and credit were prostrated, and the relief system, as it was called then, had its birth in Kentucky, not from this cause alone, but from this co-operating with other causes. Mine was the only paper and I the only editor in the State that took a stand against the banks."*

Mr. Mayes' position as to the banks seems to have done him no permanent harm, at all events. His position was justified by results. Admitted to practice at the bar, in 1825, he represented Christian county in the legislature.

Extract from an **Early History of Christian County and West Kentucky:**

"Daniel Mayes defeated Nathan S. Dallam for the legislature in 1825. It was a hot contest and the friends of both expected bloodshed through the whole campaign. It took three days to hold an election in those days, and every fellow came and stayed through the whole time and brought his gun. He (Daniel Mayes) had no other political record. He was an able lawyer, a peer of Jno. J. Crittenden, Solomon P. Sharp, Benjamin Patton, Reason Davidge and other giant intellects of that day. He was cold, distant and somewhat exclusive in his associations, rarely mingling with his neighbors. He would pass from his residence to his office and back, and never look to either side unless spoken to; but he was a man of undoubted intellect and ability, though not a politician or party schemer. As regards political intrigue, he was as innocent as a child, and we have no record of his further public service than his election to the legislature in 1825, except as judge of the Circuit Court."

At that time a movement to reorganize the Supreme Court of the State was the burning question of the day, and a bill was passed by the legislature looking to that end, the passage of which led to the publication by a number of the mem-

---

*—From **The Southron**, newspaper, Jackson, Miss., Sept. 17, 1845.

bers of an open address to the people; and Mr. Mayes was one of the signers.*

While this legislature was in session in November, 1825, Mr. Sharpe, the attorney-general of the State, was called from his bed in Frankfort, about midnight, by one Jeroboam O. Beauchamp, who gave a false name and represented himself to be a traveler in search of a night's lodging crowded away from the taverns; and Sharpe was then stabbed to death. This murder, turning on a story of wrong to a woman, and revenge and treachery, was one of the most celebrated cases, in its day, of the nation. Beauchamp was detected, promptly tried, convicted by circumstantial evidence in July, 1826, and executed within a year.† Mr. Mayes was employed to assist in the prosecution of the murderer, and to his diligence and astuteness in working up the incriminating evidence was largely attributed the success of the State.

Beauchamp made confession, in a pamphlet prepared by himself, before his execution; and in it said: "I was most ably prosecuted by the prosecuting attorney, Chas. S. Bibb, Daniel Mays, an hireling prosecutor and the attorney-general, Jas. W. Denny. Bibb spoke in the spirit of his native honor, humanity and firmness. Mays prosecuted very ably indeed, and traced me out in all my subtle, studied precautions for the commission of the murder, with much accuracy, considering the entire want of evidence as to the true circumstances of the transaction."

The Beauchamp case greatly increased his reputation as a lawyer, and obtained for him an immediate considerable practice in the Supreme Court. In the third volume of Monroe's Reports (Ky.; 1826), his name appears as of counsel in eighteen of the cases.

In this practice Mr. Mayes continued until about 1828 when he was elected circuit judge. He discharged the duties of that office until the summer of 1830, when he was elected

---

*—**Robertson's Scrap Book**, pages 95, 104.

†—For a full account of this celebrated murder, see Smith's Hist. of Kentucky, p. 497.

law professor in Transylvania University at Lexington, succeeding Hon. Charles W. Humphreys, then recently deceased.

In Perrin's **History of Lafayette County,** it is said of him, on p. 343 that he was "long a citizen of Lexington, judge of the Circuit Court, and professor of law in Transylvania University. * * * In pure law arguments and clear analysis, he had no superior at the bar in his day."

At the opening of the session of the law school for 1832-3, he delivered on the 8th of November, an introductory lecture, on the topic: **Whether Law is a Science,** in which he contended that, "not only in its most comprehensive sense, but considered as municipal law," it should be ranked as a science. This lecture was made the subject of an article of twenty-two pages, with much quotation, in the **American Jurist** (Boston; April, 1833).

In this professorship and in the practice of the law, Judge Mayes continued to reside in Lexington; but in the winter of 1838-9, he removed, with his family, to Jackson, Miss., near which place he purchased a very fine farm two miles out, on the Clinton road, from the State Capitol building, which he called **Montverde.** This residence was in its day quite a social focus for Jackson; and many were the entertainments and merry-makings there. The causes of this removal, its incidents, and its consequences in one sense, are given in the following quotation from **The Bench and Bar of the South and Southwest:***

"In the year 1830 the State of Mississippi was one of the least populous in the Union though, as I have said already, there was much wealth there, much intelligence, and much enterprise. The Choctaw and Chickasaw Indians had not yet relinquished their primeval homes and gone to reside beyond the great "Father of Waters." When this grand exodus occurred, a few years later, an almost unprecedented tide of population flowed to Mississippi from other states, and from

*—Page 45-52; by Henry S. Foote, once governor of Mississippi and United States senator; St. Louis, Soule, Thomas and Wentworth, 1876.

beyond the ocean; and the most remarkable influx of lawyers also took place, which has ever been known in this country. These came chiefly from Tennessee, Kentucky, Virginia, Georgia, Alabama, Maryland, New York, and New Jersey. Many of them were persons of much intelligence and worth, and of no little standing and influence in the states whence they had migrated. Of a number of them I shall have much to say hereafter, both as barristers and as occupants of the bench."

"I propose to close the present article with some remarks upon one of the new comers of that period from the State of Kentucky with whom it was my happiness to enjoy for many years relations of the closest intimacy, and of whom thousands yet surviving cherish the most pleasant and respectful remembrance. I allude to the Hon. Daniel Mayes.

Judge Mayes, if I have not been the recipient of erroneous information concerning this matter, first saw the light in Kentucky.* It is certain that he studied his profession in that State and practiced there for many years previous to his coming to the State of Mississippi. He came to his new home in the Southwest with a high reputation for legal learning and ability, and was known by many among us as having officiated most creditably as a law professor at the Transylvania University. Many of those who had sat under his sage ministrations at this famous institution, had preceded Judge Mayes in his advent to this inviting theatre, and had been everywhere heard to speak of their revered preceptor in terms of glowing and grateful commendation.

"This gentleman, after a calm survey of the field of professional labor upon which he was about to enter, concluded to open an office in the city of Jackson." (He formed, on his arrival, a partnership with J. J. McRae, afterwards governor; but this lasted only a short time. In 1840 he formed a partnership with Hon. C. R. Clifton, which lasted many years.—E. M.) "His merits were not slow in being discovered in this locality nor did they have to wait long before he became enlisted in many cases of much interest and com-

*—In Dinwiddie county, Va., his parents moved to Kentucky when he was two years old.—E. Mayes.

plexity, in all of which he more than equalled the public expectation. He at once showed himself to have mastered every branch of the law, and to be fitted in every respect, for the competition in which he was now to engage. As a special pleader, I do not suppose that he had in the whole State of Mississippi, an equal. He was a smooth and graceful speaker; an adroit and skillful logician; was of most gentle and conciliatory manners, and of a patient and persevering energy which no difficulties could baffle, no embarrassments could perplex, no amount of professional labor could fatigue or discourage. As a forensic speaker he was always calm, strictly methodical in the arrangement of his matter; terse, vigorous and pointed in his phraseology, and singularly accurate and felicitous in his choice of words. He had the credit of having made one of the most effective speeches of his life in the celebrated Beauchamp case in Kentucky, and this I am myself not at all inclined to doubt; since I have heard from his own lips that he exerted himself on that occasion far beyond what was customary with him. Judge Mayes was in general cheerful and fond of social intercourse, but suffered from occasional fits of despondency, arising, as he thought, from physical causes, which rendered him at times a little gloomy and morose, and induced him to avoid all company save that of his own quiet and beloved home. In the contests of the forum he was never captious or impolite; never coarsely boisterous; never in the least degree dogmatic or egotistical. He constantly evinced the nicest sense of professional propriety; was never known to be unduly punctilious or exacting, and never took an unseemly personal liberty; but if his own sensibilities were gratuitously assailed, or he was treated with marked incivility by an adversary, he was far from being slow in the emphatic assertion of his own dignity, and in compelling the aggressor to lament his own temerity.

"Judge Mayes was assuredly one of the most acceptable and useful forensic allies that could be wished for; he was ready to take upon himself any amount of labor that the exigencies of the case in which he chanced to be employed might seem to demand; was perfectly frank in the disclosure of such views as he had adopted, **in advance of the expected**

argument, and in all causes seriously involving life, reputation or fortune, his active and suggestive mind was ever on the alert, in the devising of new expedients for the furtherance of his client's interests, in the finding out new avenues of escape fro munfavorable presumption of any kind, in casting new difficulties in the way of opposing counsel or in the framing of subtle and ingenious interpretations of some disputed fact, or of some ambiguous provision of law applicable to the case under investigation."

The following sketch of **Hon. Daniel Mayes** is quoted from **The Bench and Bar of Mississippi** (by Lynch):

"**Daniel Mayes** was a native of Kentucky (Virginia, E. M) and had achieved success and reputation at the bar of that State prior to his removal to Mississippi. He came to this State about the time of the exodus of the Chickasaws and Choctaws, an event which occasioned a renewed tide of immigration of all classes of persons to occupy the lands vacated by the Indians. He had also filled with distinction a chair as professor of law in the Transylvania University, and found at the bar of Mississippi many of the younger members whose legal knowledge was due to his instruction, and who entertained great respect for his personal qualities, and a profound reverence for his professional abilities. He established his residence at the capital of the State and immediately entered upon a highly successful and brilliant career at the Mississippi bar.

"His knowledge of law was scientific and thorough, and he was a master of the intricate system of common-law pleading, which, notwithstanding the statutory simplification, afforded him great advantage in the preparation of his cases and in the presentation of special issues. His reputation, dignity of character, and urbanity of manners, soon engaged a confidence which caused him to be called in the most important cases, and to become involved in the most distinguished competition. Yet his learning and legal ability in every instance achieved the full measure of expectation.

"His arguments were characterized by a depth of research, an astuteness of reason, and a logical exactness diffi-

cult to refute or even to palliate under ordinary circumstances. Every volume of reported decisions responded to his call for precedent, and his acute observation and keen comprehension extracted authority from the most subtle analogies. * * *

"His argument in the case of **Jane B. Ross et al vs. Vertner, et al**, 5 Howard (Appendix), is a brilliant exemplification of these traits." * * *

"Mr. Mayes possessed an astuteness and sagacity of precaution which gathered every legitimate and honorable means within the spacious limits of his resources, and he was as fertile in method as in the invention of expedients. It is related of him that he was once employed in the defense of an unfortunate man who had unintentionally killed a woman who was residing with him, by a stroke on the head while she was in the act of inflicting great bodily harm on his sick wife, and in order to save his client from a verdict of murder it became necessary to introduce the daughter of the latter as a witness—a little girl of ten years, who was the only witness to the circumstances; but the tenderness of her age and her ignorance suggested the apprehension that she would not be able to stand the ordeal to which she would be subjected upon cross-examination.

"Under these circumstances, Mr. Mayes procured a continuance of the case, and ordered the little girl to be placed at school and thoroughly instructed as to the nature of truth and the obligations of an oath. The plan was successful, and at the next term of the court the little witness detailed the circumstances of the killing with a firmness and consistency that baffled every attempt to impair her testimony, and saved her father from the gallows.

"These circumstances were well calculated to kindle every spark of his genius, and his speech on this occasion is said to have been a most brilliant combination of argument and eloquence, of pathos and lucidity and a depth of research that greatly increased his already distinguished reputation as an advocate.

"As an orator, Mr. Mayes is said to have possessed a round measure of grace and polish. Masterly in his command

of language, yet unostentatious in his style, he valued more the expressions of forcibility than the flourish of rhetorical ornamentation; hence his eloquence was calm, terse and vigorous; his phraseology accurate, and his choice of words apt and felicitous.

"His manners were exceedingly placable and winning, and his sense of professional propriety nice almost to a degree of fastidiousness. Quick to assert his own dignity, he took no unseemly liberties with the feelings and sensibilities of others, but a uniform politeness and calm courtesy pervaded all his actions, and characterized both his professional and social intercourse.

"As a man he was warmly sensible to the feelings of philanthropy and benefaction. He was kind, charitable, and benevolent, and always ready to aid any enterprise for the advancement of the public good or the relief of individual suffering.

"That such a man should have enjoyed the highest esteem as a lawyer, a scholar, a citizen, and a man, and that he should have gone down to his grave with the regrets of his fellow citizens and the benisons of hallowed memories, is but in conformity with the experiences of mankind, the dictates of humanity, and the will of Heaven."

On the 20th of February, 1843, the city of Jackson, and indeed all that part of the State, was on tip-toe over a visit from Henry Clay. That distinguished statesman was then in the full swing of his great career. The Whigs had elected Harrison to the presidency in 1840; but his early death, and Tyler's subsequent course, brought Mr. Clay forward into even greater prominence as the Whig candidate for the succession. He made a partial tour of the States, and visited Mississippi. In Lexington Mr. Clay and Judge Mayes had been near neighbors, intimate friends; and Judge Mayes was an ardent "Henry Clay Whig." He was, therefore, selected to welcome Mr. Clay to Jackson. From **The Southron,*** of

*—Jackson, Miss., newspaper; M. R. Dudley, editor.

Feb. 23, 1843; the account is taken which is made Appendix A hereto.

In the year 1845 an effort was made by Dr. T. C. Thornton, ex-president of Centenary College, to establish a college in Jackson, with literary, law and medical schools. The law department was under the charge of Judge Mayes. The law school did well, but the other departments were not satisfactorily patronized, and in 1847 the college was suspended.*

On the 5th of August, 1845, a Whig State Convention met at Jackson, and nominated candidates for the following election of State officers; and Judge Mayes was nominated as the party candidate for attorney general of the State. In view of that candidacy he made a public address at the theatre on the 6th of September, the opening of which has been quoted above. Most of this address appears as Appendix B of this booklet. The party was defeated at that election; and, of course, Judge Mayes with it.

In the year 1850 Judge Mayes was offered and accepted the professorship of common law in the law department of the University of Louisiana,† and selling Montverde, he moved, with his family, to New Orleans, La. Here he resided at 98 Apollo street (a street since merged into Carondelet, of which No. 89 was his old residence, it is believed), and had a summer residence on the Gulf coast in Mississippi, where Ocean Springs is now. He was not, however, pleased with his situation in New Orleans; considered the bench corrupt, and other conditions undesirable. He, therefore, returned to Jackson, Miss., in 1852, and resumed the practice at that bar. Here he purchased for a residence the premises now (1913) occupied by his grandson, J. Bowmar Harris, Esq.

In the year 1856 he sold his residence in Jackson, purchasing and moving to a farm in Rankin county, on the line of the railroad, and one mile out of town; but the health of the family suffered, and after two years he purchased a residence in the city on the south side of Capitol street, midway of the block between Congress and West streets. Here he

---

*—**Education in Mississippi** (Mayes), p. 57.

†—Of late years merged into the law department of Tulane University, in the catalogues of which institution his name appears.

resided until his death, which occurred on the 6th day of February, 1861, from pneumonia. He was buried at Jackson.

In the year 1855 Judge Mayes, his wife, his two daughters and their husbands, and his son, Daniel, all united with the Christian church; and thenceforward he was a zealous member, sometimes preaching a lay sermon after the custom then followed by that denomination.

The professional work of Judge Mayes will be found in the Mississippi reports of the period from 1840 to 1861. He was engaged in many important cases, and had a large measure of success.

He was twice married; first, in 1817, to Cynthia Bowmar, daughter of Herman Bowmar, of Versailles, Ky. By this wife his children were Henry Davidge (who died in childhood), Herman B., Robert B., Cynthia A., William T., who died in infancy, Fannie and Joseph D.

Left a widower in 1831, he married at Lexington, Ky., on May 30, 1833, Elizabeth, daughter of Jonathan Rigg, of that city, widow of Hon. Charles W. Humphreys. It is a little curious that he succeeded Judge Humphreys on the circuit bench, in his professorship at Transylvania, and married his widow. By this marriage he had children; a daughter, unnamed, died only a few days old; Basil R., Daniel, and Edward.

In person, Judge Mayes was tall and spare; six feet, with fair complexion, reddish hair, blue eyes; was of quiet demeanor, voice low and pleasant, laughter not boisterous but an amused and amusing chuckle. He performed well, in an amateurish way, on the violin; and had a taste for poetry, with some capacity for versification. Specimens of his work in that way are given in Appendix C; see page ..... He was hospitable, and was generous with his money; and, like most lawyers, accumulated but little, although making a good income. His modest disposition was such that he never pressed himself forward, and consequently he was not so widely known as his abilities deserved. Dr. J. H. D. Bowmar, the brother of his first wife, wrote of him that he "ranked among the ablest lawyers of Kentucky, and practiced at the bar with Mr. Clay, Mr. Crittenden, and others of distinction. I have heard it said that he was considered the equal, if not the superior of any of them."

CHAPTER VI.

THE MAYES FAMILY IN MISSISSIPPI.

Hon. Herman B. Mayes, and Descendants.

Herman Bowmar Mayes, oldest child of Hon. Daniel Mayes (III) by his first wife, Cynthia Bowmar, was born in Hopkinsville, Ky., in November, 1819. He became a lawyer, and, having removed with his father to Mississippi, settled at Gallatin, then the county site of Copiah county, where he continued to reside until the county site was removed to Hazlehurst, after which he made his home in that place. Judge Herman Mayes was a lawyer, much of the same traits of his father; of unusual ability, he was highly esteemed by the members of the bar and by the people. He was, for a number of year, judge of the probate court (abolished by the constitution of 1869); and in the dangerous and critical time of reconstruction after the civil war, was one of the trusted and influential advisers of the people, who, at one period, guarded his house at night lest the Radicals should do him personal harm. He married on July 29th, 1851, Charity, daughter of John Barlow, of Copiah county. He was a member of the Methodist church; and died at Hazlehurst June 6, 1891. Children: (1) Cynthia A.; (2) Herman Bowmar; (3) Mary Jane; (4) John Barlow; (5) Joseph Davis; (6) William Webster; (7) Emma; (8) Robert Burns; and (9) Alice.

Cynthia Ann Mayes, oldest child of Herman B. Mayes, above, was born in 1852; married Park Ware, of Copiah county; children, (1) William Ware, born Jan. 8, 1879; (2) Eunice, born Nov. 9, 1880, married Sept. 20, 1903, Albert Sherman, of Jackson, Miss. (a child, Mary Alberta, born Sept. 18, 1904;

died early); (3) Alice Mayes Ware, born March 30, 1888; (4) Fannie Ware, born Dec. 22, 1890; (5) Annie Ware, born Aug. 9, 1893.

Herman Bowmar Mayes, Jr., son of Herman B., above, was born in 1854; educated at the University of Mississippi; became a lawyer at Jackson, Miss., where he died, unmarried on the 19th of April, 1887.

Mary Jane, third child of Herman B. Mayes, above, was born in September, 1856; married in September, 1906, to Mr. John S. Decell, of Copiah county.

John Barlow Mayes, fourth child of Herman B., above, was born August 6, 1858. A merchant; Chancery Clerk of Copiah county for four years. Member of State legislature in 1912. Married, first, June 6, 1886, Mira Oatis, widow of Joseph Horne; no children; married, second, in 1910, Miss Mary Watson, of Greenville, Miss.

Joseph Davis Mayes, fifth child of Herman B., above, was born July 8, 1860. A merchant and farmer. Married June 3, 1885, Florence Brittain; children, (1) Edward Brittain, born June 1, 1886; (2) Herman Bowmar, born Oct. 23, 1888; (3) Joseph Davis, Jr., born Sept. 3, 1891; (4) Alice, born Feb. 13, 1894; (5) Emma, born Aug. 14, 1896; (6) Florence, born Aug. 15, 1903. These children have remarkable talent for music. In the year 1910 this family moved to Memphis, Tenn., the father having become a commercial traveler.

William Webster Mayes, sixth child of Herman B., above, was born Sept. 7, 1862. Unmarried.

Emma, seventh child of Hon. Herman B. Mayes, above, was born March 5, 1865. Married, first, Patrick Cook, on Dec. 6, 1882; married, second, in 1900, a Mr. Stamps; died June 7, 1902; children, (1) Mary Cook, born Dec. 13, 1886; (2) Carrie Cook, born Aug. 31, 1888, and (3) Norabelle Cook, born Dec. 21, 1890. Carrie Cook married in 1910 Dr. J. E. Fedric, a dentist of Grenada, Miss., and has a son, Edward Mayes Frederick born May 25, 1912.

Hon. Robert Burns Mayes, eighth child of Herman B.,

above, was born June 28, 1867, in Copiah county, Miss; married July 25, 1892. to Annie Lanier, of New Orleans, La., by whom a son, Robert Lanier Mayes, born Dec. 27, 1893. Married, secondly, to Lelia Hart Beatty, of Jackson, Miss., Feb. 21, 1900. Mr. Mayes was educated at the University of Mississippi, entered upon the practice of the law; in 1892 was a member of the State senate; in 1893 was appointed chancellor for the fifth judicial district; and in 1906 was appointed one of the judges of the Supreme Court of the State, for a term of nine years; became chief justice of the Supreme Court, but resigned in August, 1911.

Extract from **Clarion-Ledger** (Jackson newspaper), of August 14, 1912:

"The resignation of Hon. Robt. B. Mayes, of the chief justiceship of the supreme bench of Mississippi, was not only a surprise to the people of Mississippi, but an occasion of deep regret, for no man within the borders of the State is more highly esteemed for his worth as a man, or his qualities as a jurist, than the eminent gentleman who has seen fit to lay aside judicial honors, the highest within the gift of the State, and no man of Judge Mayes' age has ever made a brighter record in Mississippi history, and certain it is that in the past half century none has ever resigned the chief justiceship of this State with two and a half years of his term yet to serve. That his eminent judicial ability well fitted him for the discharge of the responsible duties of his position is conceded by all," etc.

Extract from **The Daily News,** (Jackson newspaper), Aug. 11, 1912:

"Judge Mayes leaves the bench after a career of nearly ten years. He was serving as chancellor of this district, having been named as a successor of the late Chancellor Henry Conn, when Governor Vardaman named him an associate justice of the Supreme Court for the Southern district, to succeed Associate Justice Jeff Truly, whose term of office expired on May 10, 1906. * * *

"Like all members of the Mayes family, the mentality of

the young jurist turns with unerring instinct to the law, and Justice Mayes quickly won recognition as one of the ablest members of the State's highest tribunal. During the past six years he has prepared and delivered many of the most important opinions of the court bearing on legal problems of far-reaching importance, and his rulings have been uniformly sound," etc.

Alice Mayes, ninth child of Herman B. Mayes, Sr., above, has never married, and resides in Hazlehurst, Miss.

Hon. Robert B. Mayes, and His Descendants.

Hon. **Robert Burns Mayes,** third son of Daniel Mayes, was born in Hopkinsville, Ky., July 28, 1820. Reared in Kentucky, he followed his father to Mississippi after his education was completed. There he became a lawyer, and settled first at Hernando. On Oct. 14, 1852, he married Cynthia, daughter of Hon. Z. Wheat, chief justice of Kentucky. His wife died without living children, August 14, 1853. He then removed to Yazoo City, where he practiced law and edited a newspaper. He was a man of scholarly tastes, with some capacity for verse-making, and much ability in metaphysics. In 1857 he published a work called the "Technobaptist," being an argument against the practice of infant baptism. He united with the Christian church. About the period of the Civil war he was judge of the Probate Court of Yazoo county. On Aug. 15, 1867, he married Annie Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Oscar J. E. Stuart, of Summit, Miss. He died Nov. 3, 1884. His children were (1) Robert Burns Mayes, Jr., born in Yazoo City, May 27, 1869, and is a minister of the Christian church, in 1908 postmaster at Yazoo City; (2) Adelaide Eleanor Mayes, born in Yazoo City, Oct. 27, 1870, and married on Oct. 27, 1906, to Lee Buckley, a merchant of Yazoo City; (3) Stuart Hardeman Bowman Mayes, born near Yazoo City, March 10, 1873, married to Pauline, daughter of Henry S. Wilson, of Yazoo City, on Sept. 2, 1896; (4) Fanny Harris Mayes, born near Yazoo City, Jan. 13, 1877, died Dec. 21, 1896; (5) Annie Elizabeth Mayes, born near Yazoo City, May 4, 1879.

Joseph D. Mayes, of New Orleans, La.

Joseph Davis Mayes, fifth child of Hon. Daniel Mayes, was born in Lexington, Ky., in the year 1829. He also was reared in Kentucky and got his education there. When Judge Mayes and his family left New Orleans, in 1852, Joseph, who had begun the practice of law in that city, remained; and he continued to practice at that bar until the outbreak of the Civil war. He then enlisted in Semme's Battery of artillery (from New Orleans), of which he was made one of the lieutenants. When the Federal army captured Jackson, in May, 1863, preliminary to the formal investment of Vicksburg, he was in command of one of the batteries defending the approach by the Clinton road. He was captured, but soon exchanged. His health failing, he was assigned to post duty toward the close of the war, and was post commander at Brandon, Miss. In June, 1868, he died at the residence of Hon. H. B. Mayes, of a chronic disorder entailed by the hardships and exposure of his army life. Was never married.

Cynthia A. Mayes (Potter), and Her Descendants.

Cynthia Agnes Mayes, second child of Hon. Daniel Mayes, was born in Hopkinsville, Ky., Dec. 25, 1824, and reared and educated in that State. In 1845 she married George L. Potter, Esq., a native of Connecticut, and graduate of Yale College, then living and practicing law at Jackson, Miss. Their home was a large farm a mile out of Jackson, on the Livingston road. Her husband was a man of the finest character and talent, singularly unselfish and modest, who cared but little for the personal ends which engross the attention of most. He was a devout member of the Christian church, and often occupied its pulpit; he was an unusually accomplished and successful lawyer. **Cynthia** died in 1857, of acute pneumonia. Her children were George L., Fannie M., Daniel M., and Wiley H.

George Lemuel Potter, Jr., was born near Jackson, Miss., Jan. 23, 1848. He married Susette Fontaine. Died without living children, at Jackson, Miss., in Dec., 1892.

Fannie Mayes Potter was born near Jackson, Miss., on the 7th day of February, 1850. She married on the 23rd day of April, 1873, Dr. Ruffin Thomson, of Hinds county. In 1881, they moved to Lake Weir, Florida, where Doctor Thomson died in 1888. Fannie then moved back with some of her children to Jackson, Miss. Her children are: (1) **Ruffin;** (2) Brenda; (3) William H.; (4) Fannie; (5) George Lemuel; (6) Cynthia Agnes.

Daniel Mayes Potter, third child of Cynthia (Mayes) Potter, was born near Jackson, Miss., April 23, 1852. Is a merchant and farmer. Married on the 23rd day of April, 1878, Octavia Smith, widow of George Work, Jr. His children are: (1) Clayton D. Potter, an attorney at Jackson, Miss.; and (2), George Lemuel.

Wiley Harris Potter, fourth child of Cynthia (Mayes) Potter, was born near Jackson, Miss., April 11th, 1854. Is a lawyer at Jackson; and was Circuit Clerk of the county from 1884 to 1892. Member of legislature 1892-4. He married Fannie, daughter of Hon. Hamilton H. Chalmers, judge of the Supreme Court, Dec. 12, 1892. Their children are: (1) Chalmers; (2) Wiley H. He was appointed in 1907 judge of the Circuit Court. Resigned in 1910 to resume practice.

Fannie Mayes (Harris), and Her Descendants.

Fannie Mayes, fourth child of Hon. Daniel Mayes, was born in Lexington, Ky., in 1828. She also was reared and educated in Kentucky. Married in 1851, the Hon. Wiley Pope Harris, then of Monticello, Miss., but moved to Jackson about 1856. Her husband, Judge Harris, was one of the finest lawyers who ever lived in Mississippi. He was judge of the Circuit Court, member of Congress, and in many ways eminent; a man of most exalted personal character, none was ever more esteemed in the State. Fannie Mayes Harris died on the 17th day of July, 1883. Her children were: (1) J. Bowmar; (2) Mary Vernon, who was born Feb. 28, 1854, and died Sept. 24th, 1871; (3) Cynthia A.; (4) Fannie; (5) Wiley Pope, Jr., who was born Jan. 30th, 1859, and died March 16, 1883; (6) Robert Early, born July 11th and died Dec. 5th, 1866; (7) Sidney Craft, born March 14th, 1869, died Feb. 11, 1870.

James Bowmar Harris, oldest child of Fannie (Mayes) Harris, was born in Monticello, Miss., Jan. 1st, 1852. Educated at the University of Mississippi and at Princeton College. A lawyer at Jackson, Miss., he was appointed United States District Attorney for the Southern district of Mississippi, by President Cleveland in 1886. He married in 1884, Oct. 1, Sallie McWillie, daughter of Capt. William McWillie, of Canton, Miss., a granddaughter of Governor William McWillie and of Governor T. M. Tucker. His residence in Jackson is the same which was owned and occupied by his grandfather, Daniel Mayes, 1852 to 1856.* His children are Wiley P., Sallie McWillie (who married Lucius L. Mayes, Dec. 4th, 1912), Frances Mayes, and McWillie (the last, deceased in 1906).

Cynthia Agnes Harris, third child of Fannie (Mayes) Harris, was born in Jackson, Miss., on the 14th day of July, 1857; and was educated at Fairmount, an Episcopal school for girls, located at what is now Monteagle, Tenn. She married on the 28th day of October, 1885, Samuel E. Virden, a merchant of Jackson, Miss. Children: (1) Harris Virden, born April 10th, 1887; (2) Cynthia Agnes Virden, born Feb. 20th, 1889; (3) Alexander Virden, born Feb. 17th, 1891, died May 26th, 1902; (4) Fannie Virden, born Aug. 11th, 1896; and (5) Annie Virden, born Oct. 15th, 1901. Harris Virden married Lucile Buchanan on Nov. 2nd, 1910.

Fannie Mayes Harris, fourth child of Fannie (Mayes) Harris, was born in Jackson, Miss., on the 20th day of Aug., 1861; educated at Fairmont; and married Walter Virden, a merchant of Jackson, Miss., brother to Samuel E. Virden, above, on the 14th day of May, 1891. In 1894 her husband turned his attention to farming, since which time they have resided at Cynthia, Hinds county. Their children are: (1) Walter Virden born May 20th, 1893; (2) Bowmar Harris Virden, born June 29th, 1895; (3) Mayes Virden, born May 2nd, 1897; (4) Ruth Elizabeth Virden, born May 11th, 1899; (5) Alice

---

*—In one sense, this residence has been owned by the family since it was purchased in 1852. Judge Mayes sold it on credit to one Ozanne, who never paid for it. Then it was sold to Judge Wiley P. Harris, to collect the Ozanne debt.

Mayes Virden, born Jan. 5th, 1902; (6) Frank Virden, born Jan. 25, 1905.

Basil R. Mayes, of Carrollton, Miss.

Basil Rigg Mayes, second child of Hon. Daniel Mayes by his second marriage, was born in Lexington, Ky., in May, 1835. He began the practice of law in 1856, at Carrollton, Miss., where he resided all the rest of his life. Enlisted in the Confederate army immediately on the outbreak of hostilities, and was chosen first lieutenant of Company K, 11th Mississippi regiment. He was severely wounded in the knee at the battle of Sparksburg (Antietam), which incapacitated him for further military service; and until the end of the war he acted as collector of the Confederate taxes for his county. In April, 1869, he married Alethia McIntyre, of Carroll county, Miss., and had a son who died in infancy. He himself died at Carrollton, November, 1871.

Daniel Mayes, of Oxford, Miss.

Daniel Mayes, third child of Hon. Daniel Mayes, by his second marriage, was born in Lexington, Ky., in June, 1838. When the Civil war began, he enlisted, first in the Mississippi sixty days troops for service about Columbus, Ky., under General James L. Alcorn. Afterwards he joined the company which became Company H, of the Fourth Mississippi Cavalry, and in which his half-brother, Charles W. Humphreys, was a lieutenant. He was himself a corporal. Was so fortunate as to come through the war without a wound. Became a merchant in Carrollton, Miss., where, in 1868, he married Margaret, daughter of Benjamin Roach. In 1881 he moved to Oxford, Miss., and conducted a small farm near that place until his death, which occurred in January, 1899. He had no children.

Edward Mayes, and His Descendants.

II.—Edward Mayes, youngest child of Hon. Daniel Mayes (III), was born at "Montverde," near Jackson, Miss., on Dec. 15th, 1846. He attended Bethany College, in Brooke county,

Va. (now West Va.) during the winter of 1860-61, which was then under the presidency of the Rev. Alexander Campbell. In the years 1862 and first half of 1863 he managed a clothing store in Jackson for Thomas Lemly, the owner, and his sons being in the Confederate service. Jackson was captured by the Federal army in May, 1863, and Mr. Lemly's store, with others, was plundered. Edward Mayes then went to Carrollton, Miss., and spent the latter part of 1863 in studying under a Mr. Ray, and in assisting him to teach school.

In April, 1864, he enlisted as a private in Company H, Fourth Regiment, of Mississippi Cavalry (Wilbourn, colonel), in which he served until the end of the war. Was in the battle at Harrisburg (Tupelo) in July, 1864, and minor engagements.

In October, 1865, he entered the freshman class of the State University, being the first student not from Oxford, to arrive, on the re-opening of that institution after the suspension caused by the Civil war. He graduated in June, 1868, having completed the four-years course in three years. He then read law at his home in Carrollton (to which place his widowed mother had removed in December, 1865), under the direction of his brother Basil.

On the 11th of May, 1869, he was married to Frances Eliza, daughter of Hon. L. Q. C. Lamar, at Oxford, Miss.; and in June, 1869, received the degree of B. L. from the State University, which entitled him to practice law.

The following is copied from a sketch of his life, to be found on pages 501 and 502, of Vol. 3, of Dunbar Rowland's "**Mississippi:**"

"In 1871, after serving a year as tutor of English at the University, he moved to Coffeeville, Miss., and there entered the active practice of law. In May, 1872, he moved to Oxford; and in 1877 was elected professor of law in the University, which position he filled until December, 1891. About 1886 the degree of LL. D. was conferred on him by Mississippi College. In 1887 he was elected chairman of the faculty of the University, performing the usual duties of a chancellor;

and in 1889, the chancellorship having been re-established, was elected to the office. While chairman he successfully defended, in a newspaper controversy with Senator J. Z. George, the endowment act of 1880, by which the State had recognized its indebtedness to the University, and provided for an appropriation of the annual interest on the debt. Under Dr. Mayes' chancellorship the course of study at the University was remodeled, the close curriculum being abandoned, and the present system of parallel courses and independent schools established. He also erected the present library building, having the bricks burnt on the grounds, and all of the work done by day labor, paying for the same out of the ordinary revenues of the institution. As a member of the Mississippi Constitutional Convention of 1890, he served as chairman of the committee on bill of rights and general provisions; and many of the constitutional provisions were originated by him, among them being the provision by which the officers for the State at large are elected by the electoral votes of counties. In December, 1891, Chancellor Mayes voluntarily resigned his office and professorship, in order to move to Jackson and enter upon the practice of law. Since then he has been employed as district attorney for Mississippi by the Illinois Central and the Yazoo & Mississippi Valley Railroad companies, and has taken a leading part in several of the most important cases in the legal history of the State. On the establishment of the law school in Millsaps College in 1895, he was elected a professor of law and dean of the law faculty, which position he still holds. In 1900 he was chosen a presidential elector on the Democratic ticket. In 1891, and again in 1901, he was appointed delegate to the Ecumenical Conferences of the Methodist Church, South, of which he has been a member since his college days. He was a charter member and the first president of the Mississippi Historical Society, and is regarded as one of the ablest lawyers and ripest scholars in the South. Dr. Mayes has made the following contributions to Mississippi literature: "A Glance at the Fountains of Our Land Titles," (Mississippi Bar Association Minutes, 1887); "The Administration of Estates in Mississippi," (Ibid., 1891); "Origin of the Pacific Railroads, and Especially of the Southern Pacific," (Publications of the Mississippi His-

torical Society, 1902); "Life, Times and Speeches of L. Q. C. Lamar," (large 8vo, 1896); "History of Education in Mississippi," (8vo, published as a public document by the United States Government, 1899)."

Edward Mayes also wrote and published in various periodicals a number of articles on legal and historical subjects, besides those mentioned above by Dr. Rowland. He was offered in 1905 by Governor Vardaman, first, a seat on the Supreme bench of the State, and secondly, the chancellorship of the University, both of which he declined, preferring to remain in the active practice of law. In 1902 he was appointed a member of the State Board of Archives and History, on the establishment of that board; and in 1912 was made president of it.

He is the compiler and writer of these volumes of family notes.

Edward and Frances (Lamar) Mayes had the following children: (1) Mary Lamar, born March 22, 1870; (2) Lucius Lamar, born Nov. 21, 1872, died March 27, 1873; (3) Elizabeth Lamar, born Jan. 28, 1878; (4) Edward Walthall, born May 1, 1880, died June 14, 1886; (5) Lucius Lamar (the second), born July 21, 1882; (6) Francis Lamar, born July 26, 1885; and (7) Basil Robert Lamar, born Oct. 13, 1889.

I.—Mary Lamar Mayes, above, born in Oxford, Miss., on the 22nd of March, 1870, was educated at Whitworth College, where she graduated. Was married in Carbondale, Ill., while a refugee there from an epidemic of yellow fever then raging in Jackson, Miss., on the 22nd of September, 1898, to Alexander Bennett Sanders, a civil engineer, native of Virginia, and a graduate of Vanderbilt University. They are now (1913) living in Miami, Florida; and have had children: (1) Alexander Bennett, born July 10, 1899, in Palestine, Texas; (2) Fannie Mayes, born Jan. 24, 1902, in Beaumont, Texas, died Jan. 31, 1904; (3 and 4) Mary and Edward Mayes, twins, born in St. Louis, Mo., Nov. 2, 1905.

I.—Elizabeth Lamar Mayes, above, born in Oxford, Miss., Jan. 28, 1878, was educated at the first Belhaven College, in

Jackson; was married on Nov. 28, 1905, to Wilbur Clyde Eakin, a manufacturing chemist, native of Virginia, graduate of the Virginia Technological Institute. They live now in Jackson, Miss., and have a son. Wilbur Clyde, Jr., born in Jackson, Miss., on April 23, 1911.

I.—Lucius Lamar Mayes, above (the second), was born in Oxford, Miss., on July 21, 1882; was educated at the University of Mississippi; took a degree of B. L. there in 1894, and entered on the practice of law at once, as the junior partner of his father's then firm of Mayes & Longstreet. On December 4, 1912, he married at Jackson, Miss., Sallie McWillie Harris (see page 41, **ante**), his cousin, several degrees removed, in the Mayes line.

I.—Francis Lamar Mayes was born in Oxford, Miss., on the 26th of July, 1885; and is now (1913) studying law at the University of Virginia.

I.—Basil Lamar Mayes was born near Oxford, Miss., Oct. 13, 1889; studied at Union University, Jackson, Tenn., and at the University of the South, Sewanee, Tenn. Was licensed to practice law in 1912; and on the 18th of September, 1912, aws married in Chattanooga Tenn., to Miss Anne Howell, daughter of Harrison B. Estes, of that city. He and his wife settled at Grenada, Miss.

THE FAMILY OF CHAPPELL.

This family comes into our genealogy by the marriage of Matthew Mayes (V.) to Martha Chappel, as shown on page 16 **ante.**

It seems to be reasonably certain that the first use of this name was French. Chappelle is a well-known surname in France today; and the forms of "La Chapelle" and "De la Chapelle" are frequently met with. There seems also to be but little doubt but that the English families of that name are descended from ancestors who came from France hundreds of years ago—probably at the time of the Norman conquest. The French form would naturally and easily be Anglicized into Chappell.

Certain it is that families named Chappell were living in England as early as the year 1500. The name is not unknown in English history, and some of the families were of the nobility, and some of the men were distinguished. Richard Chappell, who lived about 1600 was deputy auditor general; and to him was assigned a coat of arms which is described in Burke's "General Armory" as follows: "Or, an anchor sable between two chaplets in fesse vert. Chaplet—a wreath of laurel or oak leaves interwoven with acorns. Crest, a mailed arm at rest, in hand a viper proper." In the work on French heraldry, "Le Herat de Arms." p. 79, may be found the coat of arms and crest of the French families.

It is of interest to note that Bennett Chappell was one of the 108 settlers of Raleigh's first settlement on Roanoke Island in 1585-6. His name appears in the list given in all of the histories. This attempt at colonization, made by Sir Walter Raleigh, with a party of 108 under the immediate command of Sir Ralph Lane, was the first body of proposed immigrants to spend a winter in the English territories of America, and preceded the permanent settlement at Jamestown by twenty-two years. They did not prosper very well, became discouraged, and availed themselves of a visit by the famous sea-captain, Sir Francis Drake, to return to England.* Nothing further is known of Bennett Chappell; but it is not improbable that the summer and winter spent by him on the beautiful shores of Virginia, and the account given by him of its attractions, may have had some effect in causing other members of the family to turn in that direction at a later date.

The known genealogy of our branch of this family begins with

XI.—Thomas Chappell, of Capner, in Portishedd, county Somerset. He is mentioned in the account of the "Visitation of Somersetshire" in 1623, and was, of course, then living. He was twice married: (1) to Ann, daughter of Richard Morgan, of Easton, Gordon, county Somerset, by whom he had a daughter, Mary; and (2) to **Elizabeth** (XI), daughter of **James Per-**

*—J. A. Doyle, **The English in America,** ch. 4; **Chappell, etc., Families,** p. 32; **Hazard's Historical Collections,** p. 37.

cival (XII), he born in 1530, Lord of Eastburry, of Easton, by whom he had children, James, Richard, **John,** Thomas and Ann.*

X.—John Chappell, son of above, was born about 1585. In **Hotten's List of Emigrants**† he is mentioned as follows:

"Theis under written names are to be transported to Virginia imbarqued in ye ship Speedwell, of London, John Chappell, Master, from Southampton. Being examined by ye minister of Gravesend of their conformitie to ye orders and discipline of ye church of England and have taken ye oath of allegiance.

"Mai 28, 1635." (Here follows the list of passengers:)

It is interesting to see from the above entry that Captain John Chappell was in May, 1635, the master of the staunch little ship which has a place in history, second only to that of the famous **Mayflower,** of which she was a consort at the beginning of the latter's memorable voyage to Plymouth colony in the year 1620. The Plymouth pilgrims were, as is well known, English people who, having been persecuted in their native country on account of their religion, took refuge in Holland, and settled at Leyden where they remained for several years. Finally, they determined to send a part of their number to America. The **Speedwell,** an English vessel, was chartered at Delfthaven, in which the proposed emigrants embarked for Southampton, in July, 1620. On the arrival there, they found the **Mayflower,** a ship of about 180 tons burden, which had been chartered at London, awaiting them with their fellow-passengers—partly laborers employed by the merchants, partly Englishmen like-minded with themselves, who were disposed to join the colony. The **Speedwell** was much smaller than the Mayflower; she was a three-masted barque, of 60 tons burden. having her sails square-rigged, excepting her mizzen-sail, which was schooner-rigged. Her poop, located well aft on her stern, extended far above her main deck and furnished cabin accommodation for 60 or 70 people. She was

---

*—Collins' **Peerage,** vol. viii., p. 177; **Harleian Society Register,** of London, date 1623.

†—A copy of this book is in the library of the University of Mississippi.

substantially built of English oak, with a square stern and little model, yet fully equipped in accordance with the ideas about ship architecture prevailing at that time. "Sixty tons burden"—twenty-five wagon loads—probably 90 feet long and 25 feet beam.

The two ships, with perhaps 120 passengers, put to sea about August 15, but the Speedwell was soon pronounced too leaky to proceed without being overhauled, and so both ships put in at Dartmouth after eight days' sail. Repairs were made, and before the end of another week they started again; but when about a hundred leagues beyond Land's End, Reynolds, the master of the Speedwell, declared her in imminent danger of sinking, so that both ships again put about. On reaching Plymouth harbor, it was decided to abandon the Speedwell, and thus to send back those of the company whom such a succession of mishaps had disheartened. The **Mayflower** resumed her voyage alone.

It became known later that the **Speedwell's** alleged condition was owing to a deception practiced by the master and crew, who seem to have been unwilling to make the voyage. The vessel was shortly afterwards sold, was "put into her old-time condition, and made many voyages and performed her service very sufficiently and with great profit to her owners."*

Such was the tiny craft in which, without chart or aught else to guide him save the stars in their courses, the first of the Chappell's to locate in America crossed the stormy Atlantic.

After this trip of the **Speedwell** in 1635 there is no further information about Captain John Chappell; and in the **History** (see below) the author says that there is no reason to believe that he remained permanently in Virginia; that "On the contrary, being a skillful navigator engaged in a profitable trade, as he was, he probably continued on the ocean, or may have returned to England and died there." This is a very

---

*—**Narrative and Critical Hist. of America,** vol. 3, ch. 8; **The Chappell, Etc., Families** (by Phil E. Chappell), p. 42, citing the **Log of the Mayflower,** in the State Library of Massachusetts.

reasonable conjecture; but there is one fact, the full significance of which the author of the **History** seems to have overlooked, and which suggests a different hypothesis as the more reasonable; and that hypothesis is that the voyage of John Chappell in 1835 was not his first one, but that he had been there before (possibly was resident there), had acquired lands there, and that, unless he laid his bones comfortably to rest in the bosom of the ocean on some of his voyages, he ended his days there. The significant fact which points to this conclusion, will better be stated in connection with the following sketch of his son:

IX.—**Thomas Chappell,** son of Captain John Chappell, above, was born in England in 1612. On June 13th, 1635. he sailed from Gravesend for the colony in Virginia. on the ship **America,** William Barker, master. The conditions which prevailed, both in England and in Virginia, in 1635, were such as to invite young men to embark for the New World. England was overcrowded with a dense population. In the colony there was plenty of room, and still its population had sufficiently increased, to remove all apprehensions of instability and insecurity. The census of that year showed 4,914 souls; and in the year previous the colony had been divided into eight counties.

"The ship **America** probably reached the mouth of James river about the 1st of August, 1635, and as the law then forbade the breaking of bulk before arriving at Jamestown, she doubtless came directly up the river, and first cast anchor at that place. Thomas Chappell could have remained at Jamestown but a few days, for, as will appear, he proceeded shortly about thirty miles up the river and located on the south side, in Charles City county, opposite Westover, at the mouth of a creek named for him—'Chappell's creek.'

"The first record found which throws any light on Thomas Chappell after his advent into Virginia is a land patent granted to William Barker, the captain of the ship **America,** on which he came over. This patent was issued November 26, 1635—. four months" (or less) "after the landing of the **America.** * * * The following is a **verbatim** copy:" (Granted by John

West, Esq., Governor, to Wm. Barker, mariner, 400 acres of land in Charles City county, bounded upon a creek called Chappell's creek, south into the woods; east along the river (James) adjoining upon Merchants' Hope).

"This description fixes definitely the location of the spot where Thomas Chappell settled on his arrival in the colony, for the land marks designated in the patent can still be found. James river is still there, and flows on just as it did 278 years ago. Old Merchants Hope church is still there, and Chappell's creek is there, although, of course, all else is changed.

"What relationship existed between Captain Barker and Thomas Chappell can never be known. It is certainly a strange coincidence that within four months from the time of their landing we find the young man located at one of the most favored spots in Virginia; the stream on the banks of which he had settled named for him, and the older man patenting large tracts of land in the same vicinity. As will be seen, Captain Barker had made previous voyages, one at least in 1634, and the most plausible theory is that he then owned land in that locality, which he sold to Thomas Chappell. That Thomas acquired land in the vicinity by purchase from the patentee will hereafter be shown."* The showing made on this point by the author of the **History,** consists only of a patent made by Governor Berkeley, in 1665, to Thomas Chappell (being the first deed to him now discoverable), containing 80 acres of land, "beginning at a line that parts John Tate and **the said Thomas Chappell's present land,** and extending into the woods," etc.

It will thus be seen that the industrious and ingenious author of the **History** (his book shows him to be both) reasons from these facts: (1) that prior to the landing of Thomas Chappell in 1635, there is no discovered record of any person of the name having settled permanently in Virginia; (2) that in November, 1635, and only four months or less after the landing of Thomas, the little stream mentioned was known as Chappell's creek; (3) that no patent appears of record made to Thomas Chappell, or any other person named Chappell, until

*—**Chappell, Etc., Families,** pp. 50-53.

the year 1665; (4) that patents were made to Captain Barker in November, 1635, on Chappel's creek; (5) that the patent of Governor Berkeley, made in 1665 to Thomas, shows that he already was a land-owner. From those data the author has deduced the following conclusions: (1) That Chappell's creek **was named after** Thomas Chappell; (2) that Thomas Chappell **purchased** the land on which he settled from some person other than a Chappell, to whom it had been previously patented; and (3) that such person was Captain Barker. None of these conclusions is established by those data; nor do they seem to be the more reasonable or likely conclusions. What seems more probable is that Thomas settled on land previously acquired by his father, Captain John Chappell, and then owned by him, on Chappell's creek; and that when Governor Berkeley's patent was issued in 1665, he had, not **purchased** the land alluded to as already owned by him (from Captain Barker or any one else), but had **inherited** it from his own father. The considerations which go to support this hypothesis are as follows:

1. The **name of Chappell's creek.** Governor West, in the patent to Captain Barker, made Nov. 26, 1635, and only four months or less after the landing of Thomas, described the land conveyed as "upon a creek called Chappell's creek." Thus the creek is indicated to be a known boundary, with its name **then** already established as Chappell's creek. Now, the author of the **History** notes it as a "strange coincidence that within four months from the time of their landing we find the young man located at one of the most favored spots in Virginia; the stream on the banks of which he had settled named for him, and the older man patenting large tracts of land in the same locality." And so it would be strange; but there would be nothing whatever strange about it, if Thomas was **not** the first of the Chappells to land in Virginia; but at some earlier date other members of the family had acquired lands in that vicinity, had given their name to the creek, and when Thomas and Captain Barker landed in August, 1635, they knew exactly whither they were bound, and what they were going to do. It is not likely that a young man of only 23 years and of less than four months' residence, should have so impressed himself on "one of the most favored spots in Virginia," twen-

ty-seven years after the settlement of the colony, as to give his own name to one of the land-marks. Much more probable that the old sea captain, whose historical little ship, which made probably more trips than one, had done the thing; and that the old salt had taken for himself a nice piece of land while about it. The author of the **History** says (on p. 53), that "many of the masters of ships, instead of selling the headrights of persons whom they had brought into the colony," (i. e., the land-scrip which they got, of so many acres for each person brought over) "located them themselves, and very often settled permanently in Virginia and became wealthy planters." Most likely this, or something like this, is what old John Chappell did.

2. This theory is not inconsistent with the facts that there is no account of any former trip to Jamestown of Captain John and no record of any early patent issued to him; for there is no account of any of his former trips any where, and he surely must have made them; and there is no record which is even claimed to be complete of all the trips of all the masters of vessels to Jamestown. In the year 1635 there were 5,000 inhabitants, and but a small part of them are now discoverable from the records. The name of Chappell's creek is a trace, not a record. As to the absence of any known patent to him, the date of the earliest deed in Charles City county now known is March 15, 1632;* and patents had been issued for a number of years prior to that, all record of which is now lost.

Reviewing all of the evidence, in the light of the known history of the place and the times, the most probable theory is: That Captain John Chappell had been to Jamestown before his trip of 1635, had acquired land there, had given **his** name to Chappell's creek, drew Captain Barker (who probably was a friend or even a relative) thither. established his son there in 1635, and (if he died peacefully on land at all) ended his own days there, leaving the land to Thomas by inheritance.

3. This view is further confirmed by the fact that in the patent of 80 acres of land made by Governor Berkeley to

*—Wm. & Mary Col. Mag., v. ix, p. 227.

Thomas Chappell in 1665, the description runs thus: "Beginning at a line that parts John Tate and the said John Chappell's present land, and extending into the woods. North half west four hundred poles, west half south thirty-two poles, south half east four hundred poles, and east half north thirty-two poles to the place aforementioned."

The author of the History says of this patent (p. 55) that "The description of the land conveyed in this patent is peculiar, and the shape of the tract is also unusual. * * * The courses, instead of being described by degrees, are described by the points of the compass, indicating that the surveyor had been a sailor, and was more familiar with having a compass than with his table of logarithms, perhaps. The tract was in the shape of a parallelogram, the courses running at an angle of forty-five degrees from a meridian line—a very peculiar shape in a country where land was as abundant and cheap as it was in Virginia at that time."

Now if it be assumed that old Captain John Chappell, at some time in the early days of land grants in the colony, before 1632, and before skillful surveyors had come over to run lines on regular methods, had taken up a piece of land in that vicinity and had run his own lines with his own compass, and had his patent issued accordingly—that is just what would probably have happened; and the base-lines would have been run by the points of the compass. If afterwards his son, at a later day, acquired an additional eighty, being a parallelogram of which the base-line was to be one of the lines of his original tract, the simplest and the easiest way to bound the new piece so granted, would be to adopt the method of the former patent in designating courses, and describe exact parallels and perpendiculars thereto.

To resume the story of Thomas' life, as given in the History:

"In an old record book of Charles City county, the only one preserved containing any record previous to 1790, have been found two records referring to Thomas Chappell. The first is an order of the county court, made at Westover, then the county seat, which is as follows:

"Att a cor't holden at Westover, April 9, 1661, Thomas Chappell acknowledgeth in cor't to have received of James Wallis who married ye relict of Lt. John Banister, dec'd, one legacy given by ye said Banister to ye said Chappell's child by will and discharged by ye said Wallis fully from ye bond, being three cows and one heyfor. It is ordered by ye cor't that Thomas Chappell give bond to ye cor't for ye cattle bequeathed to his child by ye last will and testament of **Lt. John Barister (X.)** and by him received for her use; being three cows and one heyfor." (Charles City county Order Book, p. 271)."

"The only other record found of Thomas Chappell is in a list of the names composing a "Jury of Enquest;" what would now be called a grand jury, which served at Westover on May 8, 1665. Thomas Chappell was a member of this jury (Charles City Co. Order Book)."*

"Thomas Chappell (or Captain John?) made no mistake in selecting the location for his future home, for the country around Westover and Merchants Hope was the garden of the lower James. * * * Neither Westover nor Merchants Hope were towns as might be inferred, but were simply landings on the river. * * * In 1656 the London and Virginia company built the church that still stands there today. It is still called Merchants Hope church, and has been faithfully kept in repair. * * * The old church is about a mile from the James and near the bank of Chappell's creek. It stands there solitary and alone, surrounded by the old pines, whose branches have sheltered it for two and a half centuries. The old building is of brick with an arched roof and unusually thick, heavy walls. * * * The county surveyor of Prince George county recently made an examination of the old locality, and discovered the spot on which the old courthouse (built in 1702) once stood, from the ruins of the brick walls and the boundaries. * * * Just across the river, and almost in sight is Malvern Hill, where, in July, 1862, was fought one of the most desperate engagements of the Civil war. Among the brave Confederates who fell there were many descndants of Thomas Chappell, who had come from their dis-

*—**History of Chappell, etc., Families,** p. 53-54.

tant Southern homes to meet death at the very spot where their ancestor settled 227 years before."

VIII.—Thomas Chappell, Jr., the only known son of the immigrant Thomas, above, was born in Charles City county, about 1650. He grew to manhood and married **Elizabeth,** daughter of **James Jones.** He lived out his days in that part of the county lying south of James river, on the old homestead. Here he died between 1694 and 1700; only a short time before the organization of Prince George county (in 1702) out of territory that had been part of Charles City county. Hence whatever records were left of him must have been in the latter county, and were destroyed or stolen during the Civil war. In Prince George county no records exist from its organization down to the year 1714.

However, in the land office at Richmond there is the record of a patent issued to him on the 20th of April, 1694, by Governor Edmond Andros, granting 423 acres of land in Charles City county, on the south side of James river, on the Otterdam swamp.

Thomas Chappell left a will which, although the record of it is lost, is mentioned in a deed executed in 1721, by his grandson, Charles Williams. There is also evidence that he left his widow and children well provided for. His children were Samuel, Thomas, James, **Robert,** and a daughter.

The name of his daughter has not been ascertained; but she married John Williams, and had at least one son, Charles Williams who made the deed in 1721, cited above, conveying to James Gee lands devised to him by Thomas Chappell.

It would be a great labor to set forth here the descendants of Thomas Chappell, Jr., through his four sons; they are numbered by thousands. Besides, it would be useless, because Mr. Phil E. Chappell, of Kansas City, Mo., has already done that work in a handsome illustrated volume, of 382 pages, entitled "A Geneological History of the Chappell, Dickie and Other Kindred Families of Virginia." a copy of which is in the writer's library, and which has already been mentioned.

An interesting feature of this connection, however, is the

fact that one of the descendants of Thomas was the Hon. Absalom H. Chappell, of Macon, Ga., who married Loretto R. Lamar, as will be seen by reference to that section of our genealogical history. His children are, therefore, akin by both sides. Hon. Absalom H. Chappell's line of descent runs thus: Thomas Chappell, Jr.; Samuel Chappell; John Chappell; Joseph Chappell; Absalom H. Chappell. There is a full-page picture of him in the **History.**

VII.—Robert Chappell, son of Thomas Jr., and Elizabeth (Jones) Chappell, of Charles City county, was born about 1680, in that part of the county lying south of James river. which in 1702 was organized into Prince George county. His wife was named Sarah, but her surname is unknown. The loss of most of the records in Prince George county has destroyed all references to him during his lifetime. He died in 1724, while yet a young man, and left the following will:

"In the name of God! Amen. The third day of February, Anno Domini, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-three, I, Robert Chappell, of Prince George county, planter, being sick in body, but of good and perfect memory, thanks to Almighty God, and calling to remembrance the uncertainty of this transitory life, and that all flesh must yield unto death when it shall please God to call, do make and declare this my last will and testament in manner and form following.

"First, being penitent and sorry for all my sins, most humbly desiring forgiveness for the same, and commending my soul to Almighty God, my Savior and Redeemer, to Whom and by Whose love I trust and believe assuredly to be saved and have full remission and forgiveness for all my sins, and to inherit the Kingdom of Heaven. And my body I commit to the earth, to be decently buried under the direction of my executrix, to be hereafter named; and for the settlement of my estate and all goods, chattels and debts it has pleased God to bestow upon me, I do order, give and dispose of it in the manner and form following:

"Imprimis: I give and bequeath to my son, Robert, forty shillings in cash, one feather bed, my gun and wearing apparel,

my horse called Turk, with saddle and furnishings; three cows and calves. and my negro boy Dick, to be delivered to him at the age of 21 years.

"Item: I give and bequeath to my daughter, Sarah, one feather bed, forty shillings in cash and my negro girl named Frank, to be delivered to her when of age, or at the time of marriage.

"Item: I give to my daughter, Mary, one negro girl named Jenny.

"Item: I give to my son, John, five pounds sterling in cash and my negro girl named Patti.

"Item: I give to my daughter, Ann, my negro girl, Amy, three pounds in cash and my sorrel mare and her increase (if any there be) to be divided between my two daughters, Mary and Ann.

"Item: I give to my youngest son, James. my negro boy, Tom, to be given to him when he becomes of age.

"Item: I give to my beloved wife, Sarah, my negroes, Harry, Jerry and Lydia, with the sidesaddle and furnishings, also three pounds and nine shillings cash, and after her decease I give the negro boy, Jerry, to my son, Robert. And it is my desire that the first increase that lives of all those before mentioned negroes I give one to my daughter Ann, and another to my son James; and if there be any others, I give them to my children equally and to their issue forever. If any of my children die before becoming of age, then I desire that they may be divided equally between the rest of my children living to maturity.

"Item: I give and bequeath unto my beloved wife all the rest of my estate whether in debts due me or otherwise, except what household goods or movables are left after my decease according to inventory, and these I desire may be equally divided between my wife and children as they become of age, by any two neighbors as my wife thinks fit. And whatever cattle, sheep or hogs I leave unto her to be given at her discretion, or any part of them, to my children as they become of age.

"I do hereby make and appoint my dear and beloved wife Sarah, full and sole executrix of this my last will and testament, hereby revoking, disannulling and making void all former wills and bequests by me made, and declaring this only to be my last will and testament.

"In witness whereto I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written.

"Teste: **Robert Chappell** (Seal)

"Thomas Hardaway,

"Robert Buell,

"Thomas Pence."

This will was proved on February 12. 1724.

Sarah Chappell, the widow of Robert Chappell, married, secondly, William Crawley, a merchant and Indian trader, of Petersburg. About 1735-1745 William Crawley removed with his family, amongst whom were the Chappell children of his wife to Amelia county, which had been recently (1734) organized from part of Prince George. His plantation there was on Deep creek, and he died about 1748. He was a widower with several children when he married Mrs. Sarah Chappell, and by her he had a son, William Crawley, Jr. The wife, former widow of Robert Chappell died in Amelia county in 1761, aged about 75 years. Her will was proved on January 22, 1761, and is set forth in full in the **Chappell** family history, on page 167. It shows that her daughter, Mary, had married a Morgan; that Sarah had married a Burton; that Ann had married William Neal, and had four children, named Joel, John, Mary and Elizabeth.

VI.—Robert Chappell, Jr., was the eldest son of Robert and Sarah Chappell. He seems to have been twice married, for in the records of Bristol parish appear the following entries of the births of some of his children:

"Ann, daughter of Robert and **Mary** Chappell, was born February 8, 1721."

"Abraham, son of Robert and **Eliza** Chappell, was born May 6, 1729."

"Robert, son of Robert and **Eliza** Chappell, was born ye April 2, 1732, baptz. May 7, 1732."

The surname of his first wife is unknown; his second wife was **Eliza Peterson** (VI).

On December 13, 1725, one Abram Cocke conveyed to him 200 acres of land in Prince George county, lying "on the upper side of Oquitt's branch, adjoining the land of John Banister on Hatchen's run." On Sept. 15, 1758, he witnessed the will of Thomas Booth, of Amelia county, and on June 22, 1766, appeared as such witness at the probate of it.

When an old man, probably 80 years of age, he executed the following deed of gift, which is of record in Amelia county:

"Amelia County }
"Feb'y 17, A. D., 1779 }

"I, Robert Chappell, Sr., being in a low state of life, but in perfect memory, doth make a free gift unto my beloved daughter, **Martha Mayes,** of the following slaves. To-wit: A wench named Mary, Ellick, George and a girl named Little Mary. They and their increase to be hers during life, then at her decease to be equally divided among her present children.

"Witnesses: **Robert Chappell** (Seal).

"Rich'd Ferguson, John Combs, Drury Moore."

On the 28th of October, of the same year (1779) this Robert Chappell sold his home, containing 180 acres, to his half-brother, William Crawley. The land is described as being in Raleigh parish, Amelia county. The consideration expressed in the deed is £4,000, equal to $20,000. It must be remembered, however, that this was during the darkest days of the Revolution, and the currency of the country was so greatly depreciated as to be of little actual value.

No will of Robert Chappell is of record in Amelia county. It is believed that when he sold his home to William Crawley, he went to live with his daughter, Martha Mayes, in Prince George, and died there. The two sons of Robert, Abraham and Robert (3) both left numerous descendants, full account

of whom is given in the book on **The Chappell, etc., Families** already mentioned.

V.—Martha Chappell, daughter of the second wife, Eliza, must have been born about 1735-1745. She married **Matthew Mayes (V.)**; and as shown by the terms of her father's deed, quoted above, was living in February, 1779. There is no record of the date of her death, the records of Prince George county having been destroyed, as already stated.

John Bannister.

X.—John Bannister, whose daughter married Thomas Chappell (IX), was born about 1600. He came from England to Virginia in, or shortly before the year 1636. He bought African slaves, being then resident in Charles City county, from a Spanish ship which came up the James in 1638. He founded a family of his own name which exists in Virginia today; a John apparently in each generation. Bannister river, which flows through the northern part of Halifax county, Va., was named for him or some member of his family.*

THE FAMILY OF JONES.

This family comes into the genealogy by the marriage of Thomas Chappell (VIII) to Elizabeth Jones, as told **ante,** on page 56.

X.—Giles Jones received a patent to a tract of land in Isle of Wight county, on Dec. 14, 1619, which is believed to be the earliest in date of any patent in that county of which there is any mention. Of this tract he conveyed 100 acres to Justinian Cooper and wife, Oct. 19, 1629. On Oct. 16, 1628, Governor Francis West issued a patent for 100 acres to **Elizabeth Jones (X.)**, wife of **Giles Jones, gent**, as her own personal dividend, being an ancient planter, said land being in the "Island of Point Comfort," abutting easterly upon the "bay of Ches-

*—**Virginia Mag. Hist.**, vol. vi., p. 100; **Chappell, Etc., Families**, p. 54.

apeake," and westerly upon the creek which divides said island from the mainland.*

IX.—James Jones, son of Giles and Elizabeth Jones, above, was born about 1640. On Oct. 28, 1702, he received a patent from Sir Francis Nicholson, governor, conveying to him 640 acres of land lying in Prince George and in Surrey counties. On the 10th of May, 1715, at a court held for the county of Prince George, James Chappell, son of Thomas Chappell, Jr., acknowledged the receipt from James Jones (his grandfather) of all that part of Thomas Chappell's estate, real and personal left by his will to James Chappell and placed in the hands of James Jones. He died between the 6th and 12th days of April, 1719. His will is of record, and is as follows:

Will of James Jones.

"In the name of God, Amen. I, James Jones, being weake and sick, but of sound and perfect mind and memory, praise be therefor given to Almighty God, doe make and ordain this my present last will and testament in manner and form following, that is to say. First, and principally, I recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God, hoping through the merritts death and passion of my Savior Jesus Christ to have full and free pardon and forgiveness of all my sins and to inherit everlasting life; and my body I commit to the earth to be decently buried at the discretion of my executor, hereafter named, and as touching the disposition of all such temporal estate as it hath pleased Almighty God to bestow upon me I give and dispose thereof as follows:

"First, I will that my debts and funeral expenses shall be paid and discharged.

"Item. I will that my loving wife have the labour of four negroes during her natural life, they are named Will, Robin, Maria and Betty. Provided they are not removed off from the plantation I now live upon; if they are, then immediately to return to my executor, which plantation I will my wife shall live upon during her life.

---

*—**Virginia Mag. of History,** vol. v., p. 407; Do., vol. 1, p. 447.

"Item. I give my wife's two sons, two negro children, one named James, the other unborn, the first child that either Betty or Maria shall bring to be the other, which two negro children to be disposed of to my wife's two sons as she shall think fitt. the unborn and the born child, James, to be and remain with their mothers till they come to the age of two years and a half year.

"My will is likewise that my wife have during her life what household stuff my executor shall see fitt and that she have a reasonable maintenance yearly out of my stock.

"Item. I give to my daughter, Mary Dardin, my negro man, Jo, during her life.

"Item. I give to my daughter, Elizabeth, a negro named Hanna to be at her disposal to do as she sees fitt.

"Item. I give to my daughter, Hanna, one negro named Jack to be at her disposal at her death or before as she sees fitt.

"Item. I give to my daughter Rebecca two hundred acres of land lying in Surry county, beginning from the swamp up by the spring, south, to the outline, that to be the head line, to her and her heirs forever.

"Item. I give to my grandson, James Jones, this my plantation I live upon after my wife's decease, and all my lands in Prince George county, after his father's and mother's decease, to him and his heirs forever.

"Item. I give to my grandson, Thomas Chappell, one hundred acres of land lying in Surry county from the swamp south, joining upon William Cocke above the outline, to him and his heirs forever.

"Item. I give to my granddaughter, Jane Cocke, daughter of John Cocke, one negro named Amy, to her and her heirs forever, as also one feather bed and bolster, one rug and one blanket, **and if the ticke be bad lett a new ticke be bought,** as also two young cows, one young mair, one iron pot, two pewter dishes and one dozen of spoons.

"All the rest and residue of my personal estate, goods

and chattels whatsoever, I do give and bequeath to my loving son, James Jones, full and sole executor of this my last will and testament and I do hereby revoke, disannull and make void all former wills and testaments by me heretofore made.

"In witness whereof I, the said James Jones, to this my last will and testament, do set my hand and seal this the 6th day of April, A. D., 1719.

James Jones (Seal).
(Sealed with wafer).

"Signed and sealed in the presence of
"Gilbert Hay,
"Edward Prince,
"Thomas Temple.

"At a court held at Merchant's Hope for Prince George county on the second Tuesday in May, being the twelfth day of said month, A. D., 1719, the above written last will of James Jones, deceased, was exhibited in court by James Jones, his executor, who made oath thereto, and it being proven by the oaths of the witnesses thereto a certificate was granted the said James Jones for obtaining a probate in due form.

"Teste—Wm. Hamlin, Clerk."

From the terms of this will it appears that the wife of James Jones, **Sarah**, had been previously married, and had two sons by her former husband. On the 20th of April, she filed in court a writing stating that "I think myself justly dealt by therein, and to prevent further disputes I desire the will probated, I being willing to rely on the legacy left me in said will."*

VIII.—Elizabeth Jones, daughter of James, above, was born about 1665. She married, first, **Thomas Chappell, Jr.** (VIII), as shown before. Left a widow between 1694 and 1700, she did not long remain single, but married, secondly, in June or July, 1704, Thomas Taylor, who executed a bond on June 22, 1704, to her father, James Jones, conditioned that he would permit her "from time to time, and at all times,

*—**Chappell, Dickie, Etc., Families**, pp. 60, 63-67, 122-123.

forever hereafter * * * to give and dispose to her (Chappell) children, how, when and as she thinks fitt, any and all sums of money, or its value in country commodity, or personal property of which she may be possessed." This bond was evidently given because of the rule of law then existing, that when a woman married her money and other personal property became her husband's; and the object of it seems to have been to secure to Elizabeth the power to make provision for the Chappell children.

Elizabeth seems to have been left again a widow about February, 1726, at which time she proved the foregoing bond in court. On Nov. 2, 1725, she executed a power of attorney to Charles Fisher, master of the ship **Mary Gallye**, authorizing him to sell her tobacco and transact other business for her in London. This is the latest notice of her.*

THE FAMILY OF PETERSON.

This family comes into the pedigree by the marriage of Robert Chappell, Jr. (VI) to Eliza Peterson, as told on page 60 **ante.**

In the **History of Bristol Parish** (by Slaughter) this family is mentioned in detail. It is there said, on page 205, that

"The ancestor of the estimable Peterson family of Bristol parish was John, who settled in Isle of Wight county, Va., about 1660. The names of two sons, John and Batte, have been transmitted to us."

The historian then proceeds to trace the "estimable family" by its generations from John, a grandson of the above, and shows numerous marriages with the best Virginia families.

Nothing has been found to show certainly which of the Petersons was the father of Eliza. She was evidently born in the period 1705 to 1710; and was probably a granddaughter of the immigrant John.

---

*—**Ditto**, pp. 60, 66, 67.

THE LOCKE FAMILY.

This family comes into the pedigree by the marriage of Agnes T. Locke with **Robert C. Mayes,** as told **ante,** see page 19.

"Tradition considers the name of Locke of Scotch extraction, originally spelt Lock; but, if so, it must have been in very early time; for when Alfred divided this kingdom into parishes, the dwelling of a great man, known by the name of Locke, was called after him Lockstown, or the Town of Locke. It adjoins East Brent, where the family at one time became numerous. At present it is called Lockston, alias Loton, the lordship of which belongs to the Marquis of Buckingham. The parish of Locking is distant two miles from Lockstown, and hath long since been divided; but a large farm of many hundreds per annum, called Lockinghead, together with the perpetuity of the living, belongs to the merchants of Bristol.

"The Locke family in this neighborhood consider themselves as described from a very ancient house, arguing that they gave name **to** the parishes where they lived, before the conquest, and do not derive their name with a **De** from the parishes, as is very commonly the case."*

"According to the preceding article," says the author of **The Book of the Locke's,** on p. 348, "the name of Locke was known in England in the time of King Alfred, about the year 880. * * * The name does not stand out prominent in the early or more modern history of England, (excepting in the case of **John,** the great philosopher, who stands at the head of greatness and goodness in the ranks of the learned), however it often appears, and connected with events and individuals, which show that they were of respectable standing. To gratify the curiosity of some, and for a future reference, should any one wish hereafter to make further researches in England, I subjoin a few facts that have been collected, many of them being taken from documents published a few years since under the direction of the 'Record Commissioners,' by the government

---

*—H. F. Y., in **Gentleman's Magazine** (England), vol. 62, pt. 2, p. 798; A. D., 1792.

of Great Britain, an incomplete copy having been given by said government to the New England Historic-Genealogical Society. In many cases, the simple name only, and the date when recorded, is given. The different orthographies are seen.

"1198—Eustace Loc.

"1203—Ricardus Loc, of Witteham, his widow Letitia living 1203. when she sues for right of dower.

"1230—Johanna, widow of William de Lok, who was son of Jordan Lok, to whom King John, in 1199, granted right to take tolls of ships on the Thames. William had son, Thomas, under age in 1230.

"1236—Thomas de Lock.

"1250—Gilbert Locke, and William, his son, of county of Lincoln.

"1250—Ricardus Lok, Lucy his wife, and Mabilla, her sister, of Co. of Oxford.

"1291—Thomas Locke was of Merton. Tyson, in his **Environs of London,** says that 'Edward III granted the Rectory of Merton belonging to a former Abbey of that name to Thomas Locke, about 1291.' Here is an error, evidently, as the reign of Edward III did not begin until 1327. Manning, in his History of the County of Surrey, within which is Merton, says of Merton Place, 'Near the church is a large old mansion, which has been known from time immemorial by the name of Merton Place. In the year 1499, John Locke and Jane, his wife, became possessed of it (probably by inheritance), in whose family it continued until the year 1646, when John, a remote descendant of John above, (and whose ancestors had in the meantime purchased the Impropriation of the Rectory in 7 of Edward VI) conveyed it together with the Impropriation to Catherine, late wife of John Highland, alderman of London.' There seems to be some discrepancy in the dates, which may possibly be reconciled in this way, viz: that a portion of the premises may have been granted in 1291, and the remainder at a subsequent period.

"1313—John Lok was of Scardiburg.

"1350—Robert Locke was Vicecomes of Wiltshire"—in conjunction with Thomas de Saint Maur.

"1359—Berengarius Loc, of Narbonne, with John Bigot, of Biteria, were messengers sent by the states of Senescalcia Carcassiona to the king of France. Edward III granted them protection in going and returning through and staying in his kingdom, and also to the ten knights, horsemen and boatmen, which composed their retinue.

"1395—License was granted by Richard II to William Locke and John Kenynghale, Scotch merchants, for exporting goods to Norway.

"1412—Complaint was made to the king of England by William Locke and others, merchants of Lenn (Lynn) setting forth that notwithstanding that they had had rights granted them by the king of Norway, Dacia and Sweden, they had been robbed and ill treated by the merchants of Hanse; and though the king of Sweden had imposed a fine of 1.500 marks upon the aggressors, it had never been paid, and their troubles still continued; and that, in 1409, a ship was freighted by William Locke and others, of Lenn, for Berne and Wysmer, and the captain of the ship was seized at Berne, and ordered to return to Lenn; and they claimed a redress for their great losses."

Leaving, now, these disconnected notices of the old name, we come to the family history of the branch from which we are descended. The most complete and satisfactory account accessible to the writer is that given by the late eminent genealogist, Col. Joseph L. Chester, LL. D., of London, England, in the January number, 1881, p. 59, of the **New England Historical and Genealogical Register.**

XIV.—"**William Locke** (Lock, Lok, or Loke, as the name was indifferently spelt in early times) had two sons, viz: John Locke, citizen and mercer of London, who died in 1519, leaving no issue,* and

*—He was sheriff of London in 1460, **Gentleman's Magazine, 1792**, v. 2, p. 799.

XIII.—"**Thomas Locke**, also citizen and mercer of London, who died in 1507. By his wife, Joanna Wilcocks" (who was the only daughter and heir of Mr. Wilcocks, of Rotheram, in Yorkshire*), "who died in 1512, and was buried with her husband in Mercers Chapel (London), he had an only son: viz:

XII.—"**Sir William Locke,** knight, alderman of London, who was born about 1486, as he was admitted to the freedom of London, at the end of his apprenticeship in 1507. He succeeded to his father's business and estate, and became an eminent tradesman and citizen. He received the royal appointment of mercer to King Henry VIII., with whom he was an especial favorite, having a key to the king's private chamber, and occasionally entertaining him at dinner at his house in London. There are records in existence showing materials furnished by him to the royal household, including Queen Anne Boleyn, and the Princess, afterwards Queen, Elizabeth; as also, Will Sowers, the king's jester." [In the 25th year of Henry's reign, this William Locke "undertook to go over to Dunkirk, and pull down the pope's bull, which had been there posted up, by way of a curse to the king and kingdom. For this exploit the king granted him a freehold of 100 l. per annum, dubbed him a knight, and made him one of the gentlemen of his privy-chamber."†] "After being several years an alderman, he was elected sheriff of London in 1548, and was knighted on the 3rd of October, in that year, but died before it was his turn to become Lord Mayor.

"Sir William Locke married four wives:

"First, Alice, daughter of a citizen and fishmonger of London, named Spencer, who has not yet been identified. She died in 1522, and was buried in Mercer's Chapel.

"Second, **Catherine** (XII), daughter of **William Cooke,** of Salisbury (XIII). She died in childbed, of her eleventh child (Sir Williams' twentieth), Oct. 14, 1537, and was buried at Merton, in Surrey.

---

*—**Same reference,** as above.

†—**Gentleman's Magazine,** as above.

"Third, Eleanor, widow of Walter Marsh. They were married at St. Lawrence, Old Jewry, London, 13 May, 1540, her first husband having been buried there the preceding 20th of January. She died in 1546, having had no issue.

"Fourth, Elizabeth, widow of Robert Meredith, citizen and mercer of London, and formerly wife of —— Hutton. Their marriage license was granted 28 January, 1547-8, her husband Meredith having been buried at St. Lawrence, Jewry, 9 January, 1546-7. She survived Sir William Locke, having no issue by him, and was buried in Mercer's Chapel, London, 5 December, 1551. The curious feature of this marriage was that she was the second wife and widow of Sir William Locke's own son-in-law, Robert Meredith having first married a daughter of Sir William by his first wife, as will be seen hereafter.

"Sir William Locke died at the age of about 64, on the 24th, and was buried in Mercer's Chapel, 27 August, 1550. (In the 'Diary of Henry Machyn,' published by the Camden Society, will be found an account of his burial, at page 1, and at page 12 an imperfect one of that of his late wife).

"By his second wife, **Catherine Cooke**, Sir William Locke had eleven children, viz: Dorothy, Catherine, John, Alice, Thomazin, Francis and a second John, of none of whom is there any thing of particular interest to record. The first two married tradesmen in London, and the others died without issue.

"Elizabeth, one of the daughters, married, first, Richard Hill, citizen and mercer of London, and second, after his death in 1568, the Right Rev. Nicholas Bullingham, bishop of Worcester. By her first husband she had thirteen children, one of whom, Mary, married Sir Thomas Moundeford, and was mother of Bridget, who married Sir John Bramston, Lord Chief Justice of the king's bench.

"Rose, another of the daughters, married, first, Anthony Hickman, of London, Esq., and second, Simon Throckmorton, of Brampton, Co. Huntington, Esq. By her first husband she was ancestress of the Earls of Plymouth, their grandson, Dixie

Hickman, having married Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Henry, fifth Lord Windsor, and had a son, Thomas, who succeeded his uncle (by limitation of the patent) as seventh Lord Windsor. and was created Earl of Plymouth, 6 December, 1682. The title became extinct only on the death of the eighth earl, 8 December, 1843.

"Of the sons—

XI.—"**Michael Locke** became a merchant of eminence in London, and was twice married; first, to **Joane** (XI), daughter of **William Wilkinson** (XII), sheriff of London; and second, to Margery, widow of Dr. Caesar Adelmare, by whom she was the mother of the celebrated Sir Julius Caesar. Michael Locke had by his first wife five sons and three daughters, the eldest of whom, Zachary Locke, Esq., died in 1603 being then Member of Parliament for the Borough of Southwark.

"The interesting fact in the history of Michael Locke is that he was the original patron of the celebrated Sir Martin Frobisher in his earliest expeditions. **Hakluyt's Voyages** contains a 'History of Sir Martyn Frobishere's Voyage for the Discovery of a Passage Towards Cathay, in 1574, written by Michael Locke, Locke himself being a great adventurer therein;' and Hakluyt speaks thus of the map: 'The mappe is Master Michael Locke's, a man for his knowledge in divers languages, and especially in cosmographie, able to do his country good, and worthy in my judgment, for the manifolde good partes in him, of good reputation and better fortune.'

"In the Cottonian Library is a MS. written by this Michael Locke, in which he says that at the age of thirteen 'he was sent over the seas to Flanders and France. to learn their languages, and to know the world, since which time he has continued these 32 years to travel in body and mind, following his vocation in the trade of merchandize, passing through many countries, had the charge of and captain of a great ship of more than 1,000 tons, three years in divers voyages; and that he has more than 200 sheets of his travels.' He was living as late as 1611.

"The other son of Sir William, Henry Locke, was also a

citizen and merchant of London. He married Anne Vaughan, and had issue a daughter Anne, who married Robert Moyle, of Cornwall, whose descendants intermarried with the St. Aubyns and Prideauxs, among the best families in that county; and two sons, viz: Michael, to whom the historian Hakluyt left a legacy in his will; and Henry Locke (or Lok), a poet of some note in his day, an edition of whose scarce productions was issued in 1871 by the Rev. Dr. Grosart." Here Col. Chester takes up the family of Sir William by his first wife; we will not follow that line, as it is remote from us. This history is continued from the article in the **Gentleman's Magazine,** already cited. It says: Michael Locke "was father, amongst other children, of

X.—"**Matthew Locke,** who became seated at Pensford, in Buckinghamshire, and had two sons, Richard and Christopher. The former was of Bedminster in the county of Somerset, and, dying 1617, left John Locke, his son, Mayor of Bristol 1641, * * *

IX.—"**Christopher Locke,** the younger son (i. e., of Matthew) soon after Abbot Whiting's lands at East Brent were granted to the Whitmore family, was sent into that parish (which, as before observed, adjoins to Lockstown), to divide the forfeited estate into farms; and having laid out a valuable farm for himself at a place called Pilrow, built a large house, and became the stem of a very respectable family, whose baptisms, as by the parish register, are as follows:

"1.—Christopher, bapt. March 25, 1593, father, etc (here follows an account of the descendants).

"2.—John Locke, baptized August 1, 1595. * * * He became a captain of foot in the civil wars of Charles the First, and was killed at Bristol in 1645. He had two sons, one of whom died in his minority; the other was the judicious **John Locke,** the great metaphysician and philosopher;" also a daughter, the mother of Lord Chancellor King.

"3.—Honour, bapt. August 21, 1597, and intermarrying with Francis Shepard, of Mark, became ancestor, etc. * * *

"4.—Christian, bapt. July 3, 1601; of whom we have no further account, and

VIII.—"5. **Lewis Locke,** baptized July 13, 1606; was buried at Taunton Saint Mary Magdalen, March .7, 1692. By four wives he had thirty-five children, most of whom lived to be men and women; and what is more remarkable, his eldest son, John, born 1625, was fifty-nine years of age, when his youngest child, Christopher, was born at Taunton, anno. 1684. It is reported in the family that John had a great-grandson as old as his younger brother. * * *

VII.—**William Locke,** of Pitminster, near Taunton, was son of Lewis by his fourth wife. He married Dorothy (VII), daughter of **Richard Cooksley** (VIII), of Dunstar, Gentleman; and died January 25, 1719, aged 49. His only son,

VI.—"**Richard Locke** married **Hannah** (VI), the only daughter of John Dod (VII), of Burnham in the county of Somerset, Gentleman, and became an inhabitant of that parish. He died 1765 aged 59, leaving the present (1792) Richard Locke Esq., of Highbridge House in Burnham, his son and heir. * * * The arms borne by this branch of the family are: Party per fesse, Azure and Or, a pale between three falcons indorsed, counterchanged. Crest; a falcon of the same with a padlock in its beak."

V.—**William Locke**, son of the above, was born about 1730, emigrated to Virginia and there about 1770 married Agnes Thweatt (V), daughter of Drury Hardaway (VI), of Bristol parish, Dinwiddie county. He was a valiant soldier in the Revolutionary army; and died shortly after the peace, about 1785. He left a widow, five daughters and one son named Richard. The widow and all the children save one, moved to Tennessee. There Richard, the son, died unmarried.

IV.—**Agnes Thweat Locke,** daughter of the above, was born in 1771, married Robert C. Mayes, in the year 1789. In 1794 she moved with her husband to Kentucky, and there she died, at Cadiz, Ky., in the residence of her second son, Matthew Mayes, on the 18th September, 1857, aged 86 years. Her son announced her death, to his oldest brother, Daniel Mayes, then living in Jackson, Miss., by the following letter:

"Cadiz, 22 September, 1857.

"Dear Brother Daniel:—

"It is my painful duty to communicate to you the painful fact that our dear mother is no more of this world. She died on the 18th instant at half past six in the afternoon, after a painful illness of some six weeks, but she retained her strength astonishingly. She sat up in her chair the day before her death for some hours. She retained her perfect senses to the last. She was buried on the 20th. Brother Richard and Thomas reached here after her death. We regret much your absence, and had hoped that you would have fulfilled the promise to visit us this summer. Mother frequently expressed her great anxiety on the subject, but she was called away without having the gratification of again seeing you but her children were always in her thoughts. She loved us as few mothers ever loved—and before her death she bestowed her blessing on us all. She has gone the way of the just, and is now, no doubt, enjoying the realities of never ending bliss. May God prepare each of us to meet her in Heaven.

"We still look for you this fall. All well.

"Your brother, M. Mayes."

THE FAMILY OF HARDAWAY.

This family is spoken of by **Meade** as one of the old and leading families in Eastern Virginia in colonial time; see his "Old Churches," etc., vol. 2, appendix, p. 429.

VII.—**Thomas Hardaway** is the first known of this line. On the 3rd of February, 1723, he witnessed the will of Robert Chappell, which is still of record in Prince George county, Virginia. About 1730 he married Agnes Thweatt.

He was interestingly connected with the history of Bristol parish, Va.; and the following abstract is taken from the excellent History of that parish, by the Rev. Philip Slaughter:

"The 13th of May, 1607. was the day bi-centennially celebrated as the anniversary of the first landing at Jamestown. But the landing was begun on the 14th of May, the place having been chosen the day before. * * *

"In 1611, Sir Thomas Dale, with the Rev. Mr. Whitaker, ascended James river and founded, at Ferrar's Island (Dutch Gap), in September, Henricopolis (Henrico City), the nucleus around which was formed the county of Henrico in 1634. * * *

"About Christmas, 1611, Sir Thomas Dale captured the Indian town at the mouth of the Appomattox and made a plantation there, and called it New Bermudas (Bermuda Hundred). * * * The distance from Bermuda Hundred to Henrico City was only five miles by land and fourteen by water, and their relations with each other were very intimate. * * *

"As early as 1618, the governor and council were instructed to divide the colony into counties; but there is no record of their having done so until 1634, when they divided it into eight shires (counties) of which Charles City and Henrico were two—both embracing the south side of James river—the former covering the territory below the Appomattox down to Chippoak's creek; the latter the territory above the Appomattox, and both with an undefined western frontier. This is the birth of Charles City county, and its first appearance on record. * * *

"We have now by gradual steps come to the establishment of Bristol parish (1642). The act of Assembly was in these words:

" '**Be it also enacted and confirmed,** for the conveniency of the inhabitants of both sides of the Appomatock river, being farr remote from the parish church of the said plantation upon Appomatock be bounded into a parish by themselves, as followeth: To begin at Cawson's ffield within the mouth of the Appomatock river, on the eastward side, and at Powell's creek on the westward side of the river; and so to extend up the river to the falls on both sides, and the said parish to be called by the name of Bristoll.'

"All writers hitherto have assumed that the mother church of Bristol parish was at Bermuda Hundred. * * * But the rational conclusion is that the mother church was above Powell's creek, and the indications point to old 'Wood's Church.' This old church, five miles from Petersburg, was built in 1707,

and is consequently older than the Blandford church. It is of wood, and has been often repaired, nothing now remaining of the original structure but the skeleton framework. * * *

"We are in the dark as to the parish until 1680, when a list of the parishes and their incumbents in the Colonial Records shows that the Rev. John Ball was ministering to the church at Varina in Henrico parish, and to that 'half of Bristol north of the Appomattox,' while the half of Bristol and Jordan's, in Charles City county, had lay readers only. * * *

"The vestry book extant begins in 1720, and the vestry meetings after that date, until 1737, were held at the Ferry chapel. * * * In 1725 the population of the parish having advanced toward the west and settled upon Saponey and Namozine creeks, Major Robert Bolling and Major Munford were instructed by the vestry to contract for two chapels for the accommodation of the frontier inhabitants of the parish.

The Blandford Church.

"January, 1733, the church wardens were directed to examine into the condition of the chapel at the ferry, and if it could be well repaired to employ workmen to do the same. At a meeting of the vestry soon afterwards it was determined to build a new church of brick. The church wardens were instructed to purchase an acre of land on Wells' hill; of John Low, as a site for the church. The vestry met the workmen at the time appointed—4th May—at **Thomas Hardaway's**, and agreed with Captain Thomas Ravenscroft to build a church on Wells' hill for the sum of 584 pounds current money of Virginia.

"According to the articles of agreement, the church was to be of brick, sixty by twenty-five feet in the clear, fifteen feet from the spring of the arch to the floor, which was to be eighteen inches above the highest part of the ground, three bricks thick to the water table, and two and a half afterwards; the aisle to be six feet wide and laid with Bristol stone; a gallery at the west end with a window in the same, as large as the pitch will admit. The floor to be well laid with good inch and a quarter plank, the pews to be framed and the fronts to be raised a panel and a quarter around, with a decent

pulpit and a decent rail around the altar place, and a table suitable thereto as usual; the roof to be covered with plank and shingled with good cypress heart shingles, with cornice eaves, large board eaves, and suitable doors; the work to be done in the best plain manner, strong and workmanlike. Major Robert Bolling, William Poythress and William Starke were deputed to superintend the building. * * *

"Such is the early history of the old brick church at Blandford, which has now become historical, a shrine to which pilgrims wend their way, and which has waked the muse of poetry. * * *

"It has been said, in prose and in poetry, that the materials were brought from the "fatherland." This saying is probably not true, except as to the white Bristol stone with which the aisles were paved. It may be true as to some churches, but we have never seen any proof of such fact. It certainly is not true, as has been affirmed, as to the bricks used in this church or others, since the signs of brick-kilns are found near a majority of them. There was no occasion for it, as brick-makers were among the earliest importations, and the bills for moulding and turning the brick for the capitol at Williamsburg are still extant. * * *

"Besides the many 'who have paid their silent homage at this shrine,' there are some who have recorded their impressions in prose, in poetry, and in pictures. Among these, a stranger has sung it in strains, written in pencil upon the inner walls of the church, which, having won the unanimous verdict of applause from the grand jury of the people, deserves the first place. These lives have been ascribed to different writers, living and dead. Campbell and Simpson believe them to be the work of Tyrone Power (the Irish comedian):

"Thou art crumbling to the dust, old pile!
Thou art hastening to thy fall;
And round thee in thy loneliness
Clings the ivy to the wall;
The worshippers are scattered now,
Who knelt before thy shrine;

And silence reigns where anthems rose
In days of 'Auld Lang Syne.'

"And sadly sighs the wandering wind,
Where oft in years gone by
Prayer rose from many hearts to Him,
The Highest of the High.
The tread of many a noiseless foot
That sought thy aisles is o'er;
And many a weary heart around
Is still forevermore.

"How doth ambition's hope take wing!
How droops the spirit now!
We hear the distant city's din;
The dead are mute below.
The sun that shone upon their paths
Now gilds their lowly graves;
The zephyrs which once fanned their brows,
The grass above them waves.

"Oh! could we call the many back,
Who've gathered here in vain—
Who've careless roved where we do now,
Who'll never meet again;
How would our very hearts be stirred,
To meet the earnest gaze
Of the lovely and the beautiful—
The lights of other days!"*

It is a pleasant thing that since we have so few traces of the life of old Mr. Hardaway to find him connected, even so incidentally, with such a sacred and touching story. That the rendezvous for the contracting parties was fixed at his house, goes to show, without doubt, that he was a decent and honest man—one who took interest in church matters.

A son of his, John Hardaway, on the 14th of February, 1756, married Rebecca Pepper, of Sussex county; another son,

*—Hist. of Bristol Parish; Slaughter; pp. 1-14, 90, 95, 96.

Stephen Hardaway, on December 5, 1756, married Purify Booker, of Amelia county.

VI.—**Drury Hardaway**, third son of Thomas, was in 1790, a member of the vestry in Bristol parish (**Slaughter**, p. 124). He was the father of

V.—**Agnes Thweatt Hardaway**, daughter of Drury, born in 1753, married William Locke, in the year 1770. Died in Tennessee about 1851, aged 98 years.

THE FAMILY OF THWEATT.

IX.—**James Thweatt**, born in 1643, is the first of this family of whom account has been obtained. He had a patent for 550 acres of land on March 15th, 1673, lying on the south side of the Appomattox, in Charles City county, Va., described as extending from the lands of Robert Coleman to the Blackwater. He had another patent on April 22, 1690, for 600 acres in the same vicinity, described as on south side of the Appomattox, beginning on the westward run of Baylye's creek.*

In the period 1707-1711 there was a boundary dispute pending between the colonies of Virginia and North Carolina. A knowledge of the movements of the several Indian tribes inhabiting that section of country was needed to determine the matter; and a considerable amount of evidence was collected on this point. Amongst other depositions, that of **James Thweatt** was taken, dated November 12th, 1707. After stating that he was then 64 years of age, 'or thereabouts,' the deponent said:

"That he hath known the river now called Nottoway river for the space of eight and fourty years or more and then it was called by the name of Nottoway river and by no other name that the deponent knows or has heard.

"That when this deponent was first acquainted in those parts, the chief town of the Nottaway Indians was on the south side of the river where Major Wynn's quarter now is, about three miles above the mouth of Monksneck creek, and some few of them lived at Rowonte, which is about 4 miles

*—Charles City Co. Records, Book 6, pp. 286, 447; William and Mary College Mag., vol. xiii., pp. 118, 119.

up Monksneck creek; and two or three familyes of them at Tounatorah, which is on the north side of the river. And that they lived at some of these places, and at Cottashowrock, and there abouts, till about five or six and twenty years ago, and then they removed and settled their great town upon Atyamonsock swamp at the place now called Old Town.

"That about fourty-eight years ago the Meherin Indians lived upon Meherin river at Cowochahawkon, and some of them at Unote and some at Taurara, but how long they lived there after that time, he cannot particularly remember. And further this deponent saith not. **James Thweatt.***

"November 12, 1707.

"Sworn before us: B. Harrison, Jr., Jno. Hardyman."

VIII.—**James Thweatt, Jr.,** son of James above, was born about 1675. He married on November 24, 1701, in Henrico county, "Mrs. Judith Soane," probably, though not certainly a widow (since in those days the term "Mrs." was often applied to spinsters of mature years). In 1703 two land grants were made to him in that county, for 234 and 223 acres. He was appointed a justice of Prince George county in 1712. In April, 1715, and again in November, 1717, he and his wife, Judith, executed deeds to William Eaton. He was appointed sheriff in 1718 and 1719. In June, 1724, he and his wife executed a deed to Samuel Jordon, of Prince George.† He had five sons: John, James, Archie, Richard, and Thomas, who are written of in Slaughter's History of Bristol parish, p. 205, as "the well known brothers, of Palestine, near Petersburg."

VII.—**Richard Thweatt,** son of James above, mentioned by Slaughter as above was born about 1707. He was the father of

VI.—**Agnes Thweatt,** daughter of Richard, above. was born about 1730-35, and married **Drury Hardaway** (VI) about 1750.

---

*—Virg. Mag. History, vol. vii., p. 343.

†—**Virginia Mag. Hist.,** vol. vii., p. 355. There was also a John Thweatt, who, in 1716, married Elizabeth, daughter of William Soane, of Henrico Co. **Idem.** Also, there was a Miles Thweatt, who, in September, 1739, baptized in Bristol parish, a son, Burwell, who had been born May 4, 1733 **(Hist. Bristol Parish,** p. 132). Perhaps brothers of James above.

APPENDIX A.

"Arrival of Mr. Clay.

"The reception of this distinguished statesman at Jackson was of the most brilliant character. The immense concourse of people that thronged from every part of the State to get a sight and a shake of the hand from America's noblest son, was by far the greatest that has ever been witnessed at this place. When General Jackson was received here, it was estimated that five thousand persons were on the ground. It is the opinion of many that the number here at the reception of Mr. Clay was greater by at least a thousand. Mr. Clay was received at Vicksburg with all the manifestations that have marked his brilliant tour to the South. The Jackson Committee of Escort received Mr. Clay at the railroad depot at Vicksburg. On his way to Jackson he was greeted by the smiles and cheers of the people who had crowded at various points on the road for the purpose of getting a glimpse at the people's guest. At Bolton's and Clinton he stopped for a short time to shake hands with the throng of ladies and gentlemen who had congregated to welcome the American statesman.

"At the Jackson depot he was received by thousands of his fellow-citizens with a burst of enthusiastic feeling that has never before been witnessed at this place. An imposing procession was formed which escorted Mr. Clay to the Capitol, which was crowded with the beauty of the land. The portico and every window in front of the building was studded with ladies. After three cheers of hearty welcome from the assembled multitude, our fellow-citizen, Judge Mayes, welcomed

our distinguished guest, in the name of the people, to the seat of government. (He said):

"'Mr. Clay: Your numerous friends of Mississippi, obliterating all party lines and throwing aside all party distinctions as unworthy the occasion, through me as their organ, announce the great pleasure with which they welcome you to the Capital of the State, and tender its hospitalities.

"'The liberal spirit which prompts their warm and enthusiastic reception, is peculiarly appropriate; its object through a long, eventful life. ardently devoted to the public service, and actively, zealously and conspicuously engaged in all the subjects of national interests, which have agitated our councils for more than a third of a century; having on no occasion permitted political differences to mingle with or influence his private relations or social intercourse.

"'It is but a verification of the sacred truth, that "whatsoever measure you mete unto men, the same shall be measured to you."

"'Therefore, it is, sir, that whether we be Whigs or Democrats—advocates or opponents of a United States Bank, the Sub-treasury, or Exchequer scheme—friends or enemies of the protective policy, called the American System—for or against the doctrines of State rights, as held by that party—strict or liberal constructionists—we waive these; nay, all differences, in the proud and grateful recollection that we are **Americans,** greeting an **American citizen,** whose virtues, genius and patriotism have greatly contributed to throw a bright halo around the American name, and whose fame now constitutes, and through ages to come will continue to constitute, a rich jewel in the treasury of American character.

"'There are, sir, amongst us, those who have long well known you in the private relations of son, brother, husband, father, master, neighbor, friend.

"'The best evidence of the estimation in which your private virtues are held, are the warmth and ardor of the affection and admiration of all whose good fortune it has been to stand in those relations to you.

"'During a career at the bar, extending through many years, we have beheld you, exceeded by none in variety and

extent of professional learning; yet surpassing all in eloquence and ability with which that learning has been directed in the cause of justice and of virtue.

" 'From early youth until the present time, with but few and short intervals, we have witnessed or read of your labors in the Congress of the United States.

" 'With a zeal that never abated, an industry that knew no tiring, a consistency without change; an open, manly boldness, spurning all concealment; an independence and singleness of purpose, rejecting aid from artifice or indirection; a genius pervading and comprehending all subjects; resources adequate to every emergency; a foresight penetrating and laying bare the future, and an eloquence almost as resistless as lofty; we have found you ever foremost in the front rank of those statesmen and patriots to whose guardianship has been committed the great interests of this great nation.

" 'Regardless of place and of power, we have found you ever ready, prompt and eager to promote what you conceived to be the best interests of your country, at the sacrifice of all selfish ambition and personal elevation.

" 'On more occasions than one, when the storms of sectional or party strife, endangered the union of these States, and many feared and trembled for our safety, your hand poured oil on the angry billows and they were still.

" 'As a diplomatist, the ability and success with which you conducted your part of the negotiations terminating in the treaty of Ghent, challenge in an eminent degree the approbation and gratitude of your countrymen—and most especially of the vast population of the valley of the Mississippi. For to you, sir, do we feel ourselves particularly indebted for the stipulation respecting the navigation of the Mississippi river.

" 'When filling the most conspicuous, responsible and important department in the Cabinet of the United States, the unsurpassed, and rarely equalled, ability with which your high duties were discharged has never been questioned, even by your warmest opponents. And it is your peculiar happiness to know that, at no period of our national existence have the

financial, manufacturing and commercial interests of our country been more sound and prosperous.

"'Nor have your labors been confined to those of mere patriotism or circumscribed by geographical boundaries. Whilst your own country, and your own countrymen have ever been first and dearest in your thoughts and affections, your patriotism has enlarged itself into universal benevolence, and embraced the whole family of man.

"'No matter in what country, or by what people, the banner of civil and political liberty has been unfurled—no matter in what quarter of the globe the march of civilization has commenced—whether by those who trace the origin of their race to the Caucasian mountains, or the banks of the Niagara—Europe, Asia and Africa, Central and South America, have all been cheered, animated and invigorated by your voice, until wherever the friends of rational and chastened liberty are found, in every country and in every tongue, your name has become a familiar sound, and your labors of love a cherished reminiscence.

"'In contemplation of your private virtues and public services, we hail and we welcome you, as the exemplary citizen, the pure patriot, the illustrious statesman and the eminent philanthropist, whose name and whose fame will adorn through future ages, the brightest pages of our country's history.

"'And now, sir, permit him who addresses you, whose sincere friendship and exalted admiration have been the growth of an acquaintance of five and thirty years, to add his ardent prayer to the earnest supplications of the multitude around you, that your future days may be many, and as full of happiness as those past have been rich in benefits by you conferred on your country and your kind.'

"After Judge Mayes had concluded, Mr. Clay returned his thanks to his fellow-citizens for the cordial welcome he had rereceived, and in a speech of about an hour, characterized by bursts of native eloquence for which is so much distinguished, he kept the immense crowd riveted to the spot, eager to catch every word that fell from his lips.

"It would be impossible to give even an outline of his discourse without doing injustice to the masterly effort. He portrayed in a most striking manner the present distressed condition of the country, the causes which produced it, and the proper mode to be adopted to relieve the people and the country from the difficulties that have surrounded them. He was unwilling to enter into a discussion of the various political subjects which agitate the country. He disclaimed being a propagandist and seeking to make proselytes, he simply mingled with his fellow-citizens, exchanging friendly salutations."

APPENDIX B.

Abstract of Remarks Made by the Hon. Daniel Mayes at the Theatre in Jackson, on the 6th of September, 1845.

Fellow Citizens: Those who address the public in opposition to the repeal of the Senate's amendment to the law commonly known as the "Briscoe Bill," are peculiarly liable to be misrepresented, either by mistake or design.

It is very common to represent them as the advocates of the banks. To guard as far as I can against misunderstanding, I will now state, that from my earliest reflections on the subject, I have been opposed to the creation of banks by the States. In 1818, the Legislature of Kentucky incorporated, at one session, fifty banks. I was then a very young man, and the editor of a newspaper printed in Hopkinsville, called "The Western Hemisphere." After those charters were granted, I wrote and published, under the editorial head, article after article, endeavoring to prove that if those banks went into operation, great injury to the currency and business of the country would follow; and I tried to prove, and, as I thought, did prove, that the banks would fail, and leave the community in debt, without currency and without credit. My object was to prevent the evil by preventing the taking the stock. Banking was then a favorite policy. I made many enemies, and no friends; injured the circulation of my paper, and forty-eight of the banks went into operation. In about eighteen months forty-six of them had failed; prices had advanced and speculation had become the order of the day; currency and credit were prostrated, and the relief system, as it was called then, had its birth in Kentucky, not from this

cause alone, but from this co-operating with other causes. Mine was the only paper and I the only editor in the State that took a stand against the banks.

In January, 1839, I reached Mississippi. It was at once to me obvious, that a great revulsion in her business was at hand, which no art or statesmanship could avert, but which bad management of our public affairs might greatly increase. The forthcoming bonds, and the actions of debt and assumpsit then pending, independent of the immense indebtedness to banks and to individuals, secured by mortgages and deeds of trust, rendered the crash and ruin inevitable. The report of the bank commissioners made it obvious that so much fraud or mismanagement had entered into the conduct of most of them, that they could not and should not stand. The laws of trade and currency are as fixed and unalterable as the physical laws. The Union Bank had gone into operation, and it was clear to me that she could not relieve, but, if her course was not arrested, would greatly add to the widespread ruin then hanging over the citizens of the State. This she would do by involving the sound and solvent of the community, for the debts of those who could not be saved, and by flooding the country with a great amount of paper which would never be redeemed, and also by holding out the prospect and hope of relief to debtors, which could not be realized, and thus inducing them to hold property, then commanding high prices, until that property would command but little, in the liquidation of debts. I soon became acquainted with one of the directors, J. J. McRae, Esq., who will, I doubt not, do me the justice to say that I urged these views upon him, from time to time, with a view, if possible, to prevent the further issues of the bank, which soon thereafter took place to an immense amount. I also endeavored to prove to him that the bank would break when its first issue of post notes became due. Whether this had any effect on his course, I know not; but I have ever understood that he did oppose the course of the directory, until he saw that such was the state of the public mind, that all opposition was vain. The people wanted money of some kind, and were resolved to have it. My opinion was taken by the directory of that bank on many points. I now hold in my hand the original opinion, given on the 5th March, 1839, in

which I, by a long argument, endeavored to prove to the directory that they were acting in violation of their charter. My friend, J. O. Harrison, Esq., then of Vicksburg, I doubt not, will remember that in July, 1839, I warned some of my friends in Kentucky of the fate of the Union Bank. I presume he will remember it, as he introduced the subject to me in Lexington, stating that he was informed I had expressed the opinion that the bank would fail, when its first post notes became due."

It seemed to me that there was, from 1839 until the present day, but one safe and prudent course, and this I have always, in court and elsewhere, when I have had occasion to speak on the subject, advocated. That course was to sue out writs of **quo warranto** against the banks suspected of a violation of charter, and by an impartial investigation before the judiciary of the country, mete out, in a calm and peaceful way, justice to all, by adjudging the charters forfeited, of all such as had forfeited them, and acquitting such, if any there were, as had been honestly conducted, according to the privileges granted by the Legislature.

Although opposed to the creation of such institutions, I am of opinion that if we create them, they should have right and justice done to them. Bank directors and stockholders are still **men**, and the rights of all men should be protected from the most abject and mean, to the most exalted of the human race. I am opposed to murder and all forms of crime; but I am also opposed to dealing with criminals save by the laws of the land, before an impartial and enlightened court and jury. Let us give a fair and full trial to everything that lives and breathes.

That most, if not all, of our banks are guilty of violations of their charters, I think probable, from the evidences I have seen. I think the public interest and the public repose equally require that an investigation should take place. I think it was inexcusable not to have proceeded against many of them in 1838-9, as it was, by express law, made the duty of the bank commissioners to do. Those were my opinions, openly avowed in 1839, when those who are now foremost in the cry against the banks, were either friendly to them or silent.

If the common law mode of proceeding, by **quo warranto,** was in any respect inadequate, it was the duty of the legislature so to simplify it as to remove all difficulty in bringing the cases to a full, fair, and speedy hearing. I therefore see no objection to any legislation which has taken place, or may take place, for the single and simple purpose of producing a trial upon the question of **forfeiture,** in the most easy, simple and expeditious mode. I therefore say to all, if you desire nothing beyond a full and fair trial of the question of forfeiture, I desire it as ardently as you do. and have so desired since I first came into the State. To this extent I go zealously, heart, hand, pen and voice, with you. But, if there is a desire to impair the rights of **creditors** and let the **debtors** go free, I **(though a bank debtor)** am as decidedly opposed to this. All men should be brought to respect the laws and government of the State; and what man can respect and yield a ready and willing obedience to those laws and that government, who discovers that it does not deal out equal justice to everything that "lives and moves and has a being."

And can it be just in the eye of God or man, that we should first incorporate those banks, next borrow of them millions of money, and with it pay our debts, or vest it in property. which we or our families have enjoyed, or are now enjoying; then, by failing to pay back that which we have borrowed, cause, by our own conduct, the banks to break; and then to crown all, declare, to the holders of the notes, which we ourselves put in circulation, that they shall bear the loss! Should we be thus rewarded for a failure to comply with our promises? Say what we will, salve over the matter as we can, I doubt if there is a man in being who, when he lays his head on his pillow, in the silent watches of the night, and calmly communes with that inward monitor implanted in the bosom of us all by our Maker, for wise and benificent purposes, will not hear a voice decidedly condemning and reproving such a course of conduct.

Government and law cannot be what they should be unless they recognize and enforce that which precisely conforms to right and justice. And every well-wisher of the government, and of the family of man, when he calmly reflects, must in his heart, approve all that is just, condemn all that is unjust;

and desire that the laws should enforce the one and suppress the other.

Let us enquire whether by the rules of jurisprudence, legal and equitable, as they existed in this State before and after the passage of the statute under consideration, justice—pure justice, in the abstract—would not have been, and will not be administered to all men, so that every one who examines it will be constrained to say the law is "just and good."

It seems to me that those who entertain opinions different from mine, have taken **a mere strict legal view** of the subject, overlooking that we have another class of tribunals, not governed by harsh, strict rules of mere law, but which were created and whose end and object is, to enforce upon men conformity in their transactions, to the purest dictates of enlightened conscience, in those cases where a legal advantage is obtained which is contrary to strict justice. These courts, whose province it is to administer justice, according to the most refined sense of right and wrong, as founded in the nature of man, and the unalterable nature of pure morals, we call, for the reason that such is their province—courts of **equity** or courts of **conscience.** It is true those courts are governed by established rules, but the great fundamental principle on which all rests is, that man being a social, moral agent, is bound by the moral law. and must be made to do to and for his brother man, whatever a refined morality and pure ethics require. Therefore, where the **law,** whose rules are universal and unbending, works unjustly or inequitably between men, courts of **equity,** or **conscience** step in, and by giving such redress as the exigency of a particular case requires, effects that strict and equal justice between man and man, which a good, pure, healthy conscience dictates as intrinsically right, or as nearly so as is permitted to man, by the imperfection of his reason and other faculties. When a bank or other corporation, so abuses its franchises, or the powers conferred by the government. as to defeat the end for which it was created, none dispute that it is at all times proper, and generally necessary, that the government resume the grant, and thereby put an end to the abuses of which it is guilty. The only debatable, or, as far as I am informed, disputed ground is, whether, after the dissolution of a corporation, a Court of Equity will subject its

estate, real and personal, including the debts due it, to the payment of the debts due by it. Those who hold the negative of this question have, as far as I have heard them, relied exclusively on such pasages as the following: "At common law, upon the civil death of a corporation, all its real estate remaining unsold reverts to the grantor and his heirs; for the reversion, in such an event, is a condition annexed by the law, inasmuch as the cause of the grant has failed. The personal estate in England vests in the King; and in our own country in the people, or State, as succeeding to this right, or prerogative of the crown. The debts due to or from it are totally extinguished; so that neither the members nor directors of the corporation can recover or be charged with them in their natural capacities." Angel & Ames, 513. All writers on the law of corporations concur in this. They assign no reason why the debts to and from the corporation are totally extinguished upon its civil death or dissolution, but the reason is obvious. Upon the dissolution of a corporation, it wholly ceases to be; there can be no debt to it or from it, for it has no existence, and in the very nature of things, nothing can be due to a corporation when there is no corporation, or from a corporation when the corporation has no being. We can conceive of nothing due to or from that which has no existence.

The **franchises** of the corporation are not its **estate,** real and personal, and the debts due to and from it. **Its franchises** are the **power** to take and hold estate, real and personal, to contract and be contracted with, to sue and be sued, etc. The judgment of the Court declaring the forfeiture is in effect that those franchises or rights which have been granted by the State, shall be recalled or cease. As by the judgment of the Court it has no longer the **power** to take or **hold** estate; it looses the estate; for no other reason than that the **power** to **hold,** which the legislature gave, has been taken from it, and estate cannot be held without the power to hold. Debts to and from it, for all practical purposes, may be said to be **extinguished,** for the power to sue or be sued has ceased, and if the debts might be reduced to possession without suit, it would be of no avail, for it cannot hold property. The debts then, to and from the corporation, may well be said to be extinguished totally; for the corporation, with all its powers, are totally

extinguished. The obligation of the debtor, however, as far as he is concerned, cannot be said to be totally extinguished, for the **debtor** has not been **extinguished,** and has no tpaid the debt. The only reason why payment cannot be enforced is, that there is no one to enforce or receive payment. This is made manifest by the next paragraph in Angel & Ames, wherein it is said: "If the old corporation be revived, all its rights and responsibilities are, of course, revived with it." Judge Story, in delivering the opinion of the Supreme Court of the U. S. in Mumma vs. The Potomac Co., says, "The obligation of these contracts survives." The same language is held by other distinguished jurists, as will be seen in the progress of my remarks. I have therefore thought and said that the authors, when they use the word **extinguished,'** do not use it in the absolute and unqualified sense contended for by those who advocate the other side of the question; but only mean that the remedy is **suspended,** until some persons, natural or artificial, shall be authorized to sue. They seem to me to mean this, or to mean nothing. If they mean that the debt or duty was discharged and annihilated, to all intents and purposes, they would stand self-contradicted.

But they are writing of **corporations,** their rights and powers, and only of them as those rights and powers existed at law and affected the body itself. They were not writing of the duty and moral and equitable obligations resting on the debtors of the corporations to their suffering creditors. Whether a debt can be enforced by a corporation, when the corporation has ceased to exist, is a very different question from the question whether a creditor of that corporation, he still existing and his demand unpaid, can, in a court of conscience, compel a debtor of that corporation to pay him. when he has paid no part of his debt, and his only plea is that the corporation, whose debtor he was, has ceased to be.

It is often said to me, a corporation, like an individual, may, by its crimes, forfeit its rights. This I grant; but this is a departure from the question. The true question is, can a corporation, by its crimes, forfeit the rights of its innocent creditors, and confer on its delinquent debtors the right to withhold payment from them, in a court of conscience? This,

I hold, cannot be done, and will now proceed to prove, first, by elementary reasoning, and then from adjudged cases.

I lay down the following as propositions incontrovertible in equity jurisprudence.

1st. That equity will not permit a trust to fail for want of a trustee.

2nd. That the president and directors of a bank are trustees, holding all its real and personal estate and choses in action, in trust for the benefit of its creditors.

If I maintain these propositions, it necessarily follows that if the bank is dissolved, so that there is no trustee, equity will supply the defect, and administer relief to the **cestuis que trust,** viz: the creditors.

Now for the proof.

[The argument and authorities, in support of the foregoing propositions will appear in our next.—Ed. Southron.]

APPENDIX C.

"The composition of the few scraps contained in this book has served to amuse me occasionally in a moment of sadness. I do not preserve them under the belief that they have any portion of merit as poetry. But feeling myself an attachment to them, and hoping they may serve to remind my children of one who loves them dearly when he shall be no more with them, I determined to give them an insertion in a place more likely to save them from perishing than a detached scraps of paper. Some of them were written in early boyhood, others in middle age.

"Lexington, October 4, 1832. **Danl. Mayes.**"..

"On the 1st day of January, 1831, the earth was enveloped in snow; again on the last of that and the first of the succeeding year (1832), it was wrapped in the same fleecy mantle. In the beginning of 1831 my hopes of future happiness were high; when the year ended, they were gone. On the 1st of January, 1832, I attended church. The sermon was by the Rev. Mr. Adams, of the Methodist Episcopal church. His text was, "so teach me to number my days that I may apply my heart unto wisdom.' He awakened in my mind a train of sad reflections, and in walking home I composed the following

Lines Addressed to the Year, 1831.

Where now are the hopes that sprang up at thy dawning?
The heart-thrilling joys by fond fancy portrayed,
When we greeted with gladness thy first, fairest morning,
As it rose, in its bright, golden beauty arrayed?

How lovely thou wast, free from sorrow and sadness!
No crime then had stained thee; no friendship betrayed,
Had deformed thy fair face; then I knew naught but gladness;
Each sorrow and sigh by thy promise was stayed.

In thy robes of pure snow, as a bride for her lover,
I found thee attired; and thy face sweetly smiled.
What millions bowed to thee! Each thought to discover
Thy hands full of blessings, or sorrows beguiled.

Thy breath, ever balmy, full freighted with health;
Thy spring, ever lovely, in fragrance and flowers;
Thy summer and autumn, rich laden with wealth;
And peace, love and joy, through thy winter's cold hours.

But where are those hopes that sprang up at thy dawning?
The heart-cheering joys by fond fancy portrayed,
As we greeted with gladness thy first, fairest morning,
When it rose, in a halo of glory arrayed?

The lamp of thy life — I've beheld its expiring.
Like a dream of the night, thou hast vanished away.
How joyous thine entry! how sad thy retiring!
How short of thy promise, the close of thy day!

The white robes of snow that bedecked thy first morning,
Now changed to thy grave-clothes, encircle thy form;
And the hopes that sprang with thee, though warm at thy dawning,
Are chilled by thy frosts and dispersed by thy storm.

Yet why were we cheated? Because thou wast time.
All hopes that rest on thee, with thee pass away.
Thou now art eternity; and in thy pure clime,
No hopes shall deceive us, no joys shall decay."

Lines Written in 1827.

"How swiftly and sweetly whole years glide away
When, healthful and happy, we know naught of sorrow;
When the heart richly banquets in bliss through today,
And bounds forth to more exquisite joys on tomorrow!

As we riot and revel and feast in delight,
Time lightly flits by us; we heed not its stay.

It halts not, nor pauses; but gay in its flight,
Its pinions ne'er droop, as it speeds it away.

But when sickness and sorrow have bowed down the head,
When the sad heart is fettered by grief's galling chain,
How time falters and loiters! its wings are of lead.
And each second we suffer an age full of pain."

"Acrostics written and enclosed to two young ladies, to excite their curiosity as to who could be the author. I need not say that I did not attend balls, and had only in view amusement, in hearing speculations from them respecting the young companion who had bidden adieu to the pleasures of the dance. The lines were headed:

Lines Composed in Jevon's Ballroom, December 24, 1831.

Each fleeting moment, as it flies,
Still steals away our breath.
Life's softest zephyr is a gale
Upon our voyage to death;
Light, down the giddy dance we float.
Secure in youth's full bloom;
Each bounding step, however light,
Advances to the tomb.
No lily-tint on beauty's cheek,
No smile however bright,
Remains; but, like the meteor's blaze,
Speeds on to endless night.
O'erwhelming thought! before the morn
Her beams shall send on high,
Shrouded and stiff, and pale and cold,
Each beauteous form may lie.
Swift let me fly from scenes so vain!
Life, sure, to me was given
But to prepare to treasure up
Youth, peace and joy, in Heaven."

"To keep up the speculations excited by the foregoing, the following were written and enclosed to the same ladies:

Oh, lady! when thy form so fair
  Moved gaily down the gladsome dance,
I thought a spirit then was there,
  Ordained to hold my soul in trance.

When to the viol's cheerful tone
  I list, or to the flute's soft moan,
Fancy recalls that spirit fair,
  To float and dance upon the air.

But soon the viol's cheerful tone
  Shall cease to charm mine ear;
And soon the flute's melodious moan
  No longer I shall hear.

And fairy forms, however fair,
  Shall fade and pass away,
As did that phantom in the air.
  Before the opening day.

  Such thoughts aroused me from the trance
  Which had its birth amid the dance.

Next, with the organ's solemn tone
  I heard thy soft voice blending;
Before thy Maker's awful throne
  I saw thee humbly bending.

I've seen thee at the house of prayer;
  Oh! let me e'er behold thee there.
No fleeting joys, no earthly shrine,
  Befit a spirit pure as thine.

When to the presence of thy God
  I saw thy footsteps wending,
'The way by holiest angels trod,'
  To life immortal tending.

I **knew** what spirit **then** was there;
  My heart bowed low before it,

And proudly breathed a fervent prayer,
To live but to adore it.''

Lines Written Saturday Night, January 5th, 1833.

And is thy pure, angelic breast the seat of secret woe?
Descending from thy radiant eyes, do tears of sorrow flow?
Each sigh I heave, each prayer I breathe, though sore my own afflictions be,
Life's cheerless journey as I tread. shall rise to Heaven for thee.
I'll dedicate my every hour to prove myself thy **brother;**
Nor e'er permit one vagrant wish to wander to another.
Earth's nearest ties may all be broke, thou mayest be left alone,
Void of a heart to cherish thee, or arm to lean upon;
Ah! may kind heaven avert such fate; but should it so decree,
Nor leave of those who love thee most, on earth not one but me,
Dear **sister,** then I'll prove the truth of thy fond **brother's** love;
O'er thee I'll watch; for thee I'll pray to Him who rules above;
Removing still, with ceaseless care, each thorn from out thy way,
E'er scatter roses in thy path, and through my life's dark day,
No joy I'll know when thou art sad, no sorrow when thou'rt gay.

AN ACCOUNT IN PART

—OF THE—

FAMILY OF RIGG

—IN—

ENGLAND, SCOTLAND AND AMERICA;

WITH THE RELATED FAMILIES OF HOPE, ROW, INGLIS, AKENHEAD. QUESENSBURY AND OTHERS.

BY
EDWARD MAYES,
OF JACKSON, MISS.

THE FAMILY OF RIGG.

The known history of this family carries us back for several centuries, into the Middle Ages in Scotland. Although not a noble family, it is, in some of its lines, nearly descended from the nobility, and even from royalty. Perhaps the most notable feature of their genealogy is the descent from Robert Bruce.

For many years, at odd times, much trouble has been taken to collect authentic information about the family. As will appear from the citations of authorities made, many scores of books have been examined; histories, parish, local, biographical and general. Also much research has been made into old archives, and other original and unpublished sources of information. For instance, three distinct searches have been made in the old records at Edinburgh, by expert genealogists and antiquarians. The results of these examinations were harmonious, and are in accord with the fragmentary data supplied by the published histories and memoirs.

The name of RIGG means a *ridge*, or *mountain edge*. It is of Anglo-Saxon origin, being derived from the word *hrycg*, which also meant a ridge of land; a strip of land between two furrows. The word, as a common noun, seems, in course of time, to have come in Scotland and England to be regarded as a colloquialism; and the more eloquent talkers and writers in-

clined to abandon it for its modern equivalent of *ridge*. A curious consequence of this fact was that occasionally (as in the Life of John Livingston) the form *Ridge* was used instead of even the proper name of *Rigg*; and the same man would be mentioned under each form.

In order to understand exactly this family history, it is necessary to recall the history of Scotland itself.

To the northern part of the island of Great Britian the name of "Scotland" was not applied until the tenth century. That was originally the name of Ireland, and the inhabitants of that island, a celtic tribe, were then called Scots. The Romans called what is now Scotland, *Caledonia*, and its inhabitants, also a Celtic tribe, were called *Caledonians* or *Picti*. In the reign of Titus (79–81) the Romans penetrated into the southern part of Caledonia as far as the Firth of Tay; and that southern part became, in course of time, thoroughly Romanized. When, however, in 420, the Romans entirely abandoned Britannia, the free Picts again swept down over the Lowlands, and far into England, ravaging the country.

The Britons then called the Anglo-Saxons to their aid, and the Picts were once more confined to their Highlands. In the course of time those Anglo-Saxons, and kindred Teutonic tribes, took entire possesssion of England, penning up the Britons in and about Wales. In 449 a Saxon chieftain, Edwin, founded Edinburgh. In 503 the Scots—that is, the Celts from Ireland—crossed over to Britian and founded, under the leadership of Fergus, a Scotch kingdom along the western coast of Caledonia. Those Celts were Christians. In 836, Kenneth, a lineal descendant of Fergus, became king of the Scots, and in 843 he also became king of the Picts, transferred his residence to Forteviot in Stratherne, the old capitol of the Picts, and founded an empire composed of the Scots and Picts, which soon coalesced, and became known as *Nova Scotia*, *Scotland*.

The southern boundary of this empire was the wall of Antonius, which ran from the Forth to the Clyde; but this boundary was pressed southward, until in the reign of Malcolm II. it reached the Tweed. Meantime, the Scottish people underwent

no internal changes so great thatthe Celtic character almost disappeared in the Lowlands. Teutonic language, ideas and blood, poured in from both north and south From the south came the greatest modifying influence; first, Anglo-Saxon, then Norman. Various Anglo-Saxon provinces were incorporated with the Scoto-Pictish kingdom—Cumberland in 950, Strathclyde in 970, Lothian in 1018; and Malcolm III., who slew and succeeded Macbeth in 1057, was educated at the English court and married an English princess. Subsequently, the antipathies between the conquering Normans and the conquered Saxons produced an appreciable movement of persons of the latter nationality into southern Scotland; and again there was quite an influx of younger sons of Norman gentry, who had their own careers to carve out.

This explanation of the early movements of the people who constituted the population of the Scottish Lowlands will materially assist in the understanding of the early history of the Rigg family.

The earliest mention discovered of any person named RIGG is during the time of Edward the First (1272–1307). The Hundred Rolls, of England, show that *Robert de Ryge* then held four bovates of land in Botheby, in the county of Lincoln; also, that *Thomas de la Rigge*, in Basingstoke, in Hampshire, served on a jury. *

The calendar of Patent Rolls (English) shows, under date February 18, 1290, a protection granted to *William de Rigge*, going on pilgrimage to Jerusalem. This fact shows that he must have been a man of substance, for none but such men could have undertaken so great a journey at that time. †

On Sept. 19, 1303, Clementia, widow of John de Vesey, appointed *Andrew de Rygges* one of her attorneys for a year. She was going abroad. This appointment was dated at Kinloss in the north of Scotland. ‡

On the 4th of March 1309, and on August 1st, *Thomas de*

---

* Paton's Notes, MS. 1, p. 4.

† Paton's Notes, MS. 1, p. 1.

‡ Calendar of Patent Rolls, above; Paton's Notes, MS. 1, p. 1.

Rigges was member of a commission to deal with a question of encroachment, in the town of Lynn. §

In 1313, on the same business, both *Thomas de Rigges* and *William de Rigges* were appointed on a commission. P

The Calendarium Inquisitionum ad quod Damnum, etc., mentions *Richard Rigges* as connected with the Abbey of West Derham, in Norfolk, in the 12th year of King Edward II. (i. e., 1319). *

The Calendar of Close Rolls, 1307–37, shows a protection granted May 14, 1322, to *Richard del Rig* and some others, against molestation for not appearing before certain trustees when cited, because that on the day in question they were engaged in the king's service on the borders. †

On March 14, 1337, pardon was granted to *Robert Rig* in the county of Southampton, for his outlawry, he having failed to appear in the court of King's Bench to answer to a complaint of trespass lodged against him by William Avenel, on a certificate of Geoffrey le Scrope, Chief Justice, bearing that the said Robert had surrendered himself in Marshalsea prison. ††

On March 11, 1338, *John de Rigge* was granted an exemption for life from being put on assize or jury, or serving as mayor, coroner, escheator, or as bailiff, etc., on behalf of the king, against his will ‡

In the time of Edward III. (i. e., 1327-77), a *John de Rig* assigned a fee in the croft and Welton beside Orreby, in mortmain §

About this time one of the name became quite prominent — *Robert Rigge* became Chancellor of the University of Oxford. He was a secular priest, with leaning towards the doctrines of Wickliffe. Born before 1342, he died in 1410, and is said to have been a native of Devonshire.—A sketch of him appears in

---

§ Calendar of Patent Rolls, above; Paton's Notes, MS. 1, p. 1.

P Calendar of Patent Rolls, above; Paton's Notes, MS. 1, p. 2.

* Paton's Notes, MS. 1, p. 5.

† Paton's Notes, MS. 1, p. 6.

†† Calendar of Patent Rolls : Paton's Notes, MS 1, p. 2.

‡ Calendar of Patent Rolls ; Paton's Notes, MS 1, p. 3.

§ Abbreviate of Original Rolls, etc. : Paton's Notes, MS 1. p. 5.

Macmillan's *Dictionary of National Biography*.—On March 4th and 5th, 1381, he and others alienated certain lands in Hertfordshire and elsewhere, in mortmain, partly on behalf of foundations in Oxford. On July 8th, 1382, he, as Chancellor of the University, was appointed on a commission of the peace in the county of Oxford. On the 27th of November, 1385, the king desired him, as chancellor, to issue a proclamation against the disturbances caused by the factions of the North and South *

In March, 1378, a *Robert Rygge* (perhaps the same man) was in the suit of Sir John de la Pole, when he went abroad from England.

The foregoing instances of the name of *Rigg* in the fourteenth century are nearly all from southern parts of England, apparently. Later, they seem to have moved northward in the main. In the year 1890, the Rev. James H. Rigg. of London, perhaps at that time the most prominent Methodist clergyman in England, wrote, amongst other things, that "All the Riggs that I have known anything of, have traced their originals to Westmoreland and Cumberland, or the immediate neighborhood"; and that the Riggs, so far as I know, were not a Scotch family, but an "English border family"; and he speaks of them as a "clan"

In *Berry's Heraldic Encyclopedia* is given a coat of arms which appertained to the family of Rigge of county Cumberland. It is described as follows: Ermine on a chevron gules, three annulets or.

An interesting fact about the English branch is that an Ambrose Rigg (born about 1635, died in 1705) a native of Brampton, in Westmoreland county, but described later as being, "of Catton Place Surrey, Gentleman" was one of the twelve adadventurers who, in February, 1682 (William Penn being one) purchased the province of East Jersey from Sir George Carteret's estate. As "the twelve proprietors," later the twenty-four, they held and colonized it until 1702, when they surrendered their charter to the crown. Rigg soon parted with his right, and

---

* Calendar of Patent Rolls, and Rhymer's Foedera; Paton's Notes, MS 1, pp. 3 and 4.

seems to have taken no active part in the affairs of the province. He seems never to have visited it. He was, or became, a Quaker, and was much persecuted because of his faith; and was author of an autobiography and of several polemical works. †

Again: in Lonsdale's *Worthies of Cumberland* (London; 1875), there is a chapter devoted to Robert Rigg, the chemist, in which he says, speaking as of date 1792:

"The family of Rigg, residing on their ancestral estate at Bowstead Hill, had long been heard of as stalwart yeomen; and here Robert Rigg was born (June 3, 1792) amid circumstances calculated to infuse vigor into his physical frame. His birthplace overlooked Burgh Marsh and the tidal wave of the Solway, and commanded extensive views of the Scottish border, the vale of Esk, and the mountainous ranges of Nithsdale."

Still, while evidence does exist of an early inhabitancy of Riggs along the English border, as Mr. Rigg wrote,—Johnstone, in his *Historical Families of Dumfrieshire*, mentions the Riggs as being one of the "clans" of the nether part of Annandale, under date 1547, at which time a number of them, and many members of other clans (some six thousand in all) made submission to the king of England, whose army had invaded those parts On page 114, he speaks of them again, under date of 1562, as an established family or clan.

The great preponderance of the evidence indicates that, even if it be the case that the Riggs were of English origin and not of Scottish, yet their partial transplantation from England into Scotland must have been long before the year 1500. In the turbulent period which immediately followed upon the Norman Conquest there was, as stated already, a considerable movement of discontented Saxons into Scotland, and later, another of younger sons of Norman families, in search of fortune. It is possible that English Riggs may have formed a part of such movements; but I find no direct evidence of such a fact. The first distinct appearance of them as a localized family or clan is, as shown above, in Dumfrieshire, strongly established there and

† See Dict. Nat. Biography (Macmillan's); and also, Collections of the New Jersey Hist. Society, Vol. 1, p. 201.

in the city of Dumfries — certainly as far back as the year 1500. They were probably there at a date considerably earlier.

The city of Dumfries was of importance even prior to the eighth century. It was made a royal burgh by William the Lion prior to the year 1214. It was in the monastery of the Franciscan friars there that Robert Bruce and his companions killed the Red Comyn in 1305. In the year 1396 Robert III. confirmed to the inhabitants various valuable immunities; and in 1469 James III. gave to the corporation the monastery and revenues of the Grey Friars. There was the ancient castle of the Comyn family, of which the site, overlooking the river Nith, still retains the name of Castle-dykes.— (Lewis' *Topographical Dict. of Scotland.*)

It was from this city and its vicinity, apparently, that the Riggs, many of them, migrated; some southerly across the borders: others northerly to Edinburgh and its neighborhood,

There is now in the celebrated parish of Gretna, in Dumfrieshire, a village called RIGG; but it may not have been so called after this family, since the name, signifying a ridge, might naturally be attached to a village because of that meaning. However, it is there, and so was the family there.

There seem to *have been three principal* branches of the Scottish Riggs, during the sixteenth century: one at Dumfries, the parent; two at Edinburgh; and one, which was an off-shoot of one of the Edinburgh stems, at Carberry, fifteen miles eastwardly from Edinburgh. The Dumfries branch will first be considered, since that place was the first known home of the clan as such. It will be remembered that Johnstone writes of them as a clan established and prominent in that vicinity in 1547: but there are historical evidences of their settlement in and *about Dumfries at a considerably earlier date.*

THE DUMFRIES BRANCH.

HUGH RIG.

Hugh Rigg and John Rig appear of record as witnesses to a charter granted at Dumfries on November 15th, 1506: * and he is the ancestor of the Riggs in America, or at least of those treated of in this booklet.

On May 16, 1515, respite was granted to Hucheon Galloway in the Newton, for the slaughter of the deceased John Rig and other crimes. †

On August 31, 1527, John Rig witnessed a charter by James Douglas of Drumlanrig, granted at the church of Dunscore ‡ and on August 5, 1534, and May 18, 1537, John Rig, "burgess of Dumfries," witnessed charters granted there. ‡

Johnstone, in his history cited above, writes of a Cuthbert Rig who signed a deed of the burgh of Dumfries (evidently he was one of the council). He does not give the date of the deed, but the context shows that it was executed between years 1506 and 1550.

On November 25, 1549, one Peter Rig, burgess, and evidently of the town council, joined with the baillies of the burgh in granting a charter. § He died before 1574.

From 1560 to 1574 one James Rig is several times mentioned as a baillie burgess of Dumfries, and in various connections. ¶ He was evidently brother to Peter.

There was also a Sir John Rig Prebindar of Lincluden, * who died early in 1574. His will is of record, bearing date April 12, and confirmed (i. e., proven) on the 30th. He mentions his daughter Margaret, and his son George, a minor; also

---

* Register of the Great Seal, vol. 1. No. 3010.

† Register of the Privy Seal, vol. 5, page 55.

‡ Register of the Great Seal, vol. 2, No. 499, and No. 1418, and 2083,

§ Register of the Great Seal, vol. 3, No. 556.

¶ Exchequer Rolls, 1560 and 1567; Reg. Privy Council, vol. 1, p. 567, and vol. 14 p. 66; Edinburgh Reg. of Deeds, vol, 1.

* "Lincluden was first an abbey, founded about the year 1150, by Uthred, father of Roland, Lord of Galloway, who endowed it for nuns of the Benedictine order. This establishment which was subsequently

his brother James (evidently the baillie mentioned above); also a William Rigg and a John, sons of Peter (above) deceased; also, his own son John of the Chapell and "his bairns"; also John and David, sons natural to Robert, deceased (apparently still another brother of this group); also James and James (*sic*), sons of his brother James. He ordains his body to be buried among his forbears in the parish kirk of Dumfries. † This last provision is especially significant, since it shows conclusively that so early as 1574, the forefathers of the existing generation of Rigs were old settlers of Dumfries, and were buried there.

Of the two brothers James, named in the will of Sir John as sons of James, one became, in his turn, baillie of Dumfries. His will, dated 16th of December, 1594, was proven on the 27th of November 1602. He died in December 1594, and left a son William and a daughter Agnes. His will was proven by "James Rig, surgeon, lawful brother to the deceased" ‡ The daughter Agnes married William Trumbull, of Symontoune, Edinburghshire, and died in 1611, leaving a son William. § The older brother, James, the surgeon, married Bessie Gladstaines, and moved to Edinburgh, where he afterwards married, secondly, Margaret Morton. He had at least two sons and two daughters baptized; and he died in 1642. All of his children died early and childless, for in 1649 his younger brother, Robert, proved himself to be heir. *

George Rig, son of Sir John, became a baillie in Dumfries, and was living there so late as December 1635. His wife was named Mariota. † He died before January 9, 1638, his

---

changed by Archibald Douglas, Lord of Galloway. and made collegiate for a provost and brethren, subsisted until the Reformation, when its lands were erected into a temporal barony in favor of the Earls of Nithdale. Located about two miles west from Dumfries."—Lewis' *Topographical Dictionary of Scotland*; title, "Dumfries."

† Edinburgh Testaments, Vol. 3; Register of the Great Seal, Vol. 3, No. 2476.

‡ Edinburgh Testaments. Vol. 37; Reg. Privy Council, Vol. 5, p. 682.

§ Edinburgh Testaments, Vol. 49.

* Edinburgh Genl. Services of Heirs.

† Register of Great Seal, Vol. 8, No. 433.

two daughters Mariota and Elizabeth proving their heirship on that day. ‡

Others of these Dumfries Rigs are named in the old records, but they will be considered no further.

THE RIGGS OF CARBERRY.

This line of the family was founded by Hugh Rigg, our own direct ancester.

XII. HUGH RIGG first appeared, as shown above, as a resident of Dumfries. He and John Rigg were witnesses to a charter there on November 15, 1506. From this it would seem that he must have been born at least as far back as the year 1485. See Register of the Great Seal, Vol. 1. No. 3010.

On January 20 1534, he acted as procurator of Agnes, countess of Bothwell, and Robert, Lord Maxwell, her husband (Register, Vol. 2, No. 1466). Also, on September 23d, of that year he rendered at Edinburgh the accounts of the baillies of the burgh of Dumfries, in their name. (The Exchequer Rolls, 1264–1567, Vols. I–XIX.) Presumably, he had removed before this date to Edinburgh; for in 1537 he was certainly established there.

On the 10th of April, 1537, he witnessed a charter at Edinburgh (Register, Vol. 2, No. 1827); and another on June 13, being therein described as a "burgess of Edinburgh," (Ibid., Vol. 5, No. 2116). On the 7th of August 1537, he again rendered at Edinbrugh the accounts of the baillies of the burgh of Dumfries (Exchequer Rolls, Vols. I–XIX); and on the 22nd of August he was witness at Edinburgh to a charter granted by James Hamilton of Finnart (The Laing Charters, No. 416; also Register, etc., Vol. 2, No. 1796).

On the 20 of May 1538, he acted as the procurator of James Aikinheid in an appraisement (Register, Vol. 2, No. 2322); and on the 22nd he appeared as a member of the town council

---

‡ Genl. Services of Heirs.

(Records of the Edinb. Council, Vol. 3. p. 87). On the 17th of July following, the city was making elaborate preparations for the reception of the king, James V., on his approaching entry into the city—probably in connection with the festivities attendant on the occasion of his marriage with Mary of Lorraine, daughter of the Duke of Guise, which took place in that year—and twelve of the council were directed to array themselves in velvet gowns in honor of the occasion; four in purple, four in tawny, and four in black. Mr. Hew Rig was one of those directed to wear black. (Idem, p. 89). On the 28th of August he witnessed another charter at Edinburgh (The Laing Charters, No. 426). On the 4th of December he acted as sheriff "in that part" at an appraising, and fifty-six pounds is mentioned as the fee due him and two colleagues (Register, Vol. 2, No. 1907); on the 27th of December he witnessed another charter (Register, Vol. 2, No. 1880).

In June 1539 a lease was executed by George Durie, Archbishop of St. Andrews and Commendator of Dunfermline, to Mr. Hugh Rig, burgess of Edinburg, and JANET HOPPER, his *spouse*, of the lands of Carbarry, for nineteen years (The Laing Charters, No. 431). On October 8th he witnessed another charter at Edinburgh (Register Vol. 2, No. 2030).

On the 23d of July, 1540, he again rendered at Edinburgh the accounts of the baillies of Dumfries (Exchequer Rolls, Vols. I–XIX.)

On April 5, 1541, George Durie executed another nineteen years lease of the Carberry lands, this time to Hugh and Janet Hopper and James Rig, their son (Laing Charters, No. 453). On August 12th, he again rendered the accounts of the baillies of Dumfries (Exchequer Rolls, Vol. I–XIX).

On July 5th 1542, he again rendered the accounts of the baillies of Dumfries (Exchequer Rolls, Vols. I–XIX).

On March 12, 1542-3, the *Acta Parliamentorum Scotiæ* show that Mr. Hew Rig, advocate, appeared as prolocutor for John, sometime Lord Glamis, in the action of reduction of his forfeiture; and took instruments on the non-compearance of his antagonists (Vol. 2, p. 409); and on the 15th he acted in a simi-

lar capacity for Archibald, Earl of Angus, and his brother George Douglas, and others, in parliament (Ibid. p. 424). On May 22nd' George Durie executed another charter to Hugh and his spouse *and their heirs*, of the lands of Carberry. Precept of seizin followed on the same date; and also a discharge by Durie reciting the change in the tenure of the lands, and releasing the payment of the five pounds eight shillings yearly of "tack duty" for the seventeen years unexpired of the original lease, etc., etc. Instrument of their seisin of the said lands under the aforesaid charter follows, bearing date May 26, 1543. (Laing Charters, No. 476 to 479). On the 21st of July, a precept issued for a charter of confirmation by the crown of the foreging grant (Register of the Privy Seal); and on rhe same day the charter of confirmation was made by Queen Mary. This charter shows that Hugh got Carberry from Durie in consideration of "services rendered" and five hundred pounds paid. The lands lay "in the shire of Musselburgh, regality of Dunfermline, and sheriffdom of Edinburgh"; and that they were to be held in fee by Hugh and his wife "and their issue, whom failing, the heirs of said Hugh, of the monastery of Dumfermline, for the annual payment of forty pounds money, twelve bolls wheat and forty-eight capons, with carriage of peats," and other customary duties, (Register of the Great Seal, Vol. 2, No. 2941). Hugh appears again as an advocate in this year. On the 3rd, the 10th and the 12th of December, as one of the curators *ad lites*, he represented the children of James Colville, of Easter Wemyss, before the Scottish Parliament, in an action for the reduction of the forfeiture of the said James; and on the 12th, he also appeared on behalf of James and Robert Colville in their case, and took instruments in the cause for reducing the forfeiture of James Hamilton of Finnart (Acta Parliamentorum, Vol. 2, pages 428, 430, 433, 434, 436).

On the 17th of January, 1544, Hugh witnessed a charter by Robert Dury of that ilk (Register Vol. 2, No 3061). On the 19th of February, letters were registered from the Papal See confirming the grant of the Carberry lands to Hugh and his spouse Janet Hopper (Laing Charters, No. 485). On the 27th of November

he was one of the Lords Commissoners appointed for holding a court of Parliament (Acta Parliamentorum, Vol. 2, p. 449). On December 12th. he was appointed assessor to Patrick, Earl of Bothwell, Lord High Admiral, for holding a court and disposing of a certain maritime case (Ibid, p. 450.)

On the 27th of April 1545, Hugh acted as procurator for William Murray of Tullibardin in a case of appraising (Register, Vol. 2 ,No. 3105). On June 25th an order passed the Privy Council requiring Hew Rig and John Acheson, burgesses of Edinburgh and collectors of the taxation thereof, to appear at Linlithgow on the 12th of July following, and give in their accounts (Register of Privy Council, Vol. 1. p. 5, 6). On the 28th of September he having been appointed by Queen Mary as one of the Commissioners for Edinburgh for holding the Parliament at Linlithgow, was present; and also was present on October 1st, 2nd and 5th. (Acta Parliament. Vol. 2, p. 454 to 462).

On the 7th of March, 1546, he acted as procurator for William Carlyle, second son of Michael, Lord Carlyle, in an appraising (Register, Vol. 3, p. 75). On May 7th, he witnessed, at Dalkieth, a charter by Alexander Sinclair, brother of Sir William Sinclair, of Roslin (Idem, p. 86). On July 30th, and August 4th, 9th, 13th, 14th and 16th, he sat in the Parliament at Edinburgh; and on the 14th acted as procurator for Lord Glamis, and made a protest in his behalf (Acta Parliament. Vol. 2, pages 467 to 479).

On the 14th of March 1547, other Papal Letters were registered confirming the grant of the Carberry lands to Hugh, his spouse, and their son James (Laing Charters, No. 528).

There are no further data in respect to Hugh. He probably died about the year 1555. At all events he died before July 1st of that year; for on that day there was a precept by George Durie, commendator, etc., for infefting with the Carberry lands, in fee farm, James Rig, son "of the deceased Mr. Hugh Rig of Carberry" (Laing Charters, No. 633).

In old documents relating to that period Hugh Rig is mentioned as "a lawyer, more remakable for his large body and personal strength than for any knowledge of military affairs."

His wife survived him, and afterwards married Thomas

Ramsey. This is shown by a charter granted in Edinburgh on the 3rd of April 1589, in which mention is made of the fact that he had been agent for the burgh of Earlsferry, and had in his possession certain papers of the burgh at the time of his death, which were lost by the burning of the town of Edinburgh, except one which was afterwards found by Mr. Thomas Ramsey "who married the widow of the said Mr. Hugh" (Register, etc., Vol. 4, No. 1632).

The importance and historic interest of this estate of Carberry is shown from the fact that in the map of Scotland as it was in the sixteenth century, which appears in the *Encyclopedia Britanica*, Carberry House is laid down. It appears to be about fifteen miles directly east of Edinburgh.

"Carberry House," says Lewis, "is beautifully situated on the acclivity of Carberry Hill, upon the summit of which is still pointed out the place where Mary Queen of Scots sat while holding a conference with Kirkaldy of Grange. The mansion, which is of great antiquity, has within the last thirty years (i. e., since 1816.—E. M.) been repaired and partly modernized; it commands a fine prospect, embracing the Firth of Forth. The grounds are tastefully embellished, and enriched with groves and avenues of oak, chestnut and beech of stately and venerable growth." (*Topograpical Dic. of Scotland*; title, *Inveresk.*)

The incident alluded to in this extract is thus described by Robertson in his *History of Scotland*: After describing the murder of Darnley, and Mary's precipitate and scandalous marriage with his alleged murderer, Bothwell, who had just been whitewashed on his trial in a most barefaced manner; and after setting forth the scandal which those events created in Europe, and the reproach which the impunity of the actors brought upon Scotland; and the uprising of the nobles in considerable number to redress and punish those wrongful acts, the author says:

"The queen's army was posted to advantage on a rising ground. The confederates advanced to the attack resolutely, but slowly, and with the caution which was natural on that un-

happy field. Her troops were alarmed at their approach, and discovered no inclination to fight. Mary endeavored to animate them; she wept, she threatened, she reproached them with cowardice, but all in vain * * *. After the symptoms of fear discovered by her followers, Mary would have been inexcusable had she hazarded a battle. To have retreated in the face of an enemy who had already surrounded the hill on which she stood with a part of their cavalry, was utterly impracticable. In this situation, she was under the cruel necessity of putting herself into the hands of those subjects who had taken arms against her. She demanded an interview with Kirkaldy, a brave and generous man, who commanded an advanced body of the enemy. He, with the consent and in the name of the leaders of the party, promised that, on condition she would dismiss Bothwell from her presence, and govern the kingdom by the advice of her nobles, they would honor and obey her as their sovereign.

"During this parley, Bothwell took his last farewell of the queen, and rode off the field with a few followers. This dismal reverse happened exactly one month after that marriage which had cost him so many crimes to accomplish, and which leaves so foul a stain on Mary's memory."

Fom a letter of Mr. McLeod's (one of the genealogists who made the searches before mentioned), this extract is made:

"The Rigs, burgesses of Edinburgh, were a noble race. The owned the estate of Carberry, near Inveresk. It was on Carberry Hill that Mary Queen of Scots, bade a final adieu to Bothwell, her husband and murderer of Darnley her former husband. Quite near the same place the battle of Pinkie was fought in 1547" (four years after Hugh Rig purchased), "which proved so disastrous to the Scots."

James, son of Hugh, was the owner in 1567, when Mary was captured as told above, and he likely witnessed that dramatic event, if he did not take part in it.

The children of Hugh Rigg, so far as known, were: (1) James, of Carberry; (2) Patrick; and (3) Janet. This daughter married one Scot, as is shown by the will of William Rigg, the elder, in which she is named as his aunt, Janet Scot.

JAMES RIG, eldest son of Hugh and Janet Hopper, is first mentioned in the lease of Carberry made by George Durie to Hugh Rig on April 5, 1541. He is again mentioned in the confirmation from the Papal See, of date March 14, 1547. When his father died, some time prior to July 1, 1555, James became the owner of Carberry, according to the deeds. He married Margaret Ramsay, probably sister to Nicoll Ramsay of Cockpen, and a daughter of the celebrated family of that name. He improved Carberry by erecting a new residence on a part of the lands. On the 17th of November 1596, his son Mungo being about to marry, he made a marriage settlement on his prospective daughter-in-law, consisting of the lands of Easter and Wester Trowis and Eymetthillis, and part of the lands and mains of Carberry. * His wife died on May 30th, and himself on June 3, 1599; and their testament and inventory was proven by their children and confirmed, on October 25, 1602. The children were James, Mungo, Abraham, William, Robert, Marion, Margaret, Janet and Katherine—all of whom, except James, are named in the testamentary proceeding. † Nicoll Ramsay of Cockpen, was cautioner (bondsman).

Of Marion and Margaret, daughters of James, the Notes obtained furnish no further trace, except that Margaret married and both were living in 1615. Janet married David Hamilton of Prestonpans, and died March 24, 1605, leaving husband and children. Her testament was confirmed March 21, 1607; children not named. ‡ James was probably the oldest son of James of Carberry. He probably died, however, before November 1596, for in the marriage settlement of that date, Mungo is described as then the eldest son and heir; but on Jan. 17, 1598, his sister Katherine (Rig) Bisset executed letters procuratory in which she mentioned that James, son of James of Carberry, had at some prior date not given, granted to her an annual rent with consent of their father and mother. § There is no further in-

* The Laing Charters, No. 1321, and No. 1363.

† Edinburgh Testaments, Vol. 37.

‡ Edinburgh Testaments, Vol. 43.

§ Laing Charters, No. 1338; also see Edinburgh Reg. of Deeds, Vol. 4, year 1598.

formation as to Katherine. Robert Rig, son of James of Carberry, was a witness to the marriage settlement of November 1596. He also is named in the subsequent charter by which James gave seisin to Mungo, on June 22, 1598, as heir of the Carberry lands embraced in the marriage settlement, after Abraham, in case of failure of heirs male of Mungo; and again he himself, as baillie, gave Mungo seisin, on 29th of December, 1598, of the residue of the Carberry lands reserving a life interest to their mother. * In 1628 he witnessed a renunciation of a mortgage on Carberry made by his neice Margaret, as hereinafter described; and in 1630 he took part in a marriage settlement of his nephew, James, as also told later. † *William Rig*, also son of James of Carberry, seems to have been a soldier. When his parents' testament was proven in October, 1602, he was mentioned as being "out of the country." On October 27, 1608, "Captain William Rig" made complaint before the Privy Council "that after the late expedition to the Isles" his majesty's standard, which had been entrusted to him, was forcibly taken from him, in Glasgow, by one Andrew Home and his companions, with circumstances of aggravation; which complaint was again before the Council in November 1610. ‡ Abraham Rig, another son of James of Carberry will be considered hereafter. Meanwhile,

MUNGO RIG, before his father's death, married, shortly after November 17, 1596, Helen Cranstoune, daughter of Sir John Cranstoune of that ilk by his wife (another) Margaret Ramsay. § The marriage settlement has already been mentioned. By this wife Mungo had children James, Margaret and Agnes. Being left a widow about 1605, he married Cecil, daughter of George Ker, of Faldounside, by whom he had children, John, Alexander, Isobel and Janet. This wife survived him. He died in February 1616. His will was proven

---

* Laing Charters, Nos. 1321, 1355 and 1363.

† Edinburgh Register of Sasines for 1628; Laing Charters, No. 2057.

‡ Register of the Privy Council, Vol. 8, p. 183, p. 209, p. 260, p. 689 p. 780; also Vol. 9, p. 90.

§ Douglas' Peerage of Scotland, Vol. 1, p. 367.

April 1, 1617. It mentions his children and his wives, and sisters Marion and Margaret; and provides for his burial "within his own aisle at the kirk of Inveresk; and craves his widow to remain during her widowhood, and to keep with her all the children except John, who is to be kept at school." ** Of the children of Mungo, Janet died before her father's will was proven, for the proof describes Isobel as the "only daughter now in life procreate between the deceased and Cecil Ker his last spouse." Of Isobel there is no further trace. Agnes married John Rig, advocate, her cousin, of whom later, and left a numerous progeny. Margaret married James Skirving, fiar of Plewlands Hill. On June 26, 1628 she released an annual rent of 300 merks which her father had granted her out of Carberry; on October 23, 1644, she proved her heirship of her deceased brother James and of his daughter Helen, also deceased; but on December 21, 1644, she was herself dead, and her son William proved his heirship to her. * James Rig, oldest son of Mungo, succeeded to Carberry on his father's death, in 1616; in 1621, he was "sheriff in that part;" in 1623 he was appointed justice of the peace for the shire of Edinburgh†; in 1620 he married Elizabeth, daughter of Sir James Hamilton of Reidhouse, to whom in 1630 he granted an annual rent of 300 merks out of Carberry, in accordance with his marriage contract. ‡ In 1640 he purchased from his brother-in-law for 23,000 merks, under reversion, the lands of Monkton Hall in Edinburghshire. § He died in 1644 leaving no children, his daughter Helen dying at or about the same time; and his brothers John and Alexander, sons of Mungo, being both dead without heirs, the lands of Carberry passed by inheritance into the line of Abraham Rig younger brother of Mungo.

Abraham Rig, third son of James of Carberry (the first James)

** Edinburgh Testaments, Vol. 49.

* General Returns of services of Heirs, for 1644; Part. Reg. of Sassines of Edinburgh, for 1628.

† Laing Charters, No. 1765; also No. 1878; Reg, Privy Council, Vol. 13, p. 341.

‡ Laing Charters, No, 2057.

§ Register of Great Seal, Vol. 8, p. 959.

and next younger brother of Mungo, had died by 1644, leaving an only son, William; and this William was, by precept of *clare constat* by John, Earl of Lauderdale, on November 5th declared to be entitled to Carberry as lawful heir of his cousin James. **

WILLIAM RIG, of Carberry, son of Abraham, and fourth owner of that fine estate, married Janet Disclington, by whom he had children, John, Janet, Anne, Mary (Margaret), William and George. In September, 1648, he granted Carberry to his wife and three daughters, under certain reservations. In 1667 he and his wife sold Carberry to Sir Adam Blair, knight, for a consideration of 2,100 merks annual rent reserved; and thus this fine property was alienated after being in the family for one hundred and twenty-six years. The sale was effected by conveyances made in 1668 and 1669.* Of these reserved rents, William, in 1672, assigned 120 pounds scots per annum to one Henry Lyon, of Edinburgh, writer; and in April, 1673, he and his "eldest son and heir apparent," John, granted his wife and five younger children a rental out of those reserved.† A witness to one of the foregoing deeds (that of 1668) was a son-in-law of William's, named as George Lewans (probably, Lyons). John Rig, son of William, was a "writer," and on Nov. 25, 1688, married Isobel Maxwell. They had children: John, baptised Feb. 26, 1682; Marion, baptised Sept. 16, 1683; and Margaret, baptised May 26, 1686.‡

Berry's Heraldic Encyclopedia gives as the coat of arms of the Rigs of Carberry, the following: Argent a saltier azure between four mullets or, a crescent of the last.

3.—THE EDINBURGH BRANCH—PATRICK RIG.

So far back as 1562 another family of Rigs appears in the Edinburgh records—that of John Rig the skinner (*i. e.*, dealer in skins or furs). This John was a burgess of Edinburgh, and

---

** Laing Charters, Nos. 2347, 2348, and 2349.

* Laing Charters, Nos. 2639 and 2654.

† Laing Charters, No. 2691; Edinburgh Sassines for 1673.

‡ Edinb. Reg. of Marriages; and Edinb. Reg. of Births.

made a contract on the 14th of November, 1562, which is still of record. He died some time prior to May 16th, 1586, leaving sons, Capt. John, James (who died in 1588), David (who died about 1595), and Andro; probably also a daughter, Sara Rig, who married John Fischear, merchant, burgess of Edinburgh, and who died Aug. 25th, 1598, as shown by her will. Captain John Rig died prior to 1614, leaving a son William, who had a son of the same name.*

This branch of the family were evidently akin to the other, but exactly how does not appear. John the skinner *may* have been a son of Hugh Rig's, or a near relative, coming from Dumfries, where there were many of the name of John. However that may have been, the family left but little record, and their history is not material in this connection.

We come now to the most impressive of all these branches, and the one most directly interesting to the Riggs in America, since it is that from which they are immediately descended—that of Patrick Rigg, burgess of Edinburgh.

The family rose to such dignity and influence that it intermarried often with the oldest Scottish gentry. *Berry's Heraldic Encyclopedia* gives two distinct coats of arms appertaining to it: one,

"Argent, a chevron between three mullets sable; crest, a cock sable, combed and wattled gules"; and another was,

"Ermine, a cross flory, purple."

XI. PATRICK RIGG, younger son of Hugh Rigg of Carberry. The exact date of his birth is unknown. As already shown, his contract, of date January 19th, 1561, is of record. He must have been of age at that time, and therefore born prior to 1540; probably about 1525. He married Elizabeth Hope (variously spelled in the old records, Hope, Houpe, Howp, etc.), born about 1538. She died on the 28th of October, 1578, and he on the 2d of December following. Their children were,

---

* Edinb. Register of Deeds, vol. 1; Ditto, vol. 4, date 12 Nov., 1588; Ditto, vol. 4, date Dec. 13, 1588; Ditto, vol. 6, date 8 Nov., 1595; Ditto, vol. 15, date, 22 Aug., 1614; Edinb. Testaments, vol. 32.

William, James, John, Patrick, Andro, Christiane, Elizabeth, Marion, Janet and Katherine. Their testament is of record, and the following is an abstract of it: "The Testament Dative, and Inventory, of the goods, etc., pertaining to the deceased Patrick Rig, merchant, burgess of Edinburgh, and to the deceased Elizabeth Houpe, his spouse, who died in the month of October and December, viz, the said Patrick upon the 21 of December, 1578, and the said Elizabeth Houpe upon the 28th of October, given up by William Rig, their oldest son, in name and in behalf of James, John, Patrick, Andro, Christiane, Elizabeth, Marion, Janet and Katherine Rigs, their lawful bairns, and Executors dative decerned to their said father and mother, on the 24th of February, 1578.

"Inventory and Debts..... £. 1,566-9-4.

"William Rig, son of John Rig, was owing to the deceased the sum of £. 3.—James Rig's wife in Carberrie and James Rig himself were owing to the deceased.

"Confirmed 20 April, 1579. No cautioner named."—(Edinb. Testaments, vol. 3).

Of William, eldest son of Patrick, a full account will be given later.

JAMES, the second son. No data about him exist, except that in the will of his brother William, of date 1619 there is a legacy of 1 000 merks "to James Rig, the deceased's brother, if he be in life and come home"; from which it appears that James was a wanderer, and the fact of his life or death was then unknown.

PATRICK, the fourth son, died in August 1585, and evidently without issue; as also did

ANDRO, the fifth and youngest son; for their decease at that date is proven in a testamentary proceeding conducted by their surviving brothers and sisters on the 11th of August, 1587.*

CHRISTIANE, oldest daughter of Patrick, married William Justice, merchant burgess of Edinburgh, who survived her. She died Feb'y 3, 1615, leaving a daughter, Christiane, and two

* Edinburgh Testaments, vol. 18.

sons ; Patrick, who was absent from the country, and Gawen, who was then a minor. Christiane, the daughter, was, at the time of her mother's death, wife of John Rollock, advocate. Her will is of record.†

ELISABETH, the second daughter, married Nicol Ramsay, Laird of Cockpen. She had certain litigation before the Privy Council in 1616, about quarries.‡ In 1619, William Rig, her oldest brother, left her a legacy in his will. In 1631 she executed a bond, which is still of record.§ Cockpen was "a parish in the County of Edinburg, three miles south by west from Dalkeith. On one branch of the river (South Esk) was the ancient mansion house of Cockpen; formerly held by Mr. Baron Cockburn."**—"Ramsay's Close preceded Ramsay's Lane, and tradition assigns a picturesque old land at the corner of the lane as the ancient lodging of the Lairds of Cockpen, a branch of the Ramsays of Dalhousie."*

MARION, the third daughter of Patrick, married —— Adamson, and had a son, John. Both mother and son were dead in 1615, as appears by the will of her sister Christiane Justice.

JANET, fourth daughter of Patrick Rig, married —— Black, and had a son, Wiliiam, who is mentioned as a legatee in the will of Christiane Justice. Janet herself probably died before 1587.

KATHERINE, fifth daughter, married William Rutherford, merchant burgess of Edinburgh. He survived her. She died in July, 1616, her testamentary proceeding being confirmed on November 22, 1616 † She baptised a son, William on 28th June, 1616.‡

We now revert to John Rig, third son, who has been so far passed by because of the long history of the descendants—a most interesting branch, because they are the existing Scottish family.

---

† Edinburgh Testaments, vol. 49.

‡ Register of Privy Council, vol. 10, pp. 590 and 596.

§ Edinburgh Reg. of Deeds, vol. 27.

** Lewis' Topographical Dict. of Scotland.

* Reminiscences of Old Edinburgh: Wilson; vol. 2, p. 132.

† Edinburgh Testaments, vol. 49.

‡ Edinburgh Register of Baptisms.

JOHN, third son of Patrick, was known as the minister at Dunmichen or Dynichten. He married Helen Burns, by whom he had a son, John.* In 1603 he was Moderator of the Presbytery of Arbroath.† In 1614 he assisted in the ordination of David Williamson as a minister.‡ He is named in the will of his sister Christiane, as also is his daughter Elizabeth, legacies being left to them, of date January, 1615. Also in the will of his brother William, dated 1619, legacies were left as follows: "to his brother, Mr. John Rig, 2,000 merks, and to the said Mr. John's daughter, Agnes, who is now with the testator, 1,000 merks." He was living on May 15, 1620, on which day he released to William Rig his interest in a piece of Patrick Rig's estate; but on August 11, 1626, he was dead, as is shown by a deed of that date, in which William Rig, younger, mentioned "the deceased Mr. John Rig, minister of Dunnichten.§ Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. John, married John Livingston, of Greinhill, one of the most influential men thereabouts; she baptised a daughter, Isobel, on December 26, 1627, and a son, John, on March 21, 1634; and she died about 1698, her will being confirmed on the 15th of March of that year.* Agnes, daughter of the Rev. John, married Alexander Barbour; and Sir Thomas Hope notes, in his Diary, the death of her husband, under date of November 23, 1643.

John Rig, son of Rev. John, in his turn came to be minister at Dunmichen, and married Jean Gairden, by whom he had William and John.† The Diary of Sir Thomas Hope has this entry: "2 November, 1635, Mononday . . . Deir Mr. John Rig, deceissit. The Lord prepare me, for I am now the only and last of that stock of mankynd." His will was confirmed December 20, 1636 ‡ William, his son, was minister of Inverarity; and

---

* *East Neuk of Fife*; by Rev. W. Wood, of Elie, a work on Scottish local history, as the title indicates.

† Register Privy Council, vol. 6, p. 588.

‡ Ecclesiastical Records of the Synod of Fife, p. 76.

§ Edinb. Reg. of Deeds, vol. 20; *Idem*, vol. 24.

* Edinb. Reg. of Baptisms; Edinb. Testaments, vol. 76.

† East Neuk of Fife, chapt. 2.

‡ Edinb. Testaments, vol. 58.

John was known as "the advocate." A certain lady, Agnes Rig, who married William Buchanan, writer to the signet, and baptised a daughter Margaret, November 16, 1626, and a daughter Elspeth, December 2, 1627, was most likely, though not certainly, his daughter.

John Rig, "the advocate," son of the second Rev. John, married Agnes Rig, daughter of Mungo Rig of Carberry.* Their children were as follows: A daughter Elspeth, baptized Oct. 6, 1633; a son James, baptized February 12, 1635; a son John, baptized February 28, 1636; a son William, baptized March 14, 1637; a son named Thomas, baptized April 17, 1639.† He died before December 14, 1647, for on that day his widow received seizin of part of the lands of Monkton Hall as one of the two portioners of her deceased nephew, James of Carberry.‡ Elizabeth married, first ——— Livingston, by whom she had a son William, secondly Arthur Fermour, and thirdly Thomas Bee.§ Thomas Rig was living in 1644. By December, 1670, however, the widow and all the descendants of John, the advocate, were deceased; for a cousin, Agnes (Rig) Peter, of whom later, then received seizin, as heiress, of the lands of Monkton Hall and of Rigsland.**

William Rig, son of the second Rev. John, and minister of Inverarity, married Margaret, daughter of the Rev. Colin Campbell of Dundee, and of Margaret Hay. They had children, John, William, Thomas, Margaret, Elizabeth, Agnes and Lilias. He died before the year 1664. Of his children, Lilias married David Hallsells of Craigton in 1669; Agnes married, in 1670, James Peter of Chapel, writer to the signet, and in that year received Monkton Hall and Rigsland by the testament of her first cousin Thomas, as told above;* Elizabeth married Andrew Arnot of Dunnbarre, and had issue; Margaret married the Rev.

---

*Edinb. Genl. Services Heirs for 1644; Edinb. Sassines for 1670.

†Ebinb. Reg. Baptisms.

‡Edinb. Sassines for 1647.

§Same, for 1664.

**Same for 1670.

*Edinburgh Sassines for 1670.

Andrew Oliphant of Prinlanes, minister of Lossie; William was minister of Lundie, and died in 1663, unmarried; Thomas was a writer to the signet, and shortly before 1671 married Agnes, daughter of James Justice of East Craigtown, and they had children, William, baptized January 19, 1671; Margaret, baptized April 21, 1672, and Thomas, baptized November 10, 1674.† This last Thomas came to be known as Thomas Rig of Rigsland, advocate, (afterwards called "of Morton"), and on February 18, 1700, married Anna, daughter of William Cunningham of Enterkin, then deceased; and they baptized the following children: On December 26, 1700, a daughter Katherine, on 29th of June, 1702, a son Thomas, on 29th of September, 1708, a son James, on 18th of January, 1712, a son Colin, on 20th of March, 1713, a son Alexander, and on 25th of June, 1714, a daughter Jean;‡ he died in December, 1752, and was succeeded in Morton by his son Thomas, who in turn died in January, 1780. childless, and was succeeded by his brother James,§ whose full name was James Home Rigg, who married Mary Sinclair, and who died in 1789, without issue.

Returning now to John, oldest son of William of Inverarity. This John was also a minister; first, at Ferry Port-on Craig in 1651, then transferred to Strathmiglo, September 20 h, 1655; and in 1662 he conformed to Episcopacy to the great disgust of the Presbyterians.** In 1657 he married Jean, eldest daughter of William Murray of Drumcairn (fifth son of Andrew, first Lord Balvaird); by whom he had David, born in 1659, and who died unmarried in 1682; James, born in 1671 and who died unmarried in 1712; John, born in 1673, and who died unmarried; William, born in 1677, who succeeded; Elizabeth, born in 1662, and who married, in 1694, James, son of Robert Balfour of Balbirnie; and several other children who predeceased him. He died before October, 1683.

---

†Edinb. Reg- of Baptisms.

‡Edinb. Reg. of Marriages; Ditto of Baptisms.

§Edinb. Services of Heirs, vol. 2, pp. 35 and 39; Edinb. Testaments, vol. 125.

**Ecclesiastical Records of the Synod of Fife, pp. 176-178, 206-226.

William Rigg, son of the last (*i. e.*, of Rev. John of Strathmiglo), married in 1700, Catherine, daughter of John Craig (brother of Riccarton) by Jean Heriot, heiress of Ramornie. In 1720 he had a charter of the lands of Downfield, in King's Kettle, in which he is designated surgeon-apothecary in Cupar Fife. He died in 1740. He had a very large family, almost all of whom died in infancy or unmarried. Amongst them was a Captain Thomas Rigg, who died in 1788; and a John, born in 1713, who settled in Dundee, and married Catherine, daughter of Alexander Duncan of Ardownie, by whom he had issue; and a son James. This James Rigg, born in 1707, was a physician; he married, 1736, Anne, daughter of Moncrieff of Reidie; acquired Nether Tarvit in 1720, with other lands; died about 1784, leaving a son Patrick. This Patrick Rigg, of Downfield, married in 1778, the eldest daughter of John Dalzell, of Lingo; and by her had a son, James Home Rigg (second of this name), of Downfield and of Morton, who inherited the lands of Morton and Gamelshiels from the other James Home, his fifth cousin. The daughters of this James Home were living in a villa at Lundin Links, in Fife, when the work called "The East Neuk of Fife," (from which much of the information about this branch of the family was obtained) was published; and they called their estate "Aithernie," after the old family estate, of which mention will be frequently made hereafter.

The descendants of Patrick, except those through his oldest son, William, having been enumerated so far as they are known with certainty, the history will now be given of the eldest line.

William Rigg, the Elder.

X. William Rigg, the elder, merchant burgess of Edinburgh, was the oldest son of Patrick Rigg, by his wife Bessie Hope. He was a notable man in his day. The earliest mention of him was when he proved his father's will in 1578. The oldest of ten children, he was not far from twenty years of age, and was born not far from 1558. Prior to the year 1587 he married Catherine Row, daughter of Dr. John Row, one of the most cel-

ebrated Scotch clergymen. This lady, as will be more fully shown later, was twice descended from Robert Bruce, the patriot king of Scotland; and her descendants had, of course, a strain in them of nearly all the earlier royal blood of Europe.

William Rigg got to be a man of great wealth. The Notes obtained show no less than fifteen of the contracts made by him, from 29th of May, 1586, to 22nd of August, 1614, yet of record. Moreover, there are numerous other traces of him: In 1596, he was witness to Mungo Rig's marriage settlement; on June 18, 1595, he baptised a son Samuel; on June 30, 1596, a daughter Helen; on 20 November, 1597, a daughter Christiane; on 15 July, 1599, a daughter Lucretia; on 17 August, 1600, a son unnamed; and on 29 May, 1603, a son John; on 27 July, 1610, he purchased from Andrew Wood, for £6,000, the lands of Balbreckie and the mill thereon, in Fife (Reg. Great Seal, vol. 6, No. 538); in 1615, he purchased from David Ross other lands in Inverness (Do., vol. 6, No. 1525); and in 1617, also from Ross, still other lands in Inverness (Do., vol. 6, No. 1698). He was a merchant and a burgess; and it was he who acquired the estate of Morton, two miles out of Edinburgh, which formed the family residence, and gave title to a branch of his descendants, as has been already shown, for near two hundred years.

In "The Historie of the Kirk of Scotland," written about 1634 (and printed in 1842) by Mr. John Row, Minister of Carnock (a copy of which work is in my library—E. M.), on page 469, William Rig is mentioned as follows:

The writer, in an appendix to his history, is giving an autobiographical sketch. He tells of his early training at the hands of his father, Dr. John Row; of the establishment of a certain new college at Edinburgh; of his own attendance thereat for one year through the kindness of an uncle, the Laird of Balfour; of reverses and disappointments, growing out of an epidemic of the plague in Edinburgh, and also some business complications of his uncle's, which threatened to deprive him of his collegiate education, through want of means to prosecute it. He then says, speaking of himself, in the third person: "He againe wes cast into a *non-entrie*, and knew not what hand to turne him

too, but being most desirous to prosecute his studies at the Colledge, he sought to the God in whom his father trusted, and on whose kynd Providence he wes caste. By him he wes directed to his brother-in law, William Rig, who then wes married to his sister, Catherine Row, who wes one of the most religious and wise matrons then in Edinburgh; so his brother, William Rig, tooke him to his own house, and intertained him the other three yeares he wes at the Colledge, and so he passed his course, and wes laureat, 1590."

William Rig is also mentioned in Calderwood's "Historie of the Kirk of Scotland," vol. VI, p. 819 —Writing the history of the year 1608, the author says: "The King was much offended with the town of Edinburgh for choosing of Chancellor Setoun to be their proveist, and continuing him in that office, which he had keeped diverse yeares before, howbeit the King had writtin to the counsell of the toun to elect their proveist and bailiffes of their owne neighbours, trafficquers, for the better preserving of their owne liberties, comforme to the act of Parliament, and that as they would answere upon their perrell. Whereupon the bailiffes and counsell of Edinburgh, to pacifie the King, elected Sir John Arnot, one of their fellow burgesses, treasurer-deput under the Erle of Dumbar, and his speciall favourite, upon the 15th of November, to be their proveist, notwithstanding of a former electioun, but with the Chancellor's good will and consent. Sir Johne Arnot accepted the office in presence of the Chancellor. The Chancellor demitted, after he had been proveist for the space of nyne yeares. Thereafter the toun of Edinburgh sent up to court William Rig and James Nisbit to pacifie his Majestie."

On the 13th of December, 1615, the pious and wise matron Catherine Row (in Scotland, at that time, married women retained their maiden names), died. Her husband seems to have been generous to her in money affairs, since her estate was valued at £92,364-5-10. Yet, as we shall see hereafter, her father died poor, leaving but little provision for his children; so that the money could not have come from him. Her testament is of record yet (Edinb. Testaments, vol. 50). William Rigg

afterwards married, in his old age, Margaret Donaldson. About the year 1618 he subscribed 625 merks, toward a considerably larger fund which was being raised amongst the citizens of Edinburgh, for the purpose of endowing a chair of Divinity in the University. The sum so subscribed was paid over by his heirs (after his death), on the 23d of August, 1620. Dalsel's *Hist. of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. 2, p. 75. He died, in July, 1619, leaving no children by the second wife. Those of the first were: William (only son), Helen, Christiane and Alison. His will is of record, and the following is an abstract of it:

"Testament testamentary and Inventory of the goods, etc., pertaining to the deceased William Rig, elder, merchant burgess of Edinburgh, who died upon the —— day of July, 1619 given up by himself upon the 23d day of March and the 27th day of May, respectively, 1619, as concerning the nomination of executors, etc., and given up partly by William Rig, younger, his son, as concerning the Inventory; which William Rig is nominated only executor to his said father;

"Free Gear (*i. e.*, personal property)..... £.80,480–10–9.

"There was owing by the deceased at the time of his death to Helene Rig, his daughter, and Mr. George Haliburtone, her spouse, conform to his bond, 3,000 merks. Item to Mr. Alexander Pierson and Christian Rig, his spouse, of Tocher (dowry) to be paid at Whitsunday, 1619, 2.000 merks: Item, more to the said Alexander and Christiane the sum of 3,000 merks, conform to his bond."—(Edinb. Testaments, vol. 50).

In his will, dated at Edinburgh as above, the deceased nominates his only son, William, to be his only executor, and disposes to him his whole goods and gear, as well lands, rents, heritages and moveables, that he may possess and enjoy the same, excepting the legacies following, viz.. He ordains his said son, with advice of Mr. Thomas Nicolson and Mr. Thomas Hope (a relative of his mother's) to invest 30,000 merks as a provision for the widow, with reservation to the heirs general, in addition to "the tenement which the deceased conquest (*i. e.*, purchased) from John Harrat's heirs, wherein the said Margaret Donaldson is already infeft. And also, 300 merks to buy books

to be put in the library of the College of Edinburg" (at which his brother in-law, John Row, had been educated). "Item, to his daughter Helene and Mr. George Haliburtone, her spouse, conforme to his bond, 3,000 merks, and that for renouncing in deceased's favor and that of his heirs, the benefit which they might have had as that of executors to the deceased's late spouse, the said Helene Rig's mother. Item, to the said Helene and her said spouse, other 3,000 merks, to be laid upon land for their liferent use, and to the bairn gotten betwixt them in fee, which failing to revert as above. Item, leaves to his daughter Christiane and Mr. Alexander Piersone, her spouse, 2,500 merks to be employed as above. Item, he leaves to Mary Row, only sister to his deceased spouse, 'guid Katherine,' to be paid to her the term after his decease, the sum of 400 merks. Item, as to his daughter Anisone and Mr. John Skeine, her spouse, the deceased declares he leaves nothing, inasmuch as they received their portion conform to discharge granted by them to the deceased, registered in Mr. Alexander Gibsone's books on the 18th of March, 1618. Item, leaves to his 'oy' (*i.e.*, his grandchild), John Skene, their son, L 1.000. Item, to Helene Skene, their oldest daughter, 600 merks. Item, to their daughter Katherine, the said William Rig's late wife's god-daughter, 400 merks. Item, he ordains his said executor to give to James Rig, the deceased's brother, if he be in life and come home, 1,000 merks. Item, the deceased leaves to his brother, Mr. John Rig 2,000 merks; and to the said Mr. John's daughter Agnes, who is now with the deceased, 1,000 merks. Item, the deceased leaves to his sister, Elizabeth Rig, the sum of 1,000 merks. Item, to Margaret Lowis, the deceased's god-daughter, daughter of Alexander Lowis, L.100. Item, to Janet Lowis, her sister, L.40 Item, the deceased ordains his executor to give to Janet Scot, the deceased's aunt 51 merks yearly during her lifetime. Item, he leaves to Agnes Low, her daughter, L.30. Item, to John Row, son of Mr. William Row, L.100. Item, the deceased ordains his son to take 10 000 merks of the readiest of the goods, and infieft himself and his spouse Sara in liferent, and their son Patrick in fee and heritage therein. Subscribed at Edinburgh,

23rd of March, 1610. Mr. John Skene, one of the ordinary clerks of session, is cautioner.

Manifestly, a most successful, thrifty, generous and substantial old gentleman.

The husband of Helen Haliburton was an advocate. They baptized a son William on February 15, 1614; a son George. May 15, 1615; a second son George on April 3, 1617; and a son James, on May 13, 1619.*

Christine Piersone died. a widow, in 1659, leaving children, John, Catherine, Margaret, (baptized in August, 1623) and Elizabeth, who was baptized in January, 1630. Her husband was an advocate, and seems to have been popular with the family, for his name was given to some of the children. Her will remains of record.†

The husband of Alison was a writer to the signet, and clerk of the bills, and was a son of Sir John Skene, of Curriehill, knight, clerk-register; and he is designated "of Halyards." The father, Sir John, is frequently mentioned in Calderwood's History of the Kirk of Scotland, and in Row's History; and was the collector and editor of "the Ancient Laws of Scotland," which he published under that title, in 1609; also author of a treatise *De Verborum Significatione*.‡ Of John Skene himself, Row says, on page 326, speaking of his own imprisonment, that "after some few years' confinyng, by the moyen of the Earl of Morton, his pupill, and Mr. John Skene, clerk of the bills and suspensions, whose wife was Mr. Johne Row. his neece, and to whom, as a verie liberall and obliging man, all the Bishops were much obliged, he was liberat of his confinyng," etc. Alison Skene had numerous children, three of whom are mentioned in her father's will, above—Helen, the oldest daughter, was married to Sir John Coupar of Gogar, with issue. Katherine married William Murray, brother of Lord Elibank. Jean, in 1631, married Sir Alexander Belches, of Tofts, one of the senators of

---

*Edinburgh Register of Baptisms.

†Ditto; also Edinb. Testaments, vol. 71.

‡Row's History of the Kirk of Scotland, p. 341.

the college of justice. Anna was baptized January 30, 1614. Alison was baptized November 30, 1615. Elizabeth was baptized October 11. 621. James was baptized September 17, 1622. Margaret was married to William Fairley of Bruntsfield. Alexander was baptized May 20, 1625. Janet was baptized August 17, 1626, and married Major John Home, of Carrollside, by whom the had a daughter, Janet, who, in turn, married, first, ——— Home, of Eccles, and secondly, William Row. Alison Skene had also a son, John, who was baptized November 28, 1609; he emigrated to West Jersey about 1682, where he acquired large estates, and was, in 1685, appointed deputy governor of the province, dying there in December, 1687, and leaving a widow, Helena, and a son, Alexander, who became Secretary of the Isle of Barbadoes, in 1700 and died in 1742.*

Lucretia, daughter of William Rig, the elder, married Alexander Barbour, writer to the signet; baptized a son Alexander on October 11, 1618, and a son John, on February 4, 1627.

We come now to the most interesting portion of the family history, that of

William Rigg of Aithernie.

IX.—William Rigg, the younger. His birthday is not known; but since McLeod's Notes show a contract made by the father on September 29, 1597, "as lawful administrator for William Rig, his son and apparent heir," he must have been then a minor; consequently, born not earlier than 1576, and since he himself baptized his first son in 1613, he was probably born about 1585 to 1590 On the 1st of May, 1617, he made a contract with his aunt's husband John Skene. Some time about this period, probably in 1612, he married Sara Inglis, heiress of Aithernie and Letham. He is next to be heard of in history.

Row, in his "Historie of the Kirk of Scotland," says, on p.

---

*East Neuk of Fife, ch. 2; Edinb. Reg. of Baptisms; Register of the Great Seal, vol. 7, No. 1766, New Jersey Archives, vol. 21, pages 140, 354, 162; Memorials of the Family of Row, Edinb. 1828; Smith's Hist. of New Jersey, p. 190, edit. 1890.

325: "About this time, Mr. David Lindesay, minister at Dundie, now Doctor Lindesay, was made Bishop of Brechin. In winter, an High Commission sat in St. Androes, and Mr. John Row, minister at Carnock, within the Presbyterie of Dunfermline" (the writer) "was summoned to appeare before them. But he not being well of health, and not able to travel in winter, and resolving to confess all that was libelled against him, viz., that he continually did preach against prelacy as an anti-christian office, against the five Articles anacted at Perth in 1618, and against the rest of the acts of the six pretended nul assemblies, did send Mr. John Row, his son, then schoolmaster in Kirkcaldie, to the High Commission, to present his excuse; also desired William Rig of Aithernie, his nephew, to go to St. Androes, and speak to the Bishop, for it was known that the Bishop, a politic man, would have done more for the request of one honest man" (this term was used by the Scotch Presbyterians of that day, to designate such as were of their way of thinking), "such as William Rig was, nor for an hundred conforme men, who were his own already. But it may be that Aithernie marred the suit; for neither his uncle nor he would ever style a bishop 'Lord,' looking on that text, 'Ye shall not be called gracious lords or benefactors' So his (the writer's) censure was confining within his own parish."

This was in the year 1619. On page 476 of the same book, further account is given of this same adventure. "But the Bishop (Spottiswood) little regarded William Rig or any other that spoke for him" (the minister). "Richard Christie" (servant of Mr. Peter Bruce, a supporter of the minister's), "after sundry arguments, came on with one very weighty argument, saying, 'the coals in your moors are very evil, and my master hath very many good coals; send up a vessel every year to Culros, and I shall see her laden with good coals.' This prevailed, yet for the fashion he was by the High Commission confined to his own congregation."

We have now reached the period when William Rigg takes place in ecclesiastical history. He was locally conspicuous in the struggle between Presbyterianism and Episcopacy. In order to understand his position it is necessary to glance at some of

the conditions peculiar to the Reformation in Scotland.

"The stranger in a Scots Presbyterian church generally remarks that the form of service seems to have no other ruling principle save that of antagonism to the forms of all the churches which have adhered, in whole or in part, to the traditional ceremonial of the Church of the Middle Ages. While in these the suppliant humbly kneels in prayer, in Scotland he stands straight up, with his head erect, as if he would look the Giver of All in the face, and demand what he prays for. Then in the celebration of the Sacrament of the Atonement, while in other churches the ceremonies are adjusted so that the communicant shall appear as a suppliant humbly receiving the great boon at the hands of those authorized to administer it; in the ministration of the Lord's table in Scotland, scrupulous care seems to have been taken to give the whole, as much as possible, the aspect of a miscellaneous party assembled for convivial enjoyment around a hospitable board.

"But whatever aspect they may have at the present day, those things had, for nearly a century after the Reformation, a more potent cause than mere logical antagonism. It was the opinion of the Calvanistic Reformers—whether a right or wrong opinion—that the Church of Rome had carried symbolism so far as to break that commandment which saith, 'Thou shalt not make to thyself any graven image, nor the likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or in the earth beneath, or in the water under the earth: thou shalt not bow down to them nor worship them.' Two prominent forms of idolatry were selected for denunciation. The one was addressed in the Sacrament of the Atonement to the elements as having become sacred by transubstantiation. The other was the seeking the intervention of saints or other holy powers through homage or worship directly addressed to their likenesses in painting or sculpture. It was against the visible and tangible tokens of these idolatries that the preachers directed the destructive energies of their hearers, when so much mischief was done in the churches that their admonitions were afterwards interpreted as if they had called for the destruction of the churches themselves. The spirit of the

new order was to count the humiliating gestures of the body as made by man to express subservience to his fellow-mortal, or adoration of the work of human hands. It professed that the invisible adoration of the heart is the proper offering to the Deity, who, seeing in secret, knows that it exists, without looking to an external symbol. Hence, these churches resolved to sweep away, not only the mere material objects of idolatry, but also the forms in which that idolatry was practiced. * * * *

"At the same time, those who represented the extirpators of idolatry, root and branch, could render practical reasons respecting their policy. The puritans of England told them that the revival of symbolization there was producing something like the old Popish idolatry among the English peasantry. In Scotland, wherever there existed remnants of the old apparatus of idolatry, zealots would be found prowling about them in adoration. In corners of the vast ruins of Elgin Cathedral, groups of Popish worshippers assembled secretly, down to the reign of Queen Anne. In remote places where there were shrines, crosses or holy founts, the people, though nominally Protestant, were found practicing some traditional remnant of the old idolatry. Crosses, shrines, and other artificial attractions to such irregularities, might be removed, but there remained the most significant of all the old centers of devotion—the consecrated wells—the springs of water from which, according to the traditions of the Old Church, the earliest missionaries made the first converts to Christianity. The documents of the Church of Scotland for centuries are filled with these causes of backsliding. Though everything had been done, from the Reformation downward, to obliterate the memory of the local saints, the shrine or the well retained its spell, though the peculiar saint whose virtue attached to it was entirely forgotten." (Hist. of Scotland, Burton, vol. vi, pp. 48–51 ; John H. Burton, D. C. L., the Historiographer–Royal for Scotland.)

In this state of affairs, and during such a condition of the religious sentiment, the king, James VI of Scotland (at that time also James I of England), returned to Scotland in May, 1616, on a visit to his native country, remaining there until August of the year following. This visit was chiefly occupied

in royal receptions and pageants, but it produced some important and troublesome results.

"The king indulged himself in a pleasant fancy for having his chapel decorated for his reception with pictures and wooden sculpture. The zealous Presbyterians, who in Edinburg were growing in numbers and zeal, heard a rumor of this scheme, and it filled them with horrible suspicions. * * * In England the old parish church, with all its decorations scarcely touched by the Reformation, gave a local harmony and natural association with the past to whatever remnants of the old ceremonial of the church were permitted to cluster round it. The very wealth of the Establishment, keeping men contented, and all things in comfortable order, had a soothing and conservative tendency. In Scotland the temples had been desolated, and those expected to serve in them were doomed to penury. All things were cast loose, and the ardent spirits clung to the doctrines and systems that fed their enthusiasm. All this was now sixty years old; so that what in England was the old accustomed order, became in Scotland flagrant innovation."

It was inevitable, therefore, that the scheme of the king should arouse numerous opponents. "Their activity, earnestness and bitterness communicated a sensation of alarm to James' own particular friends in the hierarchy, and they ventured to remonstrate against his project. The end was, that the dreaded cargo of pictures and graven images did not arrive from London. In a letter thoroughly his own, the king set forth at great length, that this result must not be attributed to any homage to the superior wisdom of his advisers, or any failure of resolution to give effect to his royal determination, but was the effect of mere accidental interruption to the completion of his decorations. * * * In the chapel which he had prepared for himself in Holyrood House, the king had service in which all the ceremonials of the English Church were scrupulously repeated. This was done, not quietly and privately as if for the satisfaction of his own conscience, but with great bravado and display, as if he called all men to admire what was so pleasing to himself. Such things caused much murmuring and foreboding among the zealous on the other side, who saw, and with too

much reason, in the ceremonials of the Chapel Royal, the model to which all were to be subdued by the new temporal head of the church." (Same History, pages 42, 50, 46)

From these events, it is probable that when the king left Scotland in August 1617, he departed in not the best of humors with his good subjects, the Presbyterian party. Matters still further thickened. In a General Assembly of the Church, held at Perth in the summer of 1618, the celebrated "five Articles" were passed by a majority of 86 to 41. The first and most important of these articles enjoined, that at the sacrament of the atonement the communicant should receive the elements kneeling; the second permitted communion in private houses in case of sickness; the third allowed private baptism on necessary cause (the innovation in the two latter articles being to make communion and baptism no longer a public act in which the congregation of the faithful partook, but a transaction apart between priest and layman); the fourth enjoined the confirmation by the Bishop of children eight years old; and the fifth required that there be abstinence from business, and attendance on worship, on Christmas Day, Good Friday, Easter Day, Ascension Day, and Whitsunday.

These articles were obnoxious to their opponents, not only because of their "idolatrous" tendencies, as already explained, but also because (the defeated party maintained) the meeting which passed them "was not a free and fair Assembly; and that all manner of sinister influences were used to secure the passing of the Articles. No doubt it was so. The Bishops and the officers of the Crown in Scotland claimed credit for their services on the occasion. It was then as it ever is in political interests—whatever influences the condition of the times permits to be used, were used." (Same History, pages 47, 48, 52.)

In an old chronicle (Domestic Annals of Scotland; Chambers; Vol. 1, page 508; Edinburgh) are found the following passages, the first being under date of March 23, 1619: "It had been a custom of the congregations in Edinburgh to hold a meeting on the Tuesday before the administration of the communion. 'If anything was amiss in the lives, doctrines, or any part of the office of their pastors, every man had liberty to show

wherein they were offended; and if anything was found amiss, the pastors promised to amend it. If they had anything likewise to object against the congregation, it was likewise heard, and amendment was promised. If there was any variance among neighbors, pains were taken to make reconciliation, so that both pastors and people might communicate in love at the banquet of love.' On the present occasion, the affair had much the character of a modern public meeting, and the people stood boldly up to their pastors, arguing against the innovations of worship now about to be introduced, particularly kneeling at the sacrament." In this discussion, WILLIAM RIGG took an active part. See Calderwood's History of the Kirk; Vol. VII, page 356, for a full account. To resume with the Annals:

"This day (March 28, 1819), being Easter Sunday, the communion was administered in the Edinburgh Churches, for the first time after it had been arranged that the people should kneel on receiving the elements. There being a general disrelish for this new form, the people left the town in great numbers to communicate at country churches where the order was not yet appointed. Of those who attended in town, few willingly knelt besides government officials and pauper dependents on the church contributions. 'Some were dashed and kneeled, but with shedding of tears for grief.' In some churches throughout the country, certain persons told the ministers: 'The dangers, if any be, light upon your soul, not on ours!' Some departed, 'beseeking God to judge between them and the minister.'"

"On the next Easter Sunday (that of 1620), the like disinclination to kneeling was shewn. In the College Kirk, where sixteen hundred people communicated, only about twenty kneeled, and it was thought that none would have done so 'if they had not brought the poor out of the hospital, to begin, and give a good example'. These 'being aged, poor and ignorant persons, durst not refuse'; yet even of them, some, 'when they were kneeling, knocked on their breasts, and lifted up their hands and eyes.'

"While the officers of the government and many others cordially joined in the new arrangements, the bulk of the peo

ple revolted from them. Whenever they heard of a church in the country where they might be allowed to communicate sitting, they resorted to it in great numbers; 'whereupon the auditory of the kirks of Edinburg became rare and thin."

Among these stirring scenes moved William Rigg, called in the histories "Rigg of Aitherny." He is described as "an earnest Christian of the evangelical type" He was "much exercised in spirit, and of great experience in the ways of God." John Livingstone, himself a very celebrated clergyman of the Scottish Kirk, who was connected with him by marriage, and who wrote an autobiography which has been published in later years, on page 342, says of him :

"William Ridge" (spelled correctly, Rigg, on p. 139) "of Adderny, one much exercised in spirit and experienced in the ways of God, and most zealous in the cause of God. When he was baillie of Edinburgh he gave great evidence that he had the spirit of a magistrate beyond many, being a terror to evildoers. He was for some time prisoner in Blackness, because he would not communicat kneeling at the communion after they had brought it in at Edinburgh, although he himself might have been allowed to sitt. The Lady Culross wrote to him in prison, that the darkness of Blackness was not the blackness of darkness. He had a good patrimony, and employed it well. I have heard Ridge (Rigg) of Carberry say, 'I have been on his accounts, and to my certain knowledge he spends yearly more on pious uses than all my estate is worth, and mine will be towards eight or nine thousand marks by year'; and yet he would hardly ever give anything at all to the vagrant sturdie beggars. I have been often with him at privat meetings when he hath prayed, and observed that alwayes he began with most heavie and bitter complaints, and confessions deeper than any that I have heard ; but sundry times before he ended he expressed unspeakable assurance and joy and thanksgiving, but sometimes also he continued and ended just as he begun. Once when he had attained to great liberty and access in prayer, some (for trying if he could be put off his byass,) motioned that immediately he should be put to pray again : and being much

urged by those that were present, he condescended, but began just in his usual discouraged strain. I heard him say, when, after the reformation of 1638, something seemed to appear in the General Assembly as tending to restrain privat meetings of Christians for mutual edification, 'I think,' saith he, 'that the Church of Scotland is just like Adam in Paradise, that cannot continue in integrity a moment.'"

The story is thus continued in the Domestic Annals: "While the struggle was going on between the Episcopalian and Presbyterian principles, there was a small group of Edinburgh citizens, including the booksellers, Cathkin and Lawson, who took a lead in opposing the new practices, and standing up against the dictates of the High Commission. Deeply impressed with evangelical doctrine, and viewing all ceremonies as tending to the corruption of pure religion, they were disposed to venture a good way in the course they entered upon. Their wranglings in the kirk session against the ministers of the court fashion, and their earnest private exercises, were fully known to the king, but he bore with them until they began to lend countenance and active help to the few refractory ministers who fell under the ban of the Bishops." Then the Crown began to move.

"In the Register of the Privy Council, 24th Feb. 1620 (folio 226), there is an Act containing a 'Charge against WILLIAM RIGG, and others, to confine themselves within certain bounds'; but, like several portions of this volume of Acts, it is nearly illegible, having been mutilated and injured by damp." (Original Letters of the Bannatyne Club, vol. 2, p. 624, note 1.)

"Upon the penult of Marche, the king gave out this direction following, to confine certane citizens of Edinburgh, for incouraging troubled ministers when they were cited before the Hie Commission:—'Right trustie and welbeloved Cousines and Counselours, and right trustie and welbeloved Counselours, we greete you weill. Whereas diverse of our burgh of Edinburgh, out of a peevish humor, in contempt of good order, leave their ordinarie pastors, and following deprived or silenced ministers, receive of them the Sacrament: We have conceived a most just

indignation against them, which we deferre to expresse by anie exemplarie punishment, hoping that at this approaching Easter their conformitie to good order sall testafie their amendment. But in respect there be some who continuallie assist the refractorie ministers in all their disobedience, and spare not to countenance them in all their publict doings, yea, even to accompanie them, when they are cited before our Hie Commission, thereby incouraging them to stand out against the orders of the Church, in contempt of our authorite: And although we have so long had patience with them, as to expect that by lenitie and admonition they might have been reclaimed from their rebellious humor, and reduced to an obedient and dutiful kind of behaviour: Yit seeing lenitie prevails not with them, we have thought good by thir presents to will you to remove the specials of these evill weeds out of that field; and send WILLIAM RIGGE, merchant, and James Cathkine, unto Caithness; Richard Lawsone unto Aberdeene; Robert Meiklejohne, skinner, to Dunkeld; John Mein to Wigtoun, in Galloway; and Thomas Inglis, skinner, to Montrose: Willing and commanding everie one of them not to exceede the bounds to him limited, without our special warrand, under all highest paine and punishment. The like course we intend to take with others who sall be found culpable of the like offence. And not doubting of your care in the premisses, we bid you fairweill.

"Given at our Mannour of Theobalds, the penult of Marche, 1620.'" (Calderwood's Hist. Kirk of Scotland, vol. VII, pp. 433-4.)

While that formidable document was on its way to Edinburgh this interesting incident occurred: "Upon Thursday, the sixt of Aprile, Mr. Patrik Galloway" (the King's own minister) "desired that the elders and deacons conveened in session might be asked what wold be their part in the celebration of the Communion at Easter. WILLIAM RIGGE, one of the cheefe citizens of Edinburgh, being asked, he asked againe, Efter what manner they would administer it? Mr. Thomas Sydserfe, moderator, answeired, 'Efter what manner ye please to receive it; sitting, standing or kneeling." 'Then,' said WILLIAM RIGGE, 'for

avoiding of confusion, let a tyme and place be appointed for those to whom ye will give it sitting.' Mr. Thomas cried out, 'O thou monstrous schismaticke! can thou tell what a schismaticke is? I will examine thee presentlie.' WILLIAM RIGGE riseth, and answeireth coldlie, 'I am readie to be examined.' 'O,' said Mr. Thomas, 'thou art an ignorant; thou art not worthie of the place thou art in.' William answeired. 'It is true, Sir, I am not worthie of my place; and I trow, Sir, ye think yourself unworthie of your place also.' Mr. Thomas was so ashamed of his own misbehaviour, pride, and bitterness, which had carried him so farre out of the way, that he craved God and him mercie upon the Satterday efter, and promised never to doe the like." (Calderwood, Vol. VII, pp. 436, 437)

Thirteen days later, "'On the 19th, April, the following notice occurs in a minute transmitted by the Secretary: Decimo Nono Aprilis, 1620. The directioun sent doun from his Majestie touching the confyneing of William Rig, James Cathkine, and otheris, wes this day presentit to the Counsell, and allowit, and accordinglie charges ar direct aganes them for entrie in thair wairds." (Original Letters; Bannatyne Club; Vol. 2, p. 624, note 1). However, "when that mattter was proponed in counsel, Chancellour Setoun said, they could not proceede so inorderlie, for it was neither reasonable nor according to law. The president, Secretarie Hamiltoun, answeired, 'My Lord, ye must not frame the question so. It must be framed in these termes, Whether will ye give obedience to the king's letter or not? So the act was made without contradiction.—John Inglis escaped because he was named Thomas in the king's letter." (Calderwood, Vol. VII, p. 439). "Upon the 25th of Aprile, WILLIAM RIGGE, James Cathkine, Johne Meine, and Robert Meiklejohne, skinner, burgesses of Edinburgh, were charged to enter in their severall wairds or confinement, without citation, tryall, or conviction before the counsell, onlie for satisfaction to his Majestie." (Domestic Annals, Vol. I, p. 512). The summons is set forth by Calderwood, *in extenso*, it being in the exact terms of the king's letter already copied, and gives fifteen days within which to reach the place of confinement.

"This was a great stretch of power in a country professedly under regular laws; and even the state officers felt it to be so. After some dealings, in the course of which the clergy were eager to negative a suspicion of their having sent the names of the men to the king, the Archbishop of St. Andrews said he would intercede for them." (Domestic Annals, Vol. 1, p. 512); and in the meantime, the Council by its order of 10th of May (which is set forth in length on page 625 of Vol. 2 of the "Original Letters") suspended the execution of the summons. at the Archbishop's request.

"In the beginning of Julie, the Bishope of St. Androes wrote to the counsel, shewing that some of the citizens of Edinburgh, who were charged to enter into their wairds, had given him thanks for interceeding for them at the king's hands, but that WILLIAM RIG and Johne Meine came not to him to acknowledge; whereupon they were charged upon the thrid of Julie, WILLIAM RIG to goe to Caithness, within threttie days, there to keepe confinement, and John Meine to the West Countrie, within twentie days. They went to the Bishope and conferred with him, but he gatt noe vantage of them. He wrote the counsel in their favours, and so they were noe further persued." (Calderwood, Vol. VII, p. 447). Remember that this was the same dignitary whom Rigg had visited only the year before in the interest of Mr. John Row, his maternal uncle; and one cannot but wonder whether, on this occasion, he remembered and profited by the object lesson administered by shrewd Richard Christie in the "weighty" argument drawn from his master's "good coals". "And so they were no further persued"; that is, not yet. Later, perhaps.

On Sunday, the 15th of October following (1620), "there was a meeting in the counsel-house of Edinburgh, of the old and new counsel, and the old and new session, and als manie other citizens as the hous could containe, to make a leite (list) of ministers for planting of their kirk. Mr. Patrik Galloway, moderator, at the first said that in his judgment there was not a minister in Scotland but he might be had to be minister of Edinburgh; yit in time of the leiting, he said, 'Take

heid ye put none in the leite but such as ye will be sure to gett.' There were sevin nominate; Mr. David Dickson, minister at Irwine, Mr. Andro Cant, Mr. Coline Campbell, Mr. Robert Balcanquall, Mr. Robert Wilkie, Dr. Strange, and Mr. James Fairlie. Mr. Patrik Galloway asked if Mr. David Dickson was conforme. It was answeired, he had all the thrie properties which he required before; that is, was of a holie life, could preche and govern. He asked Mr. Struthers, his brother-in-law, 'Is he conforme? will the bishope receive him? We will have none to come hier but suche as will obey the king and his laws.' Mr. Struthers answeired he would not answeir for that. Others answeired he should looke to the King of Heaven, and obey him first. Siclike, when Mr. William Scott and Mr. Johne Carmichaell were nominate, Mr. Patrik said, 'Name not the men ye will not gett.' So the case of the kirk of Edinburgh was pittifull, in that it was defraudit of the travells and pains of the worthiest preachours of the land, for non-conformitie and none suffered to be their pastours but such as were hirelings, temporizers, and inferior in gifts to the others. Thrie of the citizens would not vote at all at the election, becaus it was not frie, of which number William Rig was one. He alledgit there were manie honest citizens of the toun had als great interest as office-bearers in choosing their pastors. John Maknaucht. one of the baillies in the audience of five or sixe, sayeth to him, 'None sould vote heir without a calling.' WILLIAM RIGG answeired, 'They have als good a calling, according to the Scripture, as anie hier.' 'I know Scripture als weill as yourself,' said the baillie. 'And this is in Scripture,' said WILLIAM RIGG. 'Ye are but a giddie-headit companion,' said the bailie. 'I say again, Sir Baillie,' said WILLIAM RIGG, 'I will take that of you.' He caried rome respect to him becaus of the office he was in for the present; howbeit otherwise he was inferior to him in all other respects, either for civile, naturall or religious parts, and did not querrell with him efter, when he was baillie himself." (Calderwood, vol. VII, p. 448.)

The religious controversy continued. Government would not surrender. "It was resolved that the Five Articles should have every available political sanction. They had the injunc-

tion of the prerogative and the assent of the Church," already. The 4th of August, 1621, therefore, "was a day of great concern and sorrow to the earnest Presbyterians of Scotland, as on it the Scots parliament, sitting at Edinburgh, ratified the Five Articles introducing Episcopalean fashions into the church." The house was unusually full. It was the climax of the contest; for whatever might have been done without consulting the Estates, had they rejected the Articles it would have been a direct and formidable violation of the oldest and strongest power in the constitution to have attempted afterward to sustain them. There was, therefore, much excitement outside during the meeting of the Estates. "At the moment when the grand commissioner, the Marquis of Hamilton, rose to apply the sceptre to the bills, thus giving them symbolically the royal assent, a flash of lightning burst into the house, followed by a second and a third, and these by heavy thunder." Many within the Parliament House took these explosions to be shots of cannons out of the castle. A great darkness followed. "It appeared to all who dwelt within a compass of ten or twelve miles that the clouds stood right above the town, and overshadowed that part only. The beacon standing in the entry of Leith haven was beaten down with one of the blasts of thunder. After the lightning, darkness and thunder, followed a shower of hailstones extraordinarily great; and after all rain in such abundance that it made the gutters run like little brooks." "The ceremonial return to Holyrood House could not be effected, and all rushed home in confusion. The people, affected by these signs and wonders, called the day BLACK SATURDAY." (Hist. of Scotland, Vol. VI, p. 52–53; Domestic Annals, Vol. I, p. 523.)

"It may be noted in passing, that the Act of the Estates authorizing the Five Articles is the only statute on the face of the records of the Scots Parliament, which either authorizes or dictates on matters of religious ceremonial. * * * * It is another peculiarity of Scots legislation that although the act 'statutes and ordains' the articles 'to be obeyed and observed by all his majesty's subjects as law in time coming,' there is no punishment or penalty laid upon those who disobey the injunction.

"During the progress of these affairs, and thence until his

death, the king kept up a harassing contest to compel people in Scotland, and especially in Edinburgh, to conform—to adopt and practice all his innovations with cheerful alacrity, as became the subjects of a sovereign who not only represented the Deity on earth, but represented Him with more than the usual amount of wisdom allotted to others in a like sacred position. * * * * The opposition to the innovations became formidable in tacit strength, especially in Edinburgh. The king's advisers on the spot felt how difficult a task it was to coerce into the attitude of kneeling a community not that way inclined." Even the bishops gently deprecated the too eager pressure of the Five Articles on tender consciences. But the king "kept a restless correspondence with his servants in Scotland, requiring of them minute reports on the conduct of the citizens of Edinburgh about the Articles. * * * *

"The opposition became more than tacit. Some citizens united together to co-op rate on the common understanding, not only to abstain from kneeling, but to hold aloof from those who knelt. The king poured in angry letters on his perplexed advisers, and repeated his favorite threat of depriving the capital of every spark of light from the royal countenance, by removing the establishments of the Government and the courts of law elsewhere. A pamplet denouncing the Five Articles passed from hand to hand and was greedily read. The result of a close inquisition was the assurance that it could not have been printed in Edinburgh; and, in fact, it was published at Middelburgh, whence copies of it were brought to Scotland." (History of Scotland, Vol. VI, pp. 53, 56, 58)

"The Edinburgh pulpits were at this time filled with men wholly devoted to the Episcopalian system; and such of the people as were strenuous for the Presbyterian model had to act not merely without clerical leaders, but in spite of clerical opposition. * * * We hear at this time of many people in Edinburgh holding private meetings for religious exercises, in contempt of the ordinary services of their regular pastors in the parish churches * * * The Privy Council thought proper to issue a proclamation, strictly forbidding all such meetings." This was

done June 10, 1624. "The Council had, at the same time, before them a set of Edinburgh citizens, partly the same as those whom the king had proposed to banish a few years before—namely, WILLIAM RIGG of Aitherny, one of the baillies, John Hamilton, apothecary, John Mean, merchant, and John Dickson, flesher—who had again come into collision with the ecclesiastical authorities. At the usual congregational meeting before the celebration of the communion, RIGG (puffed up, says Spottiswoode, by a conceit of his own abilities) took it upon him to challenge Dr. Forbes 'for sundry points of doctrine delivered by him in his sermons.' Dr. Forbes was a man of remarkable learning and dignity of character, for which reasons he was, in time, appointed bishop of Edinburgh by Charles I. It did not seem to him proper that he should be liable to censure of a lay citizen, and he therefore declined to listen to the baillie. RIGG then openly threatened the clergy. 'that unless they returned to the old form of administering the holy communion, the whole people would forsake them; and in this he was supported by his friends, Mean. Hamilton, and Dickson." (Domestic Annals, Vol. I, pp. 513, 544).

Calderwood's version of this scene (Vol. VII, p. 599) is as follows: "Upon Thursday, the 25th of Marche (1624), Dr. Forbes, because some of the elders and deacons of the kirk refused to attend upon the celebration of the Supper, denounced heavie judgements, and threatened the vengeance of God should light upon them. To Johne Dickson he said, 'Ye want witt, ye should be catechized; ye are an ignorant, and getts over much libertie to censure the doctrine of your pastors, Johne Dickson willed him to remember of the love whereof he was speaking in his sermon that day. 'Love and knowledge must goe together,' said Mr. Forbes. To James Narne he said, 'Ye must be catechized; ye are an ignorant, a recusant, ye should be punished. Ye are a bairne, howbeit ye have hair on your face, and must be catechized; To Johne Smith he said, 'Ye are a bairne; ye should not speak, but be catechized.' To WILLIAM RIG, bailife, he said, 'Ye are a debosht vagerer; ye sould be catechized.' The bailife answeired, 'he had beene

catechized by verie honest, worthie, and learned men, of whom some were with the Lord, and some were yit alive.' Mr Forbes said he was learneder nor anie of them, and would catechize them that catechized him; that they were but mercenarie men and pensioners. 'Bring out your Gamliel,' said he; 'produce, him, if you have anie in your house, that we may see him.' The bailife answeired, Thev were frier of these imputations nor himself. 'O, Mr. Bailiffe!' sayes he, 'O, Mr. Rig! O Mr. Bailiffe! ye are a great magistrate, O, a great clerk.' In the end, he bade them all come doun to the Magdalene chapel, that he might catechize them, and threatened that they should all smart. Many more speeches he uttered with unbridled choler and rage, as if he were bereft of his witts. Yit durst he never urge a tryall of the words that were layde to his charge, but onlie outfaced the mater with threats and braggs; and for all his bragges could not produce one sufficient reason for their Communions profaned with confusion and disorder, and polluted with idolatrie and superstition. Heat rysing betwixt the ministers and the people, the communion was celebrated at Easter following." * * * "The king beirg incensed by information sent either from the ministers of Edinburgh themselves, or from Mr. Patrik Galoway, or the Bishop of St. Androes in their name, sent doun a direction to a selecte number of the Secret Councel, to try the behaviour of some cit zens at the meeting which was holden the 23d of Marche." The following is the king's letter:

"His Majesty King James to the Lord Chancellor:

"Right trustie and right weilbelovit Counselour, Wee greete you weill: Whereas We ar crediblie informed that certane not onlie of the Magistrates,. but even of the basest tradesmen of Edinburgh, have presoomed to censure the doctrine of some of thair Min steris (a presumptioun which, gif in dew tyme it be not curbed, may produce ane infinitie of bad effectis), We can not be in quiet till the treuthe of the matter be sufficientlie tryed; and becaus we will have it condignlie punished, We haif thoght goode by these presentis to require yow to joyne to your selff the two Archbishoppis, our Tresaurair, Secretarie, the Bishop of Dumblane, and our Advocat, and to

call befoir yow not onlie the Magistrates and Ministeris of Our said Burgh, but lykewayes suche other persones whose names salbe gevin unto yow in writing, and to examine and trye whether MR. RIG, one of the Bayliffes, and his compliceis (by name one Dicksoun, a flesher, John Minne, and one Hammiltoun ane apothecarie, with divers otheris), did presume to censure Dr. Forbes his doctrine; and when it wes told thame that they wer no judgeis, whether MR. RIG insisted to prove that they wer: Secondlie, to examine who wer presente, and whether the Proveiste and remaynert Bayliffes wer there or not; and gif all concurred in urgeing thair Ministeris to go against their former practise in Kneeling at the Communion, and soe both breake the lawes of that Our Kingdome and the Orderis of the Churche; and having sufficientlie enformed yourselffs of the whole mater and the circumstanceis thairof, and of the behaviour of each severall persone thairin, with all expeditioun to acquent us with the same, and lykewise with your opinioun what punishement yee think fitt to be inflicted on the offendouris, whereby the like disourdilie presumptioun may be in tyme coming prevented. And nothing doubting of your cairrfull and diligent proceiding herein, wee bid you now fairwell. Gevin at Our Mannour of Theobaldis, the 19th day of Aprile, 1624." (Original Letters; Bannatyne Club, Vol. 2, p. 828.)

The parties were accordingly summoned before the special commission on the 30th of April. "The honest men were charged before noone to compeir afternoone. WILLIAM RIG, bailiffe, was first called on by the macer. The chancellour demandit, if he affirmed that the place where the meeting was holden was a meete place, and the persons there conveened fitt persons to judge of their ministers' doctrine? He answeired, 'We conveened that day according to a laudable custome, which hath been observed in the Kirk of Edinburgh ever since the Reformation, as I am informed; which meeting before the Communion was thought verie needfull to remove such jarres as had fallen either amongst the ministers themselfs or among the people, or betwixt the ministers and the people. For which

cause the Sabbath preceiding, to-witt, the 21st of Marche, we were all publictlie wairned from the pulpits by the ministers themselfs, before noone, to resort to the East Kirke. Therefore, I thought the meeting in that place verie warrantable." As to the second point, he answeired, that it became everie Christian to have the judgment of discretion, whereby he may discerne whether that which is delivered be agreeable to the truth or not, as the Bereans did. 'We are commandit by Johne the apostle, 1 Epist., Cap. IV, not to beleeve everie spirit, but to trie the spirits, whether they be of God or not. As for my brethren's part, I thought they had verie good reason to utter their regrates and complaints in that place, for the uncouth doctrine that was not wont to sound out of our pulpits, albeit now often delivered by some of our pastors; and, therefore, that ministers might be demandit for a reason of their doctrines, and in cases needfull might also be admonished by the people; both which, Mr. William Struthers, being moderator, seemed to decline.' Sundrie speeches passed betwixt him and everie one that was there. But this was the substance of his answeir to the chancelour. While he was removing and going to the doore, the chancelour called him again at the Bishop of St. Androes his desire, as appeared, and asked if he was one of them that desired the Communion to be ministered after the old fashion? He expected noe such question, and, therefore, could not suddenlie call to mind whether he had done it or not. But because it was a thing he approved in his heart, he resolved rather to confess than to deny the words, which perhapps he had spoken. So he answeired, 'My Lord, I think I did.' The Chancelour asked again, did he? He answeired again, 'My Lord, I think I did' The Chancelour caused the clerk, James Primerose, sett doun his deposition, and so he was removed The Bishop had a minute of interrogatories for everie one that was to be examined, furnished, noe doubt, by the ministers of Edinburgh. Finding noe vantage otherwise to be had of his behavoir or words, he thought he had him now in a hose nett, in that he sould have craved the Communion to be celebrate in a forme contrarie to the act of Parliament. But the trueth is, he spake noe such

mater, as the provest, bailliffs and others that were present, could beare witness. But if he had, his simple desire or requeist could not have made him lyable by law to anie punishment. He was noe soonner removed but he began to call himself to remembrance, and resolved to cleere himself if he were called againe. But he was not called. * * * * WILLIAM RIG confessed more than he spake. Whereupon he went to James Prymrose, the clerk, the day following to see his deposition, that he might have it mendit, if it were possible, in that point whereof he was free. The clerk told him it was out of time, for it was alreadie sent away to the king. Then said WILLIAM RIG, 'Let the Lord doe in it as he thinks best; for I know he can overrule all our actions, and can turne this to the best, if He seeth good.' " (Calderwood, Vol. VII, pp. 601–606.)

Row, in his history, page 337, says of this examination, that the accused "answered so wiselie, punctuallie and modestlie that the Councill admired them."

But the admiration availed nothing. The condemnation followed. The report of the Council to the king, dated the same day with the depositions, is given in full in the "Original Letters," Vol. 2, pages 740–5. The Lords reported that "Wee began with WILLIAME RIGE, baillie, and his complices, who were given up to be the urgers of this censure;" that they examined other witnesses, and they say, "And touching our opinion and censure of this presumption and contempt, we think the same in general to be an offense of bad example, carrying with it very probable appearances of mutiny and schism, and therefore worthy of rigorous punishment, by confining and fining, according to the quality of the persons and the nature of the offense, which, as we conceive has three branches; first, the public impugning of Dr. Forbes' doctrine by John Dickson ——: secondly, the standing to and sustaining this point by WILLIAM RIG and Johne Hammiltoun; thirdly, the urging of the ministers to celebrate the communion against the received orders of the church and public laws of the kingdom, by WILLIAM RIG and John Mean. * * * * All which, in our opinion, are punishable in one kind; but because the not know-

ing of the quality of the persons may make some mistaking in the order of the punishment, we have presumed, for your Majesty's better clearing in this point, to acquaint your Majesty''—that all were men of poor and moderate circumstances except WILLIAM RIGG, who is "ane wealthie man." They then proceed to set forth that the Edinburgh ministers had made grievous complaint of great contempts and indignities put upon them by their unruly flocks.

The depositions are wholly silent as to the point of any demand for the sitting at Sacrament. Had Rigg seen his deposition, he would have found nothing of that. But the Report treated it as an ascertained fact—which was worse for him. His deposition does give the remark of Dr Forbes which was the cause of the contention. The Doctor had said that "the matters controverted betwixt the Roman Church and us might be easily reconciled;" and on this Dickson had taken him to task.

So the Lords hinted to the King to visit his wrath mainly on Rigg, and to mulct him deeply; for he was "ane wealthie man." They soon found that James was an apter scholar than they desired.

"The king's answeir concerning the sixe burgesses of Edinburg was not sent doun till the sevinth or eight of June, becaus the king was bussied with matters of great importance in the English Parliament. He commandit the above named counselours to deprive WILLIAM RIGG of his office, to fyne him in a great summe, fiftie thousand pounds at the least, as is constantlie reported; to waird him in the castle of Blacknesse, to detaine him in that castle till the same were payed, and efter to confine him in Orkney. Siclyke, to fyne and confyne the rest, and to deprive so many as had an office, of the office. When the above named lords received the king's letter, they began to apprehend whereto such a preparative might tend, but out of time; for some of themselfs had prescribed this course to be followed, or at least the Bishop of St. Androes, or the Bishop of Dumblane, or both." (Calderwood, vol. VII, p. 607).

"Your Majesty's letter," say the Lords themselves, in a letter to the king, "concerning the declaratioun of your Royal will

and plea-ure against WILLIAM RIG and his complices, came no sooner to our hands, whom your Majesty first entrusted therewith, but there went a current bruit through this toun, of an extraordinary great fyne to be imposed upon the said persons. How, or fr m whom this bruit proceeded, we know not, and we will clear ourselves, that, to this hour, we have ever concealed that point anent the fine, and neither acquainted the rest of the Council, nor no others therewith." They crave the king's pardon; prav him to take in good part their humble opinion in respect to the fine, and proceed:

"As the Lord knows, we have no other thing before our eyes but your Majesty's honour and the general content of your subjects, who at the first raising of the uncertain bruit of this fine, whereof the particulars is yet unknown to them, were so moved with the rareness of the matter, and the apprehension of fear upon the preparation and consequence thereof, as we have not heard of a matter so hardly tane with, and so dangerously apprehended by all ranks of persons. For the like of this fine was never heard of in this kingdom; and there never was a crime how grievous soever, whilk was punished by fining that received such censure. Nor can the means of private persons afford such sums; and the man himself, although in the general opinion he be wealthy, is not known to have so much stock as the sum imposed. And if it be left in the record, it will import the effect of ane forfeiture, and a depriving him of his whole estate, whilk, in a matter of this kind, respect being had to the quality of the offence and the quantity of the fine, will not be warranted by example, and in the opinion of many will not subsist by the course of justice. The consideration whereof hath moved us heather-tills to conceal the fine, being persuaded that the Council would never allow thereof; and we were loath that any of your Majesty's directions should receive an interruption or hard interpretation." (Hist. of Scotland, vol. VI, pp. 58, 59; Original Letters, vol. 2, p. 752).

It seems that the Lords, and the Clergy too, had blundered into a serious scrape. The "canny Scots" were not fond of confiscation, and especially for arguments and abstract controver-

sies. The determination of the king to make a victim of Rigg, by "charging on him a fine so large as to be virtual confiscation," "spread a lively alarm as a precedent full of danger. Other punishments stood as questions between the executive and the individual sufferer; but confiscation was apt to be measured more by the necessity or avarice of the Crown than by the misconduct of the sufferrer. It was, in fact, taxation by the Executive without the consent of Parliament; and the English constitutional party were becoming alarmed by devices to accomplish that object." (Hist. of Scotland, vol. VI, p. 58).

"When the Lords perceived how rigorous the king's will was, they wolde deal no farther in that mater by themselfs, but drew it in before the whole counsel. So they were cited to compeir before the Lords of Secrete Counsel the tenth of June.

"To prevent the sentence, WILLIAM RIG caused James Primrose forme a bill, wherein he referred himselfe to the testimonie of the ministers themselfs, and others that were present at the meeting, that he spake not that which he confessed doubtinglie the other day before. His friends travailled with the ministers, and with the provest and bailiffs, to testifie the trueth. * * * * Five of the burgesses compeired before the Counsel. * * * * The provest, bailiffs, and ministers, were wairned likewise to be present. Mr. Patrik Galloway, as mouth to the rest" (of the ministers, that is), "had a haraunge before the lords, wherein he shewed, that his majestie had written to him twise, to incourage his bretheren, and desired them to take in patience that injurie which they had receaved at that meeting, for he wold take order with it. 'As for ourselfs,' said he, 'we desire nothing but a peaceful ministrie. Therefore, seeing WILLIAM RIGG has acknowledged his oversight, has given us full satisfaction, has promised amendiment, and a peaceable and quiet behavior in time coming, we are to intreate your Lordships that the sentence may be mitigate; for his Majestie has putt the power in your Lordships' hands, and the sword to be used as neid sall crave. Wherefore, we onlie desire, that our ministrie may be made by your Lordships peaceable, or els that we may have a peaceable departure.' This ha-

raunge he had in the presence of honest men, which was rather an accusation than an intreatie or requiest; for it might import, that order were taken with the rest, they could not brook their ministrie in peace. WILLIAM RIG impugned not that part which concerned himself. His silence was a mater of accusation which lay heavie upon his conscience efter, for he had confessed noe such mater. His constancie to the end of his trouble was a sufficient proof of his honestie. They were all removed. It was questioned in the Counsel, whether Mr. Patrick's harangue sould be extendit to the rest or not. At length it was agreed, that in regard Mr. Patrick named none but WILLIAM RIG, that he meaned not that the rest should have anie mitigation. Some desired that he might be called in againe to declare his meaning, but it was refused Mr. Patrik himself confessed to the provest and bailiffs, that he knew not weill what he spake before the counsell. They were called in againe. The sentence ordained by the king against WILLIAM RIG was mitigate, and he ordained onlie to keepe his owne house, till he sould hear further of the king's will. In the meantime they absolved him from that for which the king wold have them proceeding against him to the rigour, and withall, wrote to the king in his favours. Johne Dickson and William Simson were ordained to enter in thn Tolbuith of Edinburgh, John Mein within the toun of Elgin, John Hammiltoun within the toune of Aberdeene: and wherefore? for ryot and misdemeanoor, forsuith!" (Calderwood, vol. VII, pp. 607, 609, 610.)

The Lords were anxious to get out of their scrape in the matter of Rigg's fine. There was no embarrassment in the case of the others, so they were punished at once, as the preceding extract shows. But the Rigg matter was of a different sort, and needed to be patched up. So, on the same day they wrote to the king a long letter, (which is given in full in the "Original Letters," pp. 748–750), in which they make much of Rigg's explanatory memorial, or 'bill," and of the speech and pacificatory request of the ministers, and of their own desire to gratify the ministers by a mitigation of the sentence, etc; but not a word of the great trouble they were in about the fine. They prayed for

his Majesty's further pleasure "it being verie weele knowne to the whole nombor, that your Majestie, out of your most religious dispositioun towards the propagation and advancement of religion, doe seik nothing in all this busyness but obedience to the ordours and discipline of the Kirke."

But they were disappointed. The king had been informed that Rigg had been instrumental in the circulation of the pamphlets against the Five Articles, and had contributed toward their publication; and perhaps he was not wholly unmindful of the comfort of "a great somme, fiftie thousand pund at the leist," in the royal treasury. So "the king sent doun to the Lords of the Secrete Counsel a sharp letter, wherein he rebuked them for their lenitie, and commandit them to putt in execution his will against the burgesses; to waird WILLIAM RIG in Blacknesse, and to fine him in a great somme, for he assured himself that he was neither full nor drunken when he confessed that which he deponed at the first compeirance; and ordained that he sould be deprived of his office. And sicklyke, to be put in execution his will against the rest."—The Lords were thus driven to present the true grounds of their "lenitie," and wrote to the king the letter already quoted in reference to the commotion stirred up by the "bruit" of the great fine. This letter was written on the 1st of July. On the next day, "the Lords of the Secrete Counsel, to give the king contentment, directed a charge to WILLIAM RIG to enter his person in waird in the castle of Blacknesse, and deprived him of his office of bailiverie, and made him uncapable of anie office within the toun heirafter; which was a mater nothing belonging to them, but touched the liberties of the toun; yit they made no mention of his fyne. He entered in Blacknesse upon the sixt of Julie, and was detained in waird until Januar. The king, not content with his wairding in Blacknesse, sent doun a sharp letter to the Counsel in the end of this moneth of Julie, wherein he still insisted upon the fyne of fiftie thousand punds. The king hated him more nor the rest, because he was informed that he was the cheefe ringleader of the Nonconformitanes in Edinburgh, and that he contributed

largelie to the printing of the books which crossed the course of conformitie. The Bishops St. Androes and Dumblane gaping for his fyne, or for some great brybe, were not idle instruments." (Calderwood, Vol. VII, pp. 618, 619).

The others were also deprived of their offices, secular and ecclesiastical, and declared incapable of holding office. The response of the Counsel to the king's last letter is not published. In September, he wrote again, still pursuing the matter, to which the Lords replied: "Your Majestie's directioun anent the imposing of the fyne upon WILLIAM RIGG being proponit and impairtit to the Counsaill, suche as were present in small nombei, inrespect of the present vacancie, fand the mater to be of grite importance, whairof the lyke hes not occurred in this Kingdome, and that therefore the same requirit the presence and advyse of the whole or the most pairt of the Counsaill, for the whilk purpois wee haif resolved to write for the haill nomber to be present at the nixt meeting, untill whilk tyme wee will humblie beseeche your Majestie to haif patience." Edinburgh 22, Sept. 1624. (Original Letters; Vol. 2, p. 767).

In the latter part of this year 1624, and while Rigg was still in prison, the king issued a proclamation enjoining a special Christmas communion. The proclamation "began with much scolding, directed against the recusants, as 'Mislead with their own conceits and opinions, and with an hypocritical affectation of purity and zeal above others.' The conclusion was: 'That the communion be celebrated in all kirks of our burgh of Edinburgh at Christmas next; and that all persons, as well as our Privy Council, Session, magistrates of our burgh of Edinburgh, and all others, the community of the same, be all present, and take the communion kneeling; wherein if they fail, we, for that contempt of God and Us, will not only remove the Session, but also all other courts of justice from our said burgh.'

"The corporation of Edinburgh put in a remonstrance against this injunction; and even some of the bishops represented to the king that it were better to give the recusants time to come to their senses." (Hist. of Scotland, Vol. VI, pp. 59, 60).

Pending these deliberations, and while the king's resolution was probably wavering, a Providential visitation opened a way of escape from his quandary. On Nov. 28th, 1624, "the pest, which had been for some time in Holland, broke out in sundry houses in Edinburg, to the great terror of the whole town. * * * * Upon the last day of November, the president and other lords of the Council and Session, meeting together, resolved to rise and continue the session till the 8th of January.

"One consequence of the occurrence of the pest at this time was that the king's design of enforcing a communion at Christmas, where all the people should kneel, was frustrated." In December, his majesty was pleased to withdraw the offensive proclamation. That step was the climax of the king's policy of force; and was his last public act affecting the subjects of his ancient kingdom.

"Another result (of the pest) generally satisfactory, was a relaxation of the severity against the Edinburgh citizens who were banished and imprisoned for opposing the new ceremonies. WILLIAM RIGG was, on January 13th, 1625, allowed to leave his prison of Blackness, and remain for forty days with his wife, at his house of Morton," which lay within two miles of Edinburgh. (Domestic Annals.)

So, also Mean and Hamilton were permitted to attend on their sick families. "After all, 'the pest raged not; a few houses were infected with it; so that it appeared the chief end whereof the Lord had sent it, was to disappoint the king by scattering the people.' "

The warrant of the Council by which Rigg's temporary enlargement was granted is set forth at length in the "Original Letters, Vol. 2, pp. 775, 776. It recites that Rigg had petitioned on the ground that his wife was *enciente* and had become very sickly and infirm of body therefrom, that her indisposition and weakness were greatly increased, partly from the grief she conceived for his absence and trouble, and partly from fear of the plague, "which has so perplexed and discouraged her that she can neither receive comfort herself nor provide for the ordering and removing of her family, in this so dangerous and exi-

gent a time, unless she be assisted by his presence and counsel." The warrant, however, still required him to remain at Morton; and his seems not fully to have met the exigencies of the threatened plague. So that on the 3rd of February, nearly a month before the privilege of the first expired, another warrant was issued (Original Letters, Vol. 2, pp 778, 779) whereby his warding was transferred to Aitherny, in Fife, "and three miles thereabout," where he might have access to the Archbishop of St. Andrews for the purpose of conferring on the scruples and opinions which caused his confinement.

"The last of Marche, sure report was brought hither from court, that the king departed this life, the Lord's day before the 27th of Marche, about the noontide of the day, at Theobold's. Being disappointed of the Christmas Communion through the breaking up of the peste, he resolved to have the Communion celebrate at Easter, in Edinburgh, conforme to the Act of Perth, with great solemnitie. There was noe great appearance that he wo'd have brought the multitude to conforme; notwithstanding of all his terrours and threatenings to remove the Session. The constancie of the honest men that were troubled gave them good example. Whatsoever were the grounds of his hope, he failed in the performance, for the Lord removed him out of the way fourteene days before the Easter Communion. * * * * WILLIAM RIGG continued confyned in his own house of Aithernie in Fife, fearing to be brought within the danger of the great fyne which the king would have exacted of him, until the 20th of September, 1626." (Calderwood, vol. VII, p. 632).

"After Charles' accession, Rigg presented a petition to the Privy Council, on the 8th of July, 1625, and obtained a further extension, allowing him to repair to Edinburgh 'for settling of his affairs and business.' At length, on the 20th of September, 1626, his Majesty addressed a letter to the Privy Council, dated 14th of June, authorizing Rigg to be released and set at liberty, the Archbishop of St. Andrews having declared 'that he was satisfied with the said William his resolution to carry himself in a dutiful manner hereafter.'" (Original Letters, vol. 2, p. 780, note 1).

So the sturdy Scot triumphed in the end. The "carrying himself in a dutiful manner hereafter" involved no concessions beyond a phrase; the persecuting king was dead a year, and the times were changed. His release did not in any way impair his reputation with his party, as is fully shown by the terms in which he is always mentioned by Row and Calderwood, the contemporary historians of the Kirk. The struggle ended, so far as that phase was concerned, with the death of James.

We have still other information about this William Rigg of Aitherny, after his religious disputation was over. Even while he was confined to his own house of Aitherny, in Fife, he was still doing a good thing with some of his money. The following is a passage from Sir A. Grant's *Story of the University of Edinburgh*, vol. 2, p. 186–7:

"In the city records of 4th May, 1625, we find a statement of the intentions of Sir Thomas Hope of Craighall (the founder of the Hopetoun family). He says that as 'for advancement of learning there is nothing more expedient for youth than fit occasions of study, and convenient places whereunto young students may for their better exercise retire themselves, the more easily to apply their mind to their books, and seeing that in King James' College within this burgh there is nothing more lacking than chambers, and that there are sufficient and fit bounds therein, he has therefore declared that for beginning and encouraging others well disposed to the like work, he is willing to build within the said college, upon his own charge, two chambers in such place as it shall please my Lord Provost and others to design unto him'; under the condition that 'the children procreate of the said Mr. Thomas' body shall occupy and possess the said chambers, one or both, as they shall need during their course in the said college rent-free if they please'; and also that there shall always be a preference to his lineal descendants in claiming the chambers. * * * On the 23d of June, 1626, two more chambers were provided for by WILLIAM RIG, in precisely similar terms as the foregoing. * * * The block of buildings which contain the four chambers provided for by Sir Thomas Hope and Baillie Rig (1625–1626) was of suffi-

cient extent to constitute the south side of the first or westmost 'small close,' and the boundary between it and the larger quadrangle, afterwards made, to the south."

There are also many records of his business dealings; amongst others, on the 26th of November, 1630, he made, in Edinburgh, a contract with Andro Ros, a merchant, involving £40,000; and in July, 1636, he purchased, for £20,000, from Sir Thomas Urquhart the lands and barony of Cromartie; and in December, 1636, he purchased from Robert Hamilton the lands of Manualrig, Bowhouses, and Cronnerland or Manual Foulis, in the Sheriffdom of Stirling (Reg. Gr. Seal, vol. VIII, pp. 534, 620). * * * * Robert Blair, a prominent clergyman, wrote an autobiography; and in it, on p. 13, he says: "Mr. Blair was often in William Rig of Aitherny's house, and in his first wife's relations' houses. In April that year (1635) he came over to Aitherny in Fife, where ordinarily William Rigg then lived. He was earnestly invited by Aitherny to go with him to his uncle's house to assist at the celebration of the communion, whereunto he condescended. The burden of the whole work was laid on him by the honest, infirm, old man, Mr. John Row; so he preached the Saturday's sermon on Isaiah xiii, 15, 16, &c; Sabbath, before noon, on Ephes. iii, 15, 15, 16, &c."

In the *Ecclesiastical Records of the Synod of Fyffe*, already quoted, pages 116 to 118, is given an account of the Provincial Assembly holden at Cupar on the 2d of April, 1639; and on listing the delegates from the various charges, William Rigg of Aithernay was the elder representing Scoonie, in the Presbytery of Kirkcaldie.

Finally, this earnest and good man disappears in the following entry from the Diary of Sir Thomas Hope, p. 201.

"2 Januar, 1644, Twysday.—This day my worthie cousin William Rig off Aithernie departit, at his hous of Aithernie, having takin bed on Sounday of befoir, and diet on the 3 day; and this was reportit to me be Mr. John Skene, his brother-in-law, on Thursday the 4 off Januar 1644, at 10 in the morning. The Lord prepare me; for this, nixt to my dierest sone, is ane heavie strok."

Exactly at what time SARA INGLIS, the first wife of William Rig died is not known, but it was after 1632. Later, he married Euphame, daughter to John Monnypenny of Pitmillie, who survived him, and afterwards married Sir John Scott of Scotstarvit.*

The children of the first wife, as shown by the Register of Baptisms, were as follows: John baptized 31 Jany., 1613; Janet baptized 17 Feby., 1614; William baptized 12 Jany., 1615; Thomas baptized 4 Jany., 1616; Patrick baptized 7 Dec., 1617; Catherine baptized 15 Nov., 1618; John baptized 3 Oct., 1620; William baptized 24 Jany., 1622; Alison baptized 6 Jany., 1624; Helene baptized 16 May, 1626; Sara baptized 25 April, 1628; Walter baptized 22 Sept. 1630; James baptized 18 May, 1632. There were also a son, Alexander, and a daughter, Euphame, whose baptisms do not appear.

Several of the children of William Rigg must have died in infancy.

Janet married in 1630, Sir Walter Riddell, knight, son of Sir John Riddell of that ilk, and of a very ancient family. In July, 1630, Sir Walter had a charter of the lands of Quhitton and others, to be held by him and the heirs male of his marriage with Janet. They had three sons, Sir John, William and Archibald.† This Archibald Riddell became a minister, emigrated to East Jersey in 1685, where he settled on Bald Hill, at Woodbridge, and had several land-grants and other contracts; returned to Scotland before or in 1692, and was living at Kirkaldie, Fife, in Jany., 1701. His eldest daughter, Janet, married James Dundas, of Amboy, East Jersey, in January, 1688, and their son, Robert Dundas, was born at Perth Amboy, Dec. 10, 1694.*

John and William, the first of each name, both died in infancy, leaving thereby as oldest living son and heir Thomas

---

* Memorials of the Family of Row; Edinburgh, 1828; East Neuk of Fife, Ch. 2.

† Douglas' Baronetage of Scotland, p. 67; Reg. Great Seal, vol. 7, No. 1597.

* New Jersey Archives, vol. 21, pp. 70, 167, 196, 290, 291, 314.

Rigg, baptized 4 Jany., 1616. He married, first, Ann Dundas, daughter of George Dundas of that ilk. The signing of their marriage contract on Friday, Jany. 13, 1643, is noted by Sir Thomas Hope, in his diary, page 184. On August 21, 1643, he, as eldest lawful son of William, and his spouse, Anne Dundas, received a charter from the king of lands, with remainder to the heirs of William in case of failure of heirs male of themselves. On his marriage, his father gave him the estate of Morton. In 1644, after the death of his father, he proved his heirship to lands in Edenburgshire, Elgin, Fife, Ross and Sterling—which fact shows, in a most striking way, how widespread and great were the father's possessions. Thomas, however, seems to have gotten rid of those possessions quite quickly. In 1649, he sold the lands of Wester Rarichies and Cullis to Sir John Sinclair. In 1653, he granted lands in Perthshire to his sister, Alison, Lady Pitloure. In 1654, he conveyed other lands to Thomas Andes. In 1665, he sold Letham for 23,000 merks to Sir John Scott of Scotstarvit. In 1668, he mortgaged part of Aithernie to David Geddie, and sold the whole of it to James Watson in 1670.† By his marriage with Anne Dundas he had no children. His wife dying, he married, secondly, in 1656, Bethia (or, as others call her, Catherine), daughter of Sir John Carstairs of Kilconquhar, by whom he had children, William, Thomas, Euphame and Agnes* He died before April, 1673, for the testament of his brother, Alexander, executed in that month, names a tutor and administrator for his children. Thomas, his son, however, was not named in that will, nor does he afterwards appear; and so must have died before that date. The history of the remaining children carries us into one of the most interesting and tragical stories of the Scottish Church history.

We have seen the struggle between the Kirk of Scotland and the established Church of England, and the part taken

---

† Reg. Great Seal, vol. 8, No. 1442 and No. 2112; Edinburg Sassines for 1643; Returns of Services of Heirs for 1644: Register of Sassines for Perthshire for 1653; Laing Charters, No. 2452; Reg. of Deeds, Dalrymple's Office, vol. 22; East Neuk of Fife, Ch. 2.

* East Neuk of Fife, Ch. 2.

therein by William Rigg of Aithernie, under James I, in the period from 1619 to 1625. That controversy was settled in 1646-47, by the "Solemn League and Covenant." But a new struggle arose later.

"Charles II was restored to the throne in 1660, and an attempt was then made to conform the Scottish Church to that of England by the establishment of the Episcopal form of government. So severe was the persecution that even to be present at a field conventicle was punishable by death and confiscation of goods. Yet the great body of the Scottish people steadfastly resisted."† It was in this period and amongst these scenes that Sir Walter Scott laid his story of *Old Mortality;* and in the introduction to that novel, he says :

"It was in 1685, when Argyle was threatening a descent upon Scotland, and Monmouth was preparing to invade the west of England, that the Privy Council of Scotland, with cruel precaution, made a general arrest of more than a hundred persons in the southern and western provinees, supposed, from their religious principles, to be inimical to Government, together with many women and children. These captives were driven northward like a flock of bullocks, but with less precaution to provide for their wants, and finally penned up in a subterranean dungeon in the Castle of Dunnottar, having a window opening to the front of a precipice which overhangs the German Ocean. They suffered not a little on the journey, and were much hurt both at the scoffs of the northern prelatists, and the mocks, gibes and contemptuous tunes played by the fiddlers and pipers who had come from every quarter as they passed, to triumph over revilers of their calling. The repose which the melancholy dungeon afforded them was anything but undisturbed. The guards made them pay for every indulgence, even that of water; and where some of the prisoners resisted a demand so unreasonable and insisted on their right to have this necessary of life untaxed, their keepers emptied the water on the prison floors, saying : 'If they were obliged to bring water for the country

† Appleton's Universal Encyc., vol. 10, p. 390.

whigs, they were not bound to afford the use of bowls or pitchers gratis.' In this prison, which is still termed the Whigs' Vault, several died of the diseases incidental to such a situation ; and others broke their limbs and incurred fatal injury in desperate attempts to escape from their stern prison house. Over the graves of these unhappy persons, their friends, after the Revolution (i. e., which placed William of Orange on the English throne), "erected a monument with a suitable inscription. This peculiar shrine of the Whig martyrs is very much honored by their descendants," etc.

Amongst these unhappy prisoners were William Rigg, son of William of Aithernie, and his sister, Euphame, and *perhaps*, not certainly, William, son of Thomas of Aithernie, and his sister, Euphame. But whether there were four or two, for those who were imprisoned a deliverance was coming ; and after this wise :

It will be remembered that Margaret Monnypenny, he widow of William of Aithernie, had married Sir John Scott of Scotstarvit. This Sir John was a man of substance and of mark in his day. He was the author of a work, published long after his death, called "The Staggering State of the Scots Statesmen for One Hundred Years." He is mentioned and his book is quoted in notes to Row's History, pages 74 and 288, and in notes to "Old Mortality." He had purchased the estate of Letham from Thomas Rigg of Aithernie ; and he had a son, George Scott of Pittochy, who had married Agnes, the younger daughter of Thomas Rigg ; and his son, Walter Scott, had married Margaret, daughter of William of Aithernie and sister to Thomas.

Now, George Scott of Pittochy, seems to have been of a certain value himself. He was an ardent supporter of the Scottish party in the religious controversy ; and his attention became, in some way, fixed on the Jerseys. The following extract is made from Bancroft's *History of the United States*, vol. 2, pp. 408–409 :

The prosperity of New Jersey "sprung from the miseries of Scotland. The trustees of Sir George Carteret, tired of the bur-

den of colonial property, exposed their province to sale: and the unappropriated dominion, with jurisdiction over the five thousand already planted on the soil, was purchased by an association of twelve partners,* under the auspices of William Penn. A brief account of the province was immediately published; and settlers were allured by a reasonable eulogy on its healthful climate and safe harbors, its fisheries and abundant game, its forests and fertile soil, and the large liberties, established for the encouragement of adventurers. * * * From Scotland the largest emigration was expected; and, in 1685, just before embarking for America with his own family and about two hundred passengers, George Scott of Pittochy, addressed to his countrymen an argument in favor of removing to a country where there was room for a man to flourish without wronging his neighbor. 'It is judged the interest of the government'—thus he wrote, apparently with the saction of men in power—'to suppress Presbyterian principles altogether; the whole force of the law of this kingdom is levelled at the effectual bearing them down. The rigorous putting these laws in execution, hath in a great part ruined many of those who, notwithstanding thereof, bind themselves in conscience obliged to retain these principles. A retreat where, by law, a toleration is allowed, doth at present offer itself in America, and is nowhere else to be found in his Majesty's dominions.'

"This is the era," continues Bancroft, "at which East New Jersey, till now chiefly colonized from New England, became the asylum of Scottish Presbyterians. Who has not heard of the ruthless crimes by which the Stuarts attempted to plant Episcopacy in Scotland, on the ruins of Calvinism, and extirpate those of the Presbyterian faith as a whole people? * * * Scarcely a Presbyterian family in Scotland but was involved in proscription or penalties; the jails overflowed, and their tenants were sold as slaves to the plantations."

From the *Narrative and Critical History of America*, by Justin Winsor. Vol. 3 p. 450 is made this extract:

"In 1685, the most interesting and valuable of all the early

---

* Of whom Ambrose Rigg was one, as already told.

publications" (i. e., advertising East Jersey) "was issued in Edinburgh. It was entitled 'The Model of the Government of the Province of East New Jersey in America; and Encouragements for such as Designs to be concerned there Published for information of such as are desirous to be Interested in that place.' The author, George Scott, of Pitlochie, was connected by descent and marriage with many distinguished families in Scotland, which connection probably led the Proprietors to confide the preparation of the work to him, as his extensive circle of friends and acquaintances would be likely to insure for it a more general acceptance, particularly as he was ready to add example to precept by embarking himself and family for East Jersey."

"The author of *the Model* begins his work with a learned disquisition upon the manner in which America was first peopled, and then proceeds to meet and overcome the various scruples that were presented to operate against its future settlement from Scotland, by arguments drawn from the sacred and profane history and from the consideration due their families and the country; concluding with a portraval of the advantages to be secured by a residence in East Jersey, and the superiority of that colony over others in America and the West Indies. In this respect the value of the work to the historian is very great, as numerous letters are given from the early settlers, presenting minute discriptions of various localities and their individual experiences in a manner calculated to produce a correct and, at the same time, a favorable impression upon their readers. The original edition is exceedingly rare, only ten copies being known, but the New Jersey Historical Society has caused it to be reprinted as an appendix to the first volume of its *Collections*, this placing it within the reach of all."

For the preparation and publication of *the Model* the Proprietors made George Scott a grant of lands, *pursuant to which, on August 14, 1685, Lord Neill Campbell disposed to him 1000 acres in East Jersey, "contiguous to the land lately of George

* East Jersey Deeds, Liber D., page 113; East Neuk of Fife, ch. 2.

Viscount of Tarbett." Moreover, the Scottish Council granted to him one hundred of the prisoners in Dunnottar; and under the laws of Jersey he would be entitled to a personal land grant for each emigrant brought over.

So it was that George Scott chartered a vessel, the "Henry and Francis" of New Castle, Captain Richard Huttone, commander, and took his prisoners from Dunnottar on board in Leith Roads. The passengers were not all prisoners, but included ordinary passngers and members of his own family—especially himself and his wife. From this fact arises the doubt as to whether William Rigg, son of Thomas of Aithernie, and his sister, Euphame, were amongst the prisoners; they may have gone simply as members of the family; but the older William and Euphame, children of William of Aithernie, were certainly of the prisoners. About the middle of September 1685, the *Henry aud Francis* sailed, with about three hundred souls aboard; amongst them, George Scott, his wife, his son James, and his daughter Euphame. Everything promised brightly; for the prisoners, because they were in fact speeding to a land of religious freedom; for the Scotts, because they were going to found a great estate; for the Riggs, because they were sailing under the protection of close and powerful connections, to a new world, and to a province of which their near relative, John Skene, was, as already retold, deputy Governor. (Ante, p. 32). Yet hardly had they got out of the channel when fever broke out among them, and many died; among those who perished were George Scott and his wife *, both of the William Riggs and both of the Euphames. William, son of Thomas of Aithanie, died last. In the *New Jersey Archives*. Vol. 21, p. 70, appears the following item, taken from East Jersey Deeds, Liber A, page 238:

"1685 November 27. Aboard 'Henry Frances of New Castle,' Last Will and Testament of William Rig, son of Thomas Rig of Athorny dec'd., names as heirs children of brothers Walter and James Rig of Scotland, Eupham Scott, dau., of George Scott of Piltockey dec'd., Rev. Archibald Riddall, James, son

* Works of James Fraser of Pitcalziam; Introductory Account of the Author; Edinburg, 1834.

of said George Scott, Executor * * * * Witnesses James Dundas, brother of the Laird of Armestoun, James Hutchinson, apothecary, and John Fraser, writing master. Proved February 9, 1686."

It is clear from this will that Euphame and Agnes had both died before William; else he would hardly have left all his property away to his cousins; also his uncle and aunt, William and Euphame must have died before him, else they would have been mentioned in connection with the will, as executors or witnesses.

The expression in the entry, "names as heirs children of *brothers* Walter and James," tends to create doubt; but it does not mean that Walter and James were brothers to the testator; it is as if the entry read, "children of *the* brothers Walter and James." This is made certain by the judicial proceedings in Scotland.

In May, 1693, "the testament dative and Inventory of the goods, etc., pertaining to the deceased William and Euphame Riggs, lawful children to the deceased William Rigge of Aithernie, sometime residenters in Edinburgh, who died at sea on a voyage to East Gersie, in the month of———, 168—," was "given up" by the children of Walter Rigg and those of James Rigg, "only executors dative discerned as nearest of kin to said Defuncts." * Again: in December 1693, Walter Scott (who had married Margaret Rigg) executed a deed consenting that the children of Walter Rigg and of James Rigg, should, "in terms of the latter will and testament of the deceased William Rigg of Aithernie "(a manifest reference to the will made on the *Henry and Frances*,) obtain a decree on a certain debt held by the said William in his lifetime," notwithstanding of all pretensions which he, the said Walter Scott, has to the said sums of money by virtue of a former testament made by the said deceased William Rigg, and Mrs. Euphame Rigg, his sister, which hereby renounces," etc. † —These two judicial records remove

---

* Edinburg Testaments, Vol. 80.

† Register of Deeds, Mackenzies Office, vol. 73.

all doubt as to the existence and the death of the two sets of brothers and sisters, William and Euphame, children respectively, of William of Aithernie and of Thomas—a singular fact which the historians have overlooked, thereby creating an apparent contradiction as to the unfortunate two(?)

James Scott, son of Agnes Rigg, mentioned in the preceding entry seems also to have died; for he is no further mentioned in the New Jersey Archives; but the daughter, Euphame Scott, survived and married John Johnstone of Monmouth county New Jersey, who was one of her fellow passengers, and was living there in November, 1701. "Their descendants," says the *Nar. and Crit. History*, "became numerous, and for years before the war of Independence, and since that period, they filled high civil and military stations in East Jersey." ‡

We shall now return to the history of the sons and daughters of William Rigg of Aithernie. The story of William and of Euphame has been given above; and the marriage of Margaret to Walter Scott, whereby she became the lady of *Letham*, the estate sold by her father to Scott of Scotstarvit, has also been note.

Patrick Rigg, fourth son of William Rigg of Aithernie and of Sara Inglis was baptised December 7, 1617. He died in the year 1654, and, as it seems, unmarried—at all events, without issue. On March 11, 1665, Thomas of Aithernie proved himself as "heir of conquest" of Mr. Patrick Rig, his immediate younger brother.*

Catherine Rigg, second daughter of William Rigg of Aithernie and of Sara Inglis, was baptised November 15, 1618. In February, 1646, she proved her part heirship of her father's estate. † She afterwards married Sir William Douglas of Cavers, by whom she had a son, also Sir William Douglas of Cavers and heretable sheriff of Teviotdale. §

---

‡ New Jersey Archives, pp. 141, 323; Narrative and Critical History of United States, vol. 3, pp. 450.

* Edinb. Gen'l. Returns of Services of Heirs, 1665.

† Same, for 1646.

§ East Neuk of Fife, ch. 2; Memorials of the Family of Row.

Alison Rigg, third daughter, was baptised January 6, 1624. She married William Pitcairn, fuar of Pithoure, in Pertshire; and in 1653 received from her brother, Thomas of Aithernie, seizin of the lands of Drumie and others, in that shire. She died in October, 1678, her testament being proven January 4, 1679. She had sons Henry and Patrick. §

Helen Rigg, fourth daughter, was baptised May 16, 1626. She married William Little of Over Libberton, who died before April, 1663. She herself died in May, 1677, her testament being proven in that month. She left children, William, John, Walter and Euphame. John Little had a daughter Isabella, but both father and daughter were dead in April, 1680, at which time William Little proved as their heir. *

Walter Rigg, seventh son, was baptised September 22, 1630. He was a minister of the gospel; in charge, successively, at Bathgate, at Brountsfield, and at Athelstaneford. He married Catherine Mitchell, and their children were baptised as follows: Sarah on 8th of April, 1670; and William on 29th September, 1671. The Rev. Walter was named as sole executor of the will of his brother Alexander in 1673. He died in February, 1691, his testament being proven in September of that year by his son-in-law, Patrick Hepburne as sole executor dative. † His daughter Sarah married Patrick Hepburne, a writer to the signet; and she, her husband, and her brother William, were all alive in December, 1693, when Walter Scott made his renunciation in their favor as related above.

Alexander Rigg, son of William of Aithernie, died childless in June, 1673, leaving a will by which he bequeathed his entire estate to his brother, the Rev. Walter, subject to legacies to the three children of his brother Thomas; *i. e.* to William, Euphame and Agnes, by name. ‡

---

§ Reg. Perthsh. Sassines for 1653; Edinb. Testaments, Vol. 77; Reg. of Deeds, Dalrymple's office, Vol. 56.

* Reg. Edinb. Sassines, for 1663; Edinb. Testaments, Vol. 76; Edinb. Returns Services of Heirs, for 1680.

‡ Edinb. Testaments, Vol. 79.

James Rigg, The Merchant.

We have seen that Thomas Rigg, son of William of Aithernie, in some way disposed of or lost that estate; and he, of course, was the last Laird of Aithernie. We now come to

VII. James Rigg, "the merchant," youngest son of William of Aithernie, unless Alexander was younger than he. James was baptised on May 18, 1632. He married Helen Akenhead, and his children were as follows: William, baptised January 7, 1658; Euphame, baptised August 10, 1660; Janet, baptised March 9, 1662; Walter, baptised April 29, 1665; and Alexander and Catherine, whose baptismal dates have not been obtained. On April 16, 1663, James acted as representative of his sister Helen in receiving a seisin of annual rents laid on certain lands in her favor. † He was a "merchant and burgess of Edinburgh." On the 17th of February, 1668, he had a full settlement with his sister Helen, and her receipt and acquittance appears of record in the Register of Deeds, Dalrymple's office. He is mentioned in the will of his brother Alexander, dated April 29, 1673, as being indebted to Alexander in a bond for 6,000 merks. He died in March, 1677, his testament being proven by his widow. *

Of his children, it is clear that William, Euphame and Janet had all died before the year 1693, since none of them is mentioned in either the testamentary proceeding of that year to establish the heirship to the cousins who died at sea, as told above, or in the renunciation of Walter Scot.

On the other hand, Walter, Alexander and Catherine were mentioned in both of these proceedings, in such terms as to show that they were then living.

Alexander Rigg, The Goldsmith.

VI. Alexander was son of James, the merchant, as is expressly stated in both of the proceedings mentioned above. The

---

* Edinburgh Testaments, Vol, 75.

† Register Edinb. Sassines for 1663.

* Edinburgh Testaments, Vol. 75.

this pavie befor them, walking up and doune with my eyelids up, and the whyte of my eye turned up as if I had been blind. The kirkmen that conveened there to see me, advised the Sisters, the Nunnes of the Sheines, to get another lad to keep their sheep, and to keep me hid in one of their volts or cellars for for some years, ay till they thought meet to bring me out, and to make use of me as they pleased: (this the knave kirkmen did in their wicked policie and foirsight, that the memorie of such a boy might perish, and that notwithstanding he might be to the foir to be brought out to deceive the people of God when they thought fitt.) And so, sir, I wes keeped and fed in one of the volts (nobodie knowing that I was there but the kirkmen and the Nunnes of the Sheines) for the space of seven or eight years. Then, Sir, they conveened me againe, and brought me befor them, and caused me sweare a great oath that I sould faine my selfe to be a blind man, and they put one to lead me through the country that I might beg as a blind man in the day tyme; but in the night, and also when I pleased, I put doune my eyelids and saw well enough, and I to this houre never revealed this to any; yea, my leader knew not but I wes blind indeed." And then after his discourse he played his pavie befor the Esquyre, walking up and doune the chamber as if he had been blind. The Esquyre glad (for he easilie believed that he had been told the trueth) keeped him by him that night in his chamber; and upon the morne sayes to him, "Now, seeing you have glorified God in revealing the knaverie of these villanes and deceivers, the kirkmen and nunnes, yee must doe something more yit, to let the people know how these knaves hes deceived them, and entysed you, for world's geer (for they gave him money liberallie) to deceive the people of God." Ans. "Sir, since I have revealed the secret to you, and have taken me to you as my master, I will doe any thing you will bid me doe." "Well (said the Esquyre) this yee must doe, and I sall stand by you with my sword in my hand, that no man nor woman wrong you. Goe with me to the crosse, and in few words (whilk the Esquyre taught him) tell the people (after yee have cryed Oyesse thrise) how yee have been hyred and entysed to faine your selfe to be a

blind man, and that yee wes never blind, and that there wes no miracle indeed wrcught upon you yesterday; and therefor desire the people no longer to be deceived by their kirkmen, these knaves and blind guydes that misleads the people, but bid the people take them to the true religion, &c. And after yee have thus spoken, I and yee sall quicklie runne doune the close besouth the crosse, where my servant sall be waiting with my two horses in the cowgate, and if I were once betwixt the shoulders of my horse, and yee upon the other, I sall defy all the kirkmen in Edinburgh to overhye me till I be in Fyfe, where the Lords of the congregation are in armes for the defense of the true Reformed Religion." The man undertaking to doe as he desired, they went to the crosse together about eight a clock in the foirnoon. When after the man had cryed Oyesse thrice, the people who the day befor had seen him at St. Allarites chapell on the scaffold, &c., running to heare what he had to say, heard him utter the words the Esquyre had taught him. Then quicklie the Esquyre and he horsed, and were gone toward the Queenes-ferrie. The report of this running through the Toune came quicklie to the priests, freirs, and the rest of that deceiving rabble, who raged, foamed, &c; but what could they doe? The man wes gone—they could not persew—they durst not goe further than the Queenes-ferrie.

"But to returne to Mr. John Row. The Esquyre coming home with the man, the Lord in his good providence so ordered that Mr. John Row came to Cleish to visite the Ladie, she being a papist; and after he had stayed there a night, the Esquyre kyndlie intertaining him, they fell in conference about some points of religion. The Esquyre sayes to him, 'Mr. John Row, ye are a great scholer and lawyer: yee have been bred at the court of Rome, where there is both learning and policie enough. I am but a countrey gentleman, unlearned, hes not had breeding abroad; therefor, I will not enter the lists of dispute you; I know I will be foyled, and whilk is worse, I will wrong my religion that way. But let me only conferre and cracke about some points of religion wherein yee and we differ.' 'Well, (said Mr. John Row) I am glad and well content to doe so: we may doe

other good that way; I may teach you some thing yee know not, and it may be yee may teach me some thing I knew not befor.' And so, after some conference, the Esquyre sayes, 'Doe ye maintaine that the Pope, your master, and his clergie, can in thir dayes work any true and reall miracle?' Ans. 'Yes; There is no doubt of that. It is certaine that the Pope or his clergie have wrought miracles for the confirmation of the trueth of our religion.' 'Well, (sayes the Esquyre) have yee heard of yon miracle wrought latelie at St. Allarites chapell?' Ans. 'O yes. What can yee say to it? What can any man say against that a man borne blind is cured, and hes received his sight?' Q. 'But how know yee that he wes a borne blind man?' Ans. 'Hes he not begged through Edinburgh and Dalkeith, Leith, Musselburgh, &c., all his dayes, being a blind man?' The Esquyre replyes, 'I am sorie, Mr. John, that honest men, such as I take you to be, is so pitifullie deceived by false knaves, deceivers of the soules of the people of God.' And so that he might convince him of their knaverie and undeceive him, he told him that he had the verie man on whom the miracle wes thought to be wrought in his house; and calling upon the man, brought him befor Mr. John Row, and caused him to reveale the whole mater, and play his pavie befor him; whilk when Mr. John Row had heard and seen, he wes amased and nonplussed, and could say nothing to defend his master or the deceiving kirkmen that had contryved the busines. 'Now, (sayes the Esquyre) Mr. John Row, yee are a great clergie man, a great linguist and lawyer. But I charge you, as yee must answer to the great God at the last day, that yee doe not now hold out any light that God offers you, but that yee will so soone as yee come to your studie close the doore upon you, and take your Byble, and earnestlie pray to God that yee may understand the Scriptures and the trueth of God revealed in them, that in his light yee may see light. And when yee have prayed, as the Lord by his Spirit, who is the Spirit of grace and supplications, will instruct and teach you, take your Byble, and read 2 Thess. ii., and if yee doe not there see your master the Pope to be the great antichrist who comes with lying wonders to deceive the people of God, (as now he and

his deceiving and tricking clergie in Scotland hes done latelie at Musselburgh) yee sall say Robert Colvill hes no skill.'

"Mr. John Row being amazed, and with all ingenuous, wold not, yea, durst not, shoote (shut) out light holden out to him; therfor, considering the knaverie of the kirkmen in the late pretended false lying miracle, and with all reading and considering 2 Thess. ii., it pleased the Lord to convert him from Poperie to the Reformed Religion, and so he became familiar with Mr. Knox, Christopher Goodman, &c., the reformers; and he being learned and knowing the errors of Poperie better than others, wes verie instrumentall in advancing the Reformation."

David Laing, in his *Account of the Life of Mr John Row*, on page ix, says: "After Knox's arrival in Scotland, in April, 1559, Dr. Row attended his public ministry, and held frequent conversations with him; and being fully persuaded of the errors of Romanism, he was induced to join himself with the Protestant party, and to become a preacher, when he dropped his academical title of Doctor, and was afterwards designed Mr. John Row. Upon the establishment of the Reformation by the Scotish Parliament, he was admitted minister of Kennoway, and soon after married Margaret Bethune, daughter of the Laird of Balfour, in Fife. In April, 1560, he was one of the six ministers who, being selected by the Lords of the Congregation 'to commit to writing, in a book, their judgments touching the Reformation of religion,' drew up the Confession of Faith and the First Book of Discipline. In July, 1560, he was translated to Perth*, and was present at the first General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, which met at Edinburgh on the 20th December, 1560 For a period of twenty years he continued to take a very active share in all ecclesiastical proceedings, as will appear from various passages in the present work" (i. e., the *Hist. of the Kirk of Scotland*); "and in the 'Lives of the Protestant Reformers in Scotland,' by the Rev. James Scott, minister of Perth, there occurs a detailed account of Row's life, together with notices of his

*His stipend as minister of Perth was "200 pounds with the kirk land, and ane chaler of quhite aittis."—Register of Ministers, pp. 28, 88, Edinb. 1830, 4to.

family and descendants, gleaned from the parish registers."

Some of the instances in which John Row took prominent part in the work and deliberations of the Kirk, as shown by the *Historie*, will now be given.

"At the nynt Generall Assemblie, holden at Edinburgh, Junij 25, 1565, John Willock, Moderator. The nobilitie there present are desyred to intreat the Queen, to take ordour with haynous sins, as Sabbath-breaking, adulterie, fornication, etc. * * * * Johne Knox appoynted to awaite upon and advertise of the Queen's ansuer to the supplication and articles therein contained, and advertise the Superintendents of the same, or any other thing necessare till the nixt Assemblie.

"At the tenth Generall Assemblie, holden at Edinburgh, December 25, 1565, John Erskin of Dun, Moderator. Because the Queen's ansuer to the articles were not found satisfactorie, Mr. John Row wes ordained to draw up ansuers to each of hir ansuers upon each article. She refuised flatlie to quyt hir masse; promised to establish religion with advise of hir Parliament; the benefits of the patronages being the patrimonie of hir crown, she will not, she may not quyt, but shall assigne Ministers to some portion thereof. The Assemblie replyed, they were heartilie sorie that idolatrie should be avowed after so much cleare light holden forth from God's word; affirmed no religion to be saveing but the Reformed, as being onlie grounded upon God's trueth; Turks and Jewes have to pretend antiquitie, consent of people, authoritie of councells, multitudes of followers, and such like cloaks: we not onlie preach the trueth, but offers publict dispute to all adversaries: The Masse is a mass of impietie, idolatrie, and blasphamie; confederacie with Christ should be dearer to the Queen, nor any Prince in the world: The retaining of Kirk liveings in her arvin hand is sacrilegious, for thereby the soules of God's people shalbe defrauded of the meanes of salvation: The teinds are the Kirk's patrimonie, whereby the ministrie and the poore ought to be intertained, Kirks repaired, youth educated; and these done, let the Councill dispose of the rest: We thank the Queen's Majestie for her offer, but it is generall, and no execution can follow upon it till it be particular; so intreats

the articles to be reformed."—Page 27. * * * *

"At the thirteenth Assemblie, holden at Edinburgh, Junii 25, 1567, Mr. George Buchanan, Principall of St. Leonard's Colledge in St. Androes, Moderator. Perceaving the danger of religion and reformation by the bloodie decrees of Trent, and cruell attempts of Papists in France and Flanders, and aganis Scotland in particulare, plotts both within and without the land; and that Ministers have no provision, and the poore members of Christ are starving on streets, and lying as dung misregarded; and seeing a Mutual Band is requisit in such cases; it is appovnted that a Generall Assemblie conven again upon the 20 of Julie nixt to come, and to it invites and requyres by common letters all Protestant noblemen and barrons within the kingdome; yea, and all others also of what rank so ever, to assist with their counsell and concurrance in so necessare a work: for the prosecution of whilk good work, a commission was given to a certaine number of the Assemblie with full and ample power, etc. The letters were direct and subscryved by these commissioners, John Erskin of Dun, Masters John Spottiswood, John Dowglas, John Knox, JOHN ROW, John Craig." *Ibid.*, p 32 * * * *

"At the fifteenth Assemblie, holden at Edinburgh, December 25, 1567, MR JOHN ROW, minister at Perth, Moderator." *Ibid.*, p. 35 * * * * *

"At the twenty-seventh Assemblie, holden at Edinburgh, March 6, 1572 ('73) Mr. David Fergusson, Moderator. MR. JOHN ROW censured for marieing the Master of Cranfoord and my Lord Drummond's daughter without proclamation of bands; and what wes done in it wes not in due tyme, vis. on Thursday at the evening prayers; notwithstanding of his excuse that it wes at the command of the session, whereof my Lord Ruthven was one." *Ibid*, p. 46. * * * * *

"At the thirty-second Assemblie, holden at Edinburgh, August 5, 1575, Mr. Robert Pont, Moderator. * * * * * Anent the question proponed by certaine grave brethren, Whither the Bishops, as they are now in Scotland, hes their function of the word of God, yea or not? or, if the Chapters appoynted for creating of Bishops ought to be tolerated in this

reformed Kirk? The Assemblie appoynts for the affirmative, Masters George Hay, JOHN ROW, David Lindsay; and for the negative, Masters John Craig, James Lawson, and Andro Melvill, to meet, reason, confer, treat, and dispute upon the said question, and to report the result of their disputes, their judgements, and opinion, to the Assemblie." *Ibid.*, pp. 55, 56. In another part of the *Historie*, JOHN ROW'S position on this interesting point of church government is thus stated: "When John Durie, minister of Edinburgh, proponed the question, Whither Bishops, as they were presentlie in this Kirk, with such authoritie and jurisdiction as they had, both ecclesiasticall and civill, were lawfull, yea or not? *Mr. Johne* ROW, who had been long in Rome, and was there *Doctor retriusque juris*, thought the doctrine of Rome detestable, the Lord haveing inlightened him with the trueth of the gospell, haveing heard Mr. Knox preach, and after conference with him; yit, thought he, the Prelaticall government might well enough stand (though it was Popish) with Protestant doctrine; and monarchie being the best of governments in the State, he thought it looked lykest to that in the Kirk to be ruled by a prelat; and being one of them that was for the affirmative, that Bishops was lawfull, after long disputation and examination of that poynt, he and all they who took that part of the argument yeelded, were forced by strength of reasone and light holden out from Scripture, to confesse their errour; and after that he (as all the rest) preached down Prelacie all his dayes." *Ibid.*, p. 415. * * * *

"At the thirty-third Assemblie, holden at Edinburgh, Aprile 24, 1576, MR. JOHN ROW, Moderator." *Ibid.*, p. 87. * * * *

"At the thirty-eighth Assemblie, holden at Stirlin, June 11, 1578, MR JOHN ROW, Moderator." *Ibid.*, p. 63. * * * *

On page 258 of the *Historie*, referring to the controversy over the lawfulness of Bishops, the author, who, it will be remembered, was Dr. John Row's son, observes: "It is true, MR. JOHN ROW was minister in St. Johnstoune, and Superintendent of Galloway; But the difference betwix the Superintendents and the diocesian lordlie Prelats are vast and many," &c.

We now return to the more personal sketch of John Row's life and character, as given by his grandson in the "Coronis" to the *Historie*. The writer says:

"After the Reformation was established by law, in the yeare 1560, he was admitted minister of Kennoway, where he married the Laird of Balfour's daughter, (Margaret Bethune) (the lands of Kennoway being ane barronie of land pertaining to the Laird of Balfour). Shortlie thereafter he wes by the Generall Assemblie transported to Perth, the second burgh of the kingdome, where he lived and died, beloved and regrated by all good men.

"In those dayes the gramer schoole of Perth wes famous, many noble and gentle men sent their eldest sonnes to be educate there, and many of them were tabled with Mr. Johne Row, to be helped by him in their education. As they spake nothing in the schoole and feilds but Latine, so nothing was spoken in his house but French. The portion of Scripture read befor and after meales, if it wes in the Old Testament, wes read in Hebrew, (for he wes the first man that brought the knowledge of the Hebrew tongue to Scoland, and taught some of his children to read it, when they were foure or fyve years of age) Greeke, Latine, French, and English; if it wes in the New Testament, it wes read in these, (Greeke, Latine, French, and English). He wes, by the Generall Assemblie, made Superintendent of Galloway. He died but a young man, *anno* 1580, (in the 54th year of his age) Oct. 16.

"There wes one passage remarkable in the tyme of his seeknes, a little befor his death; the master of the gramer schoole, commonlie called Dominie Rind, came to visite him, to whom he sayes, 'Sir, yee have many small bairnes, and, alas! yee have little or no geir to leave them; what will become of them? I feare they beg through the countrey. Sir, yee have not been carefull to gather geir to them, as well ye might, both at Rome, and since ye came to Scotland,' &c. Mr. John Row turning him to the wall, lay silent a prettie space, pouring out his soule to God, &c. Thereafter turning himself sayes, '*Domine*, I have been thinking upon that yee have been saying to me; I will not

justifie myselfe, nor say that I have been carefull enough to gather geir to my bairnes. I think I might and ought to have done more that way then I have done; but, *Domine*, I have layed over my bairnes upon God, and the well ordered covenant, and his all sufficient Providence, for we must lippen much to the old charter, *Providebit Dominus* (Gen. xxii, 8, 14). But, *Dominie*, let me, tyme about, speake to you; yee have but one sonne, and yee have great riches to give him, and yee make a god of your gier; and yee thinke, who but your only sonne. My sonne, he will have enough! &c. But, *Dominie*, it feares me ye will have little credite and farre lesse comfort by him, yea it may be that when my bairnes (whom I have layed over upon God's gracious and all sufficient Providence) may have competencie in the world, your sonne may have much mister, and be beholden to some of myne, for it is God's blessing that maketh rich, (Deut. viii., 18).

"The event did speake the fulfilling of this prophicie of the dying servant of Jesus Christ; for Mr. John Row had six sonnes and two daughters; fyve of his sixe sonnes were ministers, Mr. James at Kilspindie, Mr. William at Forgandownie, Mr. John at Carnock, Mr. Archibald at Stobo, and Mr. Colin at St. Knocks.* Mr. John Row, minister at Carnock, had foure sonnes ministers, and three daughters; of whom came ane numerous offspring. Of Mr. John Row's two daughters, the eldest (Katherine Row) wes maried to William Rig, a rich merchant in Edinburgh; of whom came a numerous offspring and posteritie of many rich people. The other was maried to Mr. James Rind, minister of Longforgan, in the carse of Gowrie: (Mr. James Rinde had three sonnes, the eldest, Mr. Androu Rinde, minister at Tullicultro, and three daughters). Dominie Rind, his only rich heire,† he was minister of Dron, and was a verie prophane and dissolute man, given to drunkenness, and many evil vyces, so that he became verie poore; and, in his owne tyme, for povertie was forced to sell his bookes to Mr. John Row, then schoole-

*St. Quivox, Ayrshire.

†That is, the only son of the rich Dominie, who was a different man from the Rev. James Rind, son-in-law to Rev. John Row.

master at Perth, sonne to Mr. John Row, minister at Carnock, the grandchyld to him that uttered the prophesie. And after his death, his wife for povertie turned ane gangrell poore woman, selling some small wares; and often was refreshed with meate and drinke in the house of one Mr. John Roe, minister at Carnock, his sonnes, minister at Seiris in Fyfe."*

Of Dr. John Row, Spottiswood, in his History of the Church (London edition, 1655, page 311), says:

"In October following, MR. JOHN ROW, minister of Perth, departed this life, who for his piety and singular moderation deserveth here to be mentioned. In his younger years, having applied his mind to letters, and taking the degree of Master in Arts, he became a pleader in the consistory of St. Andrewes, (a judicatory then much frequented) and grew to be so skilled in the Canon law, as he was chosen to negotiate the affairs of the Church in the Court of Rome. Julius the Third did then govern that See, of whom he was well accepted, and in possibility to have attained unto some preferment if he would have stayed there, for he gained the favour of all to whom he was known, and was in special grace with Guido Ascanius Sfortia, Cardinal of Sancta Flora, who made such account of his skill and knowledge in the lawes that he would have him pass Doctor in the University, whereof he was chancellor. After some eight or nine years' abode in those parts, coming home to visit his countrey, and giving account of the affairs wherewith he had been trusted, he found the state of the Church quite overturned, and the countrey all in tumult, by the Reformation which was then in hand. Thereupon doubting what course then to take, and minding to return to Rome, he was disswaded by the Prior of St. Andrewes, who held him in good esteem, and afterwards induced by the perswasion of John Knox to betake himself to the ministry, which he then exercised a certain space at (Kennoway) in Fife, till by the Generall Assembly he was translated to the town of Perth; there he continued unto his death, which happened in

*That is, William Row, minister of Ceres. The foregoing lengthy extract is from "the Additions to the Canonis (i. e., the Appendix) to Row's *Hist. of the Kirk of Scotland*, pp. 448-457.

the year of our Lord 1580, and of his age the 54th; a man whilest he lived well respected, and much lamented at his death by the people whom he served."

Macmillan's *National Dictionary of Biography* contains a most excellent sketch of John Row; quite a long one.

The Rev. John Row had, by his wife Margaret Bethune, eight sons and two daughters. Of those sons, two evidently died in infancy, since in the *Additions to the Coronis*, quoted from above, the number of the sons is given as six; but the author evidently meant six sons who attained maturity. The *History of the Lives of the Protestant Reformers in Scotland*, by the Rev. James Scott, Senior Minister at Perth, gives the names and dates of baptism of Row's eight sons, as stated below:

1. James Row, oldest son, was baptized June 25, 1562. He was minister at Kilspindo. He is mentioned in *Row's History* as one of the signers in 1606 of the protest offered to the Parliament at Perth against the establishment of bishops in the church (p. 430); and again (p. 514), as preaching a sermon on Acts v., 38 and 39, on April 10th, 1639

2. William Row, second son, was born in 1563 He was minister at Forgandenny. He is mentioned in *Row's History* (pp. 244, 255) as "former Moderator" of the Provincial Assembly at Perth in 1607, (where there was quite a controversy over the new order established by the Council in setting up bishops over the Kirk, and making them the constant Moderators) and as taking prominent part in that controversy, and again (p. 252), as included by name in a petition addressed by the Assembly of 1608 to the king's commissioner for the liberation of ministers, in order "that they might come to their awin stations"; and again (p. 430) as one of the signers of the protest of 1606 mentioned above.

3 Oliver Row, probably born in 1566, third son, and probably died in infancy.

4. John Row, fourth son, baptized January 6th, 1569. The witnesses or god-fathers were John Anderson of Tillilum, and Sir Colin Campbell of Glenorchy, the progenitor of the noble family of Breadalbane. He received his first instruction under

his father's roof, and made such proficiency in his studies that when only seven years of age he had acquired a knowledge of the Hebrew language, and at dinner or supper he usually read a chapter of the Old Testament in the original. He taught his own master at the grammar school to read Hebrew. After his father's death, the mother having been dead already, he and his brothers and sisters were left in a very orphan-like, and apparently helpless condition; but his uncle, the young Laird of Balfour, took him into his family as tutor to the children. He was shortly made school master at Kennoway, where he labored until 1586, when he and some of his cousins were taken to Edinburgh by his uncle and entered in the newly-erected college. Here his knowledge of Hebrew gave him standing at once. He boarded at the house of John Russell, an advocate, whose wife was his aunt. But after a year a pestilence appeared and the Russells fled, which caused him to return to his uncle's. Returning to college he was taken into the family of his brother-in-law, William Rigg, who cared for him until he graduated in 1590. After teaching school for two years at Aberdour he was appointed minister to the parish of Carnock, in the western division of Fife, and was ordained at the end of the year 1592. In January, 1595, he married Grissel, daughter of David Ferguson, minister of Dunfermline, and they had a numerous family. In his small and secluded parish of Carnock, John Row, during fifty-two years, continued to labor with great zeal and success. His stipend was very small, but he opposed various efforts to remove him to other livings of greater extent and emolument. He was unceasing in his opposition to the Perth Articles and to the introduction of Episcopal church government. He was a prominent member of several of the General Assemblys—up to that of 1639. When he was far advanced in life he compiled in part and wrote his *History of the Kirk of Scotland from the Year 1558 to August, 1637*, which was printed in Edinburg for the Wodrow Society in 1842. In performing this task he availed himself of the papers written by his father-in-law, who had taken an active part in the events recorded until his death in 1598. John Row died on the 26th of June, 1646, and was

interred in a burial place appropriated to his family near the east end of his little kirk of Carnock. A somewhat stately monument was erected over him, which was still standing in 1842. Of the children of this John Row, the following are mentioned in the History: 1, eldest son David, who was a minister in Ireland, and married and had children; 2, second son John, the principal of King's College, mentioned in the Note below; 3, Robert, minister at Abercorn, who married and had issue; 4, Samuel Row, a minister also in Ireland and Scotland; 5, youngest son William, minister at Ceres in Fife; 6, daughter Elizabeth, who married William Gibbon, and had a daughter Margaret, who married Adam Stobie. There were probably other children and descendents.

5. Robert Row, fifth son of Rev. John, the Reformer, was baptized on April 30th, 1570.

6. Archibald Row, sixth son, was baptized March 23rd, 1571–2, and was minister at Stobo.

7. Patrick Row, seventh son, baptized in 1574.

8. Colin Row, eighth son, baptized in March, 1576–7; and was minister at St. Quivox, Ayrshire.

9 Mary Row, fourth child, was baptized July 29th, 1564,

---

*A copy of Rowe's History is in my library. It was printed from a transcript of the History made in 1650 by John Row, minister of Aberdeen, second son of the author; which manuscript was considered the most accurate copy of the work then known. In its printed form (edit. 1842), the book is composed of several distinct parts:

1. Preparatory note by David Laing, Signet Library, Edinburgh, 1842.

2. Biography of the author, John Row, minister of Carnock.

3. Biography of his son John Row, principal of King's College, Edinburgh, who continued the history down to 1639.

4. Account of the mms. copies of the History.

5. The History itself.

6. An Appendix (called the Coronis), composed of dissertations on the causes of church relaxations, and also of biographical sketches of the principal "witnesses" or workers in the church.

7. The Supplement by John Row, above mentioned.

8. A further Appendix.

The biographical parts of this book are replete with information of precise character about the Rows, Riggs, and relatives.—E. MAYES.

and married James Rind, minister of Longforgan in the Carse of Gowrie, and had three sons (the eldest being Rev. Andrew Rind, minister at Tillicultro) and three daughters.

10. Catharine Row, eldest child, wife of the elder William Rigg.

X —CATHERINE ROW, oldest child of Rev. John Row, the Reformer, by his wife Margaret Bethune, as shown above, was born some time during the year 1561, and married William Rigg (X) the elder, before the year 1587. She is several times mentioned in the Appendices to *Row's History*. It is there said (page 457) that she was the mother of "a numerous offspring and posteritie of many rich people"; and that she was sister to the Rev. John Row, minister of Carnock, and that she and her husband cared for that brother during three years of his attendance on college in Edinburg, and that she "wes one of the most religious and wise matrons then in Edinburgh" (page 469); and John, her brother, in his autobiography, in his enumerations of the compensations which he had for the poverty of his living of Carnock, and the influences which enabled him to persevere in his work there although offered better emoluments elsewhere, says "Also he had good friends rich people, especiallie his sister, Catherine Row, William Rig's wife, was kynd to him" (page 472). She died 13th December, 1615, leaving an estate valued at £92 364–5–10, evidently given to her or accumulated for her by her husband, since her father was poor. Her will is still of record (Edinburgh Testaments, vol. 50). She is mentioned in numerous histories, egs.: in "Memorials of the family of Row", in the "History of the Lives of the Protestant Reformers of Scotland," in Macmillan's "Dictionary of National Biography" article *John Row*, in the "East Nek of Fife," and others. Through her mother she was thrice descended from Robert Bruce, and from nearly all of the royal and princely blood of Europe, as will appear later.

THE FAMILY OF BETHUNE.

This family, whose name is variously spelled in the old records as Bethune, Beton, Beatoun, etc., is brought into our

genealogy by the marriage of John Row, the Reformer, with Margaret, daughter of John Bethune, Laird of Balfour.

The family was originally French, and it was there one of the oldest and most illustrious of the noble houses of that kingdom. Account of it in Scotland is found in many books. That given here is drawn from *Burke's Landed Gentry*, edition of 1898.

"Scottish historians and genealogists all agree that the Bethunes of Scotland came originally from France in some of the later ages, but the cause or period of their advent has not been determined with certainty.

"In the reign of William the Lion, which began in 1165, Robertus de Bethune is witness to a charter of Roger de Quiney, Earl of Winchester, in connection with the lands of Tranent.

"In the reign of Alexander II., which began in 1214, David de Betun and John de Betun are witnesses to a charter by that king to the monastery of Arbroath; and in the beginning of the reign of Alexander III., about 1250, Sir David de Betun and Robert de Betun are found witnessing deeds relating to the same county of Farfar. Robert de Betun swore fealty to King Edward the First of England about 1292; and Sir David de Betun and *Alexander de Betun* were present in Parliament in 1314.]"

Thus far there seems to be no existent evidences of what was the relationship, if any, between the men mentioned above, or of how they were connected with the later family. It is left to conjecture. But with Alexander de Betun the known line begins.

XX.—ALEXANDER DE BETUN, then, as stated above, was a member of the Parliament of 1314 at Cambuskenneth. He was knighted, and fell at the battle of Dupplin in 1332.

XIX.—ROBERT DE BETUN, a younger son of this Sir Alexander, married *Janet Balfour*, daughter and heiress of *Sir Michael Balfour* of that ilk in Fife, and their son was the first Laird of Balfour of the name of Bethune. From Lewis' *Topographical Dictionary of Scotland* this extract is made: "MARKINCH, a parish in the district of Kirkcaldy, county of Fife, * * * * the castle of Balfour, once the family seat of the Balfours, situ-

ated near the confluence of the Orr and Leven, has been the property of the Bethunes for nearly five centuries" (i. e., since about A. D. 1350).

XVIII.—JOHN BETUNE, then, son of the last, was first Laird of Balfour named Bethune. He married Katherine Stewart, daughter of Sir Robert Stewart, Lord of Schanbothy and of Innermeath, about the year 1360.

XVII.—JOHN BETHUNE, son of above, and second Laird, married a daughter of Stewart of Rosyth, and was father of

XVI.—ARCHIBALD BETHUNE, the third Laird, whose son

XV.—JOHN BETHUNE, the fourth Laird, married Catherine Stirling, daughter of the Laird of K-ir, and was father of

XIV.—JOHN BETHUNE, fifth Laird, who was born about 1430, married Margaret Boswell, daughter of the Laird of Balmuto, and had, with five daughters, six sons, to wit: John, his successor; David, who was treasurer of James IV., and founded the family of Bethune of Creich; Robert, Abbot of Melrose; Archibald, Laird of Pitlochie; Andrew, Prior of St. Andrews; and James, Archbishop of Glasgow and of St. Andrews, Chancellor of Scotland, and member of the regency of 1524, a man celebrated in Scottish history.

XIII.—JOHN BETHUNE, sixth Laird, born about 1460. Married Elizabeth (Isobel), daughter of David Monnypenny, of Pitmilly, County Fife, and they had seven sons and five daughters. He died in 1524. His children were, John, his successor; James, Laird of Ballarg (father of James Bethune, Archbishop of Glasgow, who died in 1603); David, Cardinal of Scotland, born in 1494, assassinated at St. Andrews in 1546; Walter, minister of Ballenege; Thomas, who died young; George, parson of Govan; James, Laird of Melqund; Beatrix, who married the Laird of Balumbie; Elizabeth, who married Sir John Wardlaw of Torrie; Catherine, who married Sir William Graham of Fintry; Janet, who married ——— Hay of Mockton (?); and Margaret, who married John Graham of Claverhouse and of Balargus. For sketches very full and interesting of the three distinguished Beaton prelates, see Macmillan's *Dict. of National Biography.*

XII.—JOHN BETHUNE, seventh Laird, married Christiane second daughter of John Stewart, third Earl of Atholl.* They had two sons and two daughters; of whom the eldest son and successor was also a John, who married Agnes Anstruther, daughter of the Laird of Anstruther, and continued the family line. He was the uncle mentioned in the Biography of Rev. John Row of Carnock, as being very kind to him on several occasions.†

XI.—MARGARET BETHUNE, one of the daughters of John, the seventh Laird, married the Reformer, John Row, and is frequently mentioned in the sketch of his life. She died before him, but how long before does not appear.‡ This Margaret was sister of the celebrated Mary Beaton, who is mentioned in all of the biographies of Mary, Queen of Scots, as one of her four maids of honor: Mary Beaton, Mary Seaton, Mary Livingstone and Mary Fleming; a fancy of the queen's to be surrounded by a bevy of beautiful girls, all named Mary like herself, and all more or less closely related to her.

Wilson, in his **Reminiscences of Old Edinburgh,** p. 164, says: "In one of his fine Latin epigrams, Buchanon commemorates the choice of Mary Beatoun as Queen of the Twelfth Tide Revels at Holyrood, and renders justice alike to her beauty and to the charms of her mind. A portrait of her, preserved at Balfour House in Fife, shows her very fair, with golden hair and dark eyes. She appears to have been of a happy disposition, and the most gifted amongst the beauties of Queen Mary's court. Sir Thomas Randolph, even in writing to Queen Elizabeth, alludes to the enjoyment he had derived from her society. She became the wife of Alexander Ogilvy of Boyne, who survived her."

Writing of Cardinal David Beaton, in a most fascinating

---

*See, also, Douglas' **Peerage of Scotland,** vol. 1, p. 141.

†Burke's **Landed Gentry** brings the family history on down to the eighteenth century, when the direct male line failed and one of the Bethunes of Bandon became sixteenth Laird.

‡**Row's History,** pp. ix., 455, 467, 468.

chapter, Mr. Lodge, in his **Portraits,** vol. 1, p. 99, says: "His family was even illustrious, for he was descended from the old French house of Bethune, connected by more than one marriage with the ancient earls of Flanders, and celebrated for having produced among other branches dignified with the same rank, that of the ever memorable Maximilian, Duke of Sully. The credit of his name had been raised in Scotland, where his peculiar line had existed for more than two centuries, in the character of respectable country gentlemen, by his uncle James Bethune, Archbishop, etc."

The fact that at least three of the Bethunes, progenitors of Margaret Bethune who married Rev. John Row, the Reformer, married daughters of the Stewarts, carries us into the illustrious Stewart family, which, as is known to all, furnished many kings and queens to Scotland, and to Great Britain after the Union, and which has supplied both history and story with so many and so varied narratives of romance and tragedy; also into the illustrious family of **Bruce.** Those pedigrees, however ,are so long and intricate, that it seems better to give them a separate place, and proceed with less interruption to the general story. See Appendix A, p. 153 post.

THE FAMILY OF INGLIS.

The marriage of William Rigg of Aitherny (4) ante. p. 32, carries our pedigree into the family of INGLIS.

This was a numerous family in and about Edinburg. Calderwood, Row, and the Original Letters, make frequent mention of them, and in Douglas' works, the Baronage of Scotland, and the Peerage of Scotland they are mentioned as marrying into the families which the author is describing.

The earliest instance of the name which I have met is that of Alexander Inglis, Archdeacon of St. Andrews, who was one of the witnesses to a bond given by the community of Edinburg to Edward IV. of England, relative to the proposed marriage of his daughter Cicely to James, Prince of Scotland, afterwards James IV., of date 4 Aug., 1482. He was also one of the royal Scottish council, 25 Oct., 1493, which passed a decree against certain persons in Leith for not paying anchorage and other dues.

There was also a James Inglis, Abbot of Culross, who died in 1531, and of whom a sketch is given in Macmillans' **Dict. of National Biography.**

The branch of the family called **Inglis of Tarvit** is that which concerns us.

XI.—ALEXANDER INGLIS, of Inglis-Tarvit owned estates in the east neuk of county Fife in 1554.*

X.—JOHN INGLIS, of Tarvit, his son, married about 1580, ELIZABETH, daughter of (XI.) Carnegay, earl of Southesk. It was their daughter.

---

*Fifiana; by Connolly, p. 146.

IX.—SARAH INGLIS, the heiress of Aithernie and Letham, who married William Rigg, called "of Aithernie," about the year 1612, as told ante. page 32. The Rev. W. Wood, of Elie, says in **The East Neuk of Fife,** Ch. II., "The estate of Aithernie (which is not to be confounded with the modern house bearing that name at Lundin Links) lay immediately to the east of Durie * * * * They" (i. e., a family of early proprietors) "were succeeded by another family named Inglis, and early in the seventeenth century, the lands were acquired by William Rigg, a merchant burgess of Edinburg.* * * * Wm. Rigg, of Aithernie, merchant burgess of Edinburgh, son of the last. married, first, Sarah Inglis, heiress of Aithernie and Letham," etc. **Aithernie,** named after St. Ethernan.*

Having now completed the history of the families in Scotland who were related to the Riggs in that country, so far as that history has been ascertained, we may now pass to the Riggs in America.

***Place Names of Fife,** by Liddall; p. 1.

THE RIGG FAMILY IN AMERICA.

For account of Ambrose Rigg, of England, and his connection with the original charters of New Jersey. See **ante**, p. 5.

There was a Henry Rigg who was somewhat prominent in Cecil county, Maryland in 1628.* He was probably an Englishman, as the name of Henry does not appear to have been used by the Scotch Riggs. This man may have been the ancestor of a family of English-descended Riggs, who lived in Westmoreland county, Va., and are said to have intermarried with the Balls, from whom sprung Mary, the mother of Washington.—A John Rigg received a patent to 1,000 acres of land in King and Queen county, in 1703. (Book No. 8.)

There are, also, and long have been, in that region people who go by the name of Riggs (as also in New England.) Several of this name were in the Virginia troops during the Revolutionary War, as shown by the rolls at Washington. There are people of this name now in and about Washington city, including the celebrated bankers.

We come, now, to our immediate family, which is resumed with

V.—JAMES RIGG, born in Edinburgh about 1695, oldest son of **Alexander Rigg,** the merchant, as to whom see **ante,** page 72. Tradition has it that he was married in Edinburg, but soon lost his wife; whereupon he removed to Norfolk, Va., about 1720, being accompanied by his younger and only brother William; that, being unsettled and made reckless by the loss of his wife, he "squandered" his means in ill-contrived adventures; and finally found his way, some time before 1751

*Johnston's **History of Cecil County,** p. 206.

to Westmoreland county, where he settled in Cople parish, on the banks of the Potomac. It cannot be told when he made this move, for the old records of Northumberland county were destroyed by fire, and the records of Westmoreland begin with the year 1751, when that county was formed.

However that may be, JAMES RIGG is several times mentioned in the earliest existing Westmoreland county records.

On Sept. 24, 1751, there was pending against him a suit by William Fitzhugh; on March 31, 1752, another suit against him by George Clarke—Rigg to pay 1535 lbs. of tobacco; on May 28, 1752, the latter case is again mentioned; on June 30, 1752, there was a case by John Moxley against him for a trespass; in December, 1755, he was exempted from paying the county levy of taxes. Shortly before May 1, 1762, he died; for on that day Sarah Rigg made bond as administratrix of his estate, with John Walker and William Rigg as her sureties; on May 25, 1762, the inventory and apraisement were returned, showing goods valued at £43—0—1, James Bulger, Richard Jenkins and Thomas Washington, appraisers. In July, 1762, Sarah Rigg, Admx., of James Rigg, rendered an account of her administration, in which mention is made of William Rigg and Winifred Rigg (supposed to be wife of William), and showing an amount paid out of 1598 lbs. of tobacco and £9—5—0.*

James Rigg married, 2nd SARAH (V.), daughter of WILLIAM HARRISON (VI.) of St. Mary's county, Maryland. His children were Isabella, Thomas, Benjamin, and Basil (order conjectural).

Isabella Rigg, daughter, received on May 25, 1754, (eight years before her father's death), a deed, for the nominal consideration of ten pounds current money, to 307 acres of land lying on the Potomac river, from William Harrison, in which he describes himself as "of the county of St. Mary's, Province of Maryland, **planter,**" and describes her as "of Cople parish,

---

*Westmoreland County Records; Court Order Books, 1750-1752, pp. 76, 115, 146, 153; **Do.**, 1761-1764, pp. 36, 41, 56, 60, 112; Fidway Accounts, Book 4, p. 169, 170.

Westmoreland county, Virginia, **spinster**''; witnesses. Foxhall Sturman, Richard Muse, Wm. Saunders. Recorded Oct. 5, 1754, by Geo. Lee, Clk.* There is no further information about Isabella.

Benjamin Rigg is conjectured to have been a son of James above, but he **may** have been the son of William Rigg. He was a private soldier in the Fifth Virginia regiment, in the Revolutionary army.

Basil Rigg, youngest son of James is dealt with by the family traditions in this wise: He and his older brother, Thomas were engaged in merchandising; he became engaged to marry, but before celebrating his nuptials visited Scotland in order to consummate some business arrangements, visit the family, and purchase goods. Returning, his ship was cast away on the Virginia shore, and he was drowned.

IV.—**THOMAS RIGG,** was born in Virginia, probably in Westmoreland county, about 1730. He served in the Franch and Indian wars of the period about 1755; and his name appears on the roll of Major Andrew Lewis' company, in which he is described as being from Westmoreland county, a planter, 26 years of age, 5 ft. 6½ inches tall.†—He served also as a private in the Fifth Virginia Regiment, during the Revolutionary war.‡

On June 29, 1784, there was a suit by John Weaver, Exr., of Benj. Weaver, against him and Basil Rigg: which suit is again noted in July.§

On the 27th of July, 1784, he made a deed, describing himself as of Washington parish, to Henry Lee, for ninety pounds, conveying 100 acres of land in Westmoreland county adjoining the Stratford lands formerly owned by Philip L. Lee, on the

---

*Deed Book 12, p. 155.
†Virginia Mag. of History, etc., vol. —, p. —.
‡Certificate of Col. F. C. Ainsworth, U. S. A., Chief of the Record and Pension Office, dated June 2, 1898.
§Court Order Book, 1776-1786, p. 203, 239.

Potomac river. This Stratford property is and was the historic homestead of the Lees; from which it appears that Thomas Rigg was their immediate neighbor. He probably sold this piece of land in order to settle the suit mentioned above, which was then pending.*

In May, 1789, the Court Order Books show a suit by Thomas Rigg against John Weaver, exr., of Benj. Weaver, Dec'd., which in August was decided in Rigg's favor. (pp. 260, 330).

He died about 1796; for the Order Book for 1797-99 shows on page 148, a judgment in favor of John Heath against Jonathan Rigg, Admr., of Thomas Rigg, deceased.

He married ELIZABETH SMOOT; and left a son Jonathan Rigg, and a daughter whose christian name was Sabinah. This daughter married Mr. Caleb Rice, on March 14, 1804, afterward moved out to Lexington, Ky., and there had several children, to-wit: Eliza, Mary, William, Henry, John, Robert and Carter. Eliza Rice married a Mr. Parker, and was living at Lexington, Ky., in 1875; had a daughter Mary, who married a Montmullin. Robert Rice, married, was a Campbellite minister and committed suicide about 1870. Have no other information about "Aunt Rice's" descendants.

III.—JONATHAN RIGG was born in Westmoreland county, Virginia, about the year 1774. When about twelve years of age his father bound him as apprentice to one George Robinson, to learn the "art and mystery of millwright." But Jonathan took to planting instead, when older. On February 22, 1794, he executed a marriage bond in the penalty of fifty pounds, with John Eskridge as his surety, on the occasion of his presently intended marriage with "Catherine Quesenbury, spinster."† And there is still (1905) on file at Montross, the old note giving her father's consent, written with his own hand, as follows:

---

*Deed Book 16, p. 230. Witnesses to deed: John Heath, James Kelly, George Garner, Henry S. Redmond; recorded July 28th, 1784, by Richard Bernard, Clerk.

†Westmoreland Marriage Bond Book.

"Sir:

"Please to grant Mr. Jonathan Rigg license to be married to my daughter Catherine Quesenbury.

"Mr. Bland, Clerk." "Nichl. Quesenbury."

The marriage was celebrated on the 22d Feb'y.*

As shown above, when Thomas Rigg died about 1796, Jonathan administered on his estate.

From his marriage, were born eleven children. These came in the years, 1794, 1796, 1798, 1800, 1803, 1805, 1807, 1809, 1811, 1813 and 1817. Four of them died in infancy. Seven attained maturity. These were, in the order of their births, Mary, Basil, Elizabeth, Alexander, Edward, Jane and Thomas.

In the year 1807, Mr. Rigg, with his family, and with his sister, Mrs. Rice, moved out to Kentucky, and settled in Lexington. He was a farmer, of the style of the celebrated "Blue Grass" country of that period. His place was just across the public road from Ashland, the home of Henry Clay. He was a prosperous man, of unblemished character, of high standing in the community, revered and honored as a man of integrity, and was spoken of by all as "honest Jonathan Rigg." His wife was regarded as a fit helpmeet for such a man. From accounts given me by my mother, and from reminiscences which I have heard her and my Aunt Jane indulge in, the family must have led remarkably united and happy lives. They mixed much in Lexington society. The boys were educated at Transylvania University, located at Lexington and then the great College west of the Alleghanies. The men and women were both of exceptional personal beauty. Not one ordinary looking one in the lot. They had brown eyes, florid complexions, and either black, or brown, or auburn hair.

Jonathan Rigg died on the first of July, 1834, aged sixty years, just twenty-four days preceeding the birth of the oldest

---

*Virginia County Records, vol. iv., p. 102.

son, Edward, of his own son Alexander. He had looked forward to this event wtih the fondest anticipations, as he had greatly feared that his name would become extinct, Alexander being the only son married. Our cousin, Mrs. M. M. Curtis, of New Liberty, Ky., has in her possession an elegant oil portrait of him. and another of his wife. They are of the same series with one I had of my uncle Basil. Others were executed at the same time, but are now lost. An artist was employed to come from New Orleans and make them, about the year 1830.

Mary Rigg was born in either 1794 or 1796, there being some doubt as to whether she was the first or the second child; in Virginia. She married John T. Hawkins; died within a few days of her father, leaving only one child, a daughter named Mary Ann. This daughter lived in Lexington. She was a woman of great sprightliness and beauty, and was for many years a leader in Lexington society. Born about 1825, she married, in 1845, William A. Dudley, a son of the celebrated surgeon, Dr. Dudley, himself a successful business man, and for a number of years President of the Shortline Railroad between Louisville and Cincinnati. He died in 1869. She died in 1902. They had four children: Winslow, Mary, Charles and William. The two last died young and childless; Winslow was still a bachelor when I last heard from him, and Mary married a Dr. Charles W. Short. on Feb. 1, 1892, and is living in Lexington, Ky.

Basil Quesenbury Rigg, the fourth child, was born in Westmoreland county in 1800. He graduated at Transylvania University, and was educated for the law. He was considered a lawyer of exceptional ability, and certainly was of great personal beauty as the portrait of him in my possession showed He was fond of society, and had an exquisite taste in dress, to which the gentlemen of that time paid greater attention than now. Between him and my mother the greatest love and friendship existed; and she remembered him, tenderly so long as she lived. About the year 1825, he moved to Alexandria, Louisiana, to engage in the practice of his profession. I have still

a letter which he wrote my mother from thence, and copy the same here in order to preserve it, as it is fast falling to pieces. The old-fashioned and stilted style of letter-writers of that day will be observed in it; and is interesting.

"Alex'a., 22nd. May, 1828.

"Dear Betsy:

"I wrote you some months since in acknowledgement, among other things of equally high import, of your very kind and flattering communication (———s, dashes, &c., with all their force of inuendo) under date, if my memory serves me rightly, of Dec'r, of the last year, at which time I took occasion to speak of a matter* about which you have, properly perhaps, preserved a total silence, and withheld even your approbation of the disposition which has been made of my Journal: that sad memento of the days which I would not live over again, were such a thing in the possibility of human choice. But let that pass, and (not being answered) be forgotten; as I have long ago, in my own determination, so far as I am personally concerned, consigned it to oblivion, or numbered it with the lingering chimeras of an overstrained, I will not say overheated fancy. In fancy, it was beautiful, it was enticing, was it not? Pity that it was only deceptive fancy. But the reality, casually elicited, has shown that the cold chills of death are not more appalling—yea, preferable. Seek not, therefore to trace the cause of this sudden change, for as it concerns not myself alone, you may not with propriety be informed.

"I received in the week past a letter from Edward, which afforded me some pleasure, while it imparted much pain. Edward improves, if I may judge from his epistolary style, which gratifies and pleases me, for I have ever accorded to him, in my estimation of his worth and intellect more than the ordinary merit, of boys. I was concerned, however, at the disposition he manifests to grumble with his fortune, with an affectation of melancholly (for it is merely affected or imagined) which

---

*An engagement of marriage which had been broken off.—E. M.

the buoyancy of youth should never indulge. I speak somewhat from experience. Tell him to leave melancholy, ennui and other fashionable **bores** to the idle debauchee, or premature misspent age. I need not say I was and am grieved at his further intelligence of the still delicate health of my father in his evening of life. It has determined me, if possible, contrary to my expectation expressed to Alexander, to visit him some time this ensuing summer; it is impossible now to say what time.

"In the meanwhile, as I am becoming **somewhat** wearied with a bachelor's life, you may look out for me, if you think proper, a fit companion. Edward, among other inducements, invites me, if I want a wife. 'beautiful, intelligent, and industrious, to come to Kentucky'—these are, doubtless, very desirable, indeed indispensible traits, but by no means complete. I may, however, I expect, trust to you and sister Hawkins (for the sagacity of the ladies in this kind of affair is generally pretty knowing) to complete the portrait, and fill up the catalogue, reserving to myself the privilege of suggesting that I am not so very easily pleased as you may possibly imagine from my long residence among the creoles and Indians of Rapide, as I have for some time had with me a talisman of incomparable virtues,—a memento alike of resplendent worth, of life's vicissitudes and uncertainties; nor am I so wearied of my liberty as to yield it up **lightly**—repress that smile, madam, if you please, though you may think that I should constitute but a **light consideration myself in this sort of contract** and therefore no very great advantage could be boasted by either party. Let me tell you (entirely in confidence, however(that **all** the ladies whom I have **condescended to honor with my acquaintance** would not agree with you.

"But enough of trifling.

"In all the letters which I have received since my departure from Kentucky, not a word has been said of Aunt Rice or **any of her family.** What means this silence? Have they removed from the neighborhood? Or is this silence accidental?

Is Ann married? What are the boys engaged in? and what have become of Eliza and Polly? The former, I thought, gave the earnest of no ordinary worth, though her opportunity for improvement was, and I presume **still continues,** slender. Apropos, what disposition has been made of Jane? Has she yet learned to fly? She had almost acquired that power before I left Kentucky, and I suppose is so much a proficient by this time that she can vie with the swiftness of the dove, or that species of the feathered tribe of more congenial kindred, the parrot. I beg her pardon, but she will not get really angry, only pout a little, which is sometimes becoming and proper, as you may perhaps have had occasion (or believed you had) to think. Remember me to the family and such persons as may deem it worth their while to bestow a thought on

Your good for nothing,

"B. Q. RIGG."

Basil Rigg finally became engaged to a young lady who lived in Louisiana, on the Red River. Their wedding day was near, and he had just left her, on a steamboat, after his last visit before the marriage, when by a fatality singularly like that of his uncle for whom he was named he perished. The following extract taken from the "Woodville Republican" (Miss.), of May 25th, 1833, tells the sad story, in part:

"FATAL DISASTER.

"On Sunday morning 19th inst., the steamboat LIONESS, Capt. Cockrell, on her way from New Orleans to Natchitoches, stopped one mile below the mouth of the Bongee, one of the three prongs of Red River, 40 miles above Alexandria, for the purpose of putting out some freight. Being early in the morning, and dark in the hold, a candle was used by the crew for the purpose of discharging the goods to be landed, and not long after, it is supposed, fire was communicated by it to some combustibles, or else a spark fell from it upon some loose powder, which again communicating with many kegs, pro-

duced the most horrible explosion ever known on the waters of the Mississippi or its tributaries.

"The following is the melancholy list of the passengers and others thus untimely hurried into eternity, viz:

"Hon. Josiah S. Johnston, for many years senator of Louisiana, B. Q. RIGG, ESQ., Michael Boyce, Esq., Messrs. Michael Clifford, H. Herty, cabin passengers, and ——— Irwin, and another deck passenger, name unknown.

"CREW—John Coley, of Louisville, mate; John Clark, of England, stewart; James Fulsome, Samuel Landis, ——— James, Wm. N. L. Cant, sailors; Mary, cabin woman; a yellow girl; Alexander, 2nd. cook, a yellow boy.

"Fifteen wounded, who were picked up near the shore or elsewhere; amongst them are Hon. E D. White, candidate for governor, seriously, and a son of Judge Johnston, also seriously wounded.

"One sailor's body, almost a perfect crisp, was picked up below, which is the only one found. The captain, clerk, one of the pilots and eight of the crew escaped without serious injury."

Alexander Moxley Rigg, the sixth child of this family, was born in Westmoreland county, Virginia, May 9, 1805. He also graduated at Transylvania University. Became a business man and farmer, living at Marion, Ky., and afterwards at New Liberty. On the 18th of October, 1832, he married Miss Lucy Ann Catherine Cochran, who died in 1871. He died at Marion, Ky., in 1887, being 82 years of age. He belonged to the type of "Old Virginia gentlemen," now fast passing away; was very elegant in manner, handsome in person, genial in disposition, interesting in conversation. I met him once; when he came to Oxford, visiting my mother, in the year 1875. He left a large family. I have not known all of them, but these, at all events are among his descendants: (1) Edward G., born July 25, 1834, who married Annette Todd, first cousin of Mrs. Lincoln, and had five children, but died childless; (2) Dr. W. Cochran Rigg, who was a surgeon in the Confederate army,

married a Miss Bush of Macon, Miss., and died in Atchison, Kansas, in 1873, leaving two children, Henry B., and Dora A.; (3) Catherine Rigg, who married a Mr. Low about 1861, and had three children and in 1875 was living in Owenton, Ky.; (4) Alexander M., who in 1875, was living, unmarried, on the old home farm near Marion; (5) Mildred M., born March 20, 1842, married Dr. Blanton, was left a widow in 1870 with one daughter, and married a Mr. Curtis, and in 1898 was living in New Liberty; (6) Henry B. Rigg, married, and in 1875 was also living on the old farm at New Liberty; (7) Thomas J. Rigg, who went to Atchison, Kansas; (8) Sarah Virginia, who married Joseph B. Cochran, lives in Cincinnati, has a daughter Catherine, and a son, Dr. J. B. Cochran, who married and in 1898 had three children; (9) Overton C. Rigg, who lived in Moxley, Ky.

Edward G. Rigg, eighth child of Jonathan Rigg was born in Lexington, Ky., in the year 1809. He attended the Transylvania University, but seems not to have graduated. He moved to Alexandria, La., about 1840, and there entered upon the practice of the law. He was regarded by his relatives as the most brilliant and promising of the family; but he died in early manhood unmarried.

THOMAS J. RIGG, ninth child of Jonathan, was born at Lexington, Ky., in 1811. He lived in Kentucky until 1847, when he moved to Mississippi, and there boarded with his sister's husband, Judge Mayes, for about three years. In 1849 he moved to New Orleans; there in 1865 he married Emilie ————, a French creole lady, and died in 1870, childless. Buried in Gerard St. cemetary.

JANE RIGG, tenth child of Jonathan, was born at Lexington, Ky., in 1813. She came to Mississippi in 1838 with her sister, Mrs. Mayes, and at Jackson married, in the year 1849, Lieut. Parry W. Humphreys, formerly of the U. S. Navy, son of Hon. Chas. W. Humphreys, her sister's first husband. She was Lieut. Humphrey's second wife. After her marriage they moved to Texas, where they lived at Austin, Montelle and other

places. Her husband died in the winter of 1891-2. She died after July, 1892, but exact date not known. Had only one child, a son, Parry W. Humphreys, Jr., who married Agnes McFarlane in 1880, and had a son and daughter when last heard from.

II.—ELIZABETH RIGG, fifth child of Jonathan, was born in Westmoreland county, Virginia, on the 2d of May, 1803. She was well educated; and was very handsome, sprightly, and much admired. In 1826 she married a widower, much older than herself, with several children, Hon. Charles William Humphreys. He was a wealthy lawyer, of great personal attractiveness, and of much local distinction. He had been a Judge of the Circuit Court, and was then a law professor in Transylvania University. He is mentioned in Perrin's **History of Fayette County, Kentucky,** thus: "Charles Humphreys was a self-taught scholar; was long a law professor in Transylvania University, and was author of a compendium of the common law. He was an industrious lawyer, and paid the closest attention to his business. He died in 1830, at the age of fifty-five years." (Page 343). By this marriage there was one child, Charles W. Humphreys, Jr.

On May 30th, 1833, Elizabeth Rigg (widow Humphreys) married HON. DANIEL MAYES, the Rev. B. O. Peers officiating. Judge Mayes, also, was a widower, with a family of children. He, too, was a lawyer of considerable local distinction; and singularly enough he had previously succeeded Judge Humphreys both on the bench and then in the professorship.

In the winter of 1838-9, Judge Mayes with his entire family removed to Jackson, Miss. He died on the 6th of July, 1861; and in December, 1865, Mrs. Mayes moved to Carrollton, Miss., where her son Basil was practicing law. There she resided until the year 1876 when she went to Oxford, Miss., to live with her youngest son; and she died in Oxford on the 3rd day of January, 1885, in her 82nd year.

She was a woman of extraordinary vigor of body and mind; loved vigorous exercise of both. Read much of solid

literature; was sagacious and far-seeing. When the Civil War of 1861-5 broke out, she immediately converted all of her bank moneys into gold, and had $5,000 of it in her personal possession during the entire struggle. She bought her store-room full of supplies: candles, coffee, loaf sugar, etc., and had a comfortable store when others had none. She sold her domestic slaves, and her superfluous costly china, investing the Confederate money obtained in cotton, which she concealed in her cellar under stove wood, and sold after the surrender at $350 per bale in greenbacks. Withal she was generous with her money; was an earnest and thoughtful Christian—during the last thirty years of her life, a member of the Campbellite, or Christian church.

By her marriage with Judge Mayes she had three sons, Basil R., Daniel and Edward, account of whom and of their descendants, is given in the section of this book devoted to the MAYES family. Charles W. Humphreys, Jr., her son by the first marriage, was born in 1828; became a physician; married, on Dec. 16th, 1858, Miss Kate A. Scott, of Jefferson county, Mississippi. He then undertook the active management of her plantation in that county. They had three daughters: (1) Elizabeth, born in 1859, who married her cousin, a Mr. Scott, of Jefferson county, Miss; (2) Maude, born in 1860, who died in infancy; (3) Matilda, born in 1862, and who married a Mr. Hoggatt. Dr. Humphreys entered the Confederate army as a lieutenant in Wilburn's Battalion of Mississippi Cavalry, and was killed in 1863, before Port Hudson, La., by a sharpshooter.

THE QUISENBERRY FAMILY.

"The family which in America styles itself Quisenberry, Quesenbury, Quesenberry, etc., has a strange and interesting history. So far as is at present known it originated in the Harz mountains, in that part of ancient Saxony now known as Brunswick."

"Questenberg, as the cognomen of a family, without doubt originated from a peak of that name in the Harz mountains. **Berg** is the German for mountain, and **Questen** is undoubtedly derived from the German word **Quast,** which means a crest, plume, tuft, tassell, etc. The peaks of the northern range of the Harz mountains, being exposed to the moist, cold winds from the North Sea, are nearly all bare of trees. Therefore, one of these peaks which fortuitously might chance to have some trees on its summit would almost certainly be called Questenberg—the crested or tufted mountain."

"Questenberg is said to be a common town or village name in Germany, and a history of the township of Questenberg, in the Harz, has been published. This village, which is in Saxony, no doubt took its name from the mountain called Questenberg; and the family of Questenberg may have taken its name from either the village or the mountain.

"In Cologne the Questenbergs were men of great wealth, and from time to time filled most of the important municipal offices, and some of them sat in the Cologne Senate; yet they remained burghers or commoners for many years. Before the year 1600 that family was ennobled and granted a coat of arms. A pedigree of the line has been published by a promi-

nent German genealogist (Fahne); it need not be repeated in this sketch*; but the opening sentence runs thus:

"QUESTENBERG—A Cologne family which, remarkable as it is, rose in three generations from ordinary burghers to be Barons, Counts, Imperial Counts and Princes."

The wills of the ancient citizens of Cologne are now preserved in the royal archives at Dusseldorf, and from thence have been procured copies of seven wills of Questenbergs, extending from 1523 to 1646, which are printed in the Appendix to vol. 2 of the **Memorials of the Quisenberry Family**.† These wills show very clearly the status of the family during the period they cover. The most illustrious member of the family who ever lived in Cologne seems to have been "The noble Lord Hermann von Questenberg, Lord of Gross-Kolschaw, Pomeisel, Strogetitz and Erdtberg, Court Councellor of his Roman Imperial Majesty."

A very interesting statement is that of Lord Frederick Constantine von Questenberg who, in 1646, when about to renounce the pomps and vanities of this wicked world and enter a monastery made a will in which occurs the surprising assertion that he was "more than seven feet tall." To this same will we owe the information that there has been in the family a real canonized saint; for he bequeaths to his "much beloved noble uncle St. Cuniberte, of Cologne, 150 Cologne thaler, as a remembrance." The Countess Elizabeth Constantina von Questenberg, the sister of that Lord Frederick, married Gundacker, Prince of Diederichstein; and their uncle, Caspar von Questenberg, became the Abbott of the famous Strahoff Monastery in Prague. He was a very learned man, and his biography has been published from Prague several times.

This family of Questenberg, educated their sons at the best German universities, and many of its individuals instituted

---

*Cologne, Julic and Berghish Families; Fahne; vol. 1, 345-6.
†Published by A. C. Quisenberry, at Washington, D. C., in 1900.

prominent religious foundations; however, it became extinct in Cologne before the year 1797.

Some time after the year 1600 a branch of this family went to Austria where they became even more prominent than the parent stem at Cologne. Count Johann Adam von Questenberg was Councillor of War to the Emperor of Austria, and was one of the most famous War Ministers known to Europe. His memory has been embalmed in literature as a principal character in Schiller's **Piccolomini.** The Austrian branch became extinct upon his death in 1752 without male issue.

The coat of arms of the Austrian branch of the Questenberg family were:

Ecartele de or et de azur, au hon de sable. arme et lampassee, de gules la quee fourchette brochant sur les escartel eurs. Casque Couronne.

Cimier:—Un panache de douze plumes de atriche. ecartele de or et de azur.

Lembrequin:—De or et de azur.

The arms of Questenberg of Cologne were almost identical with these, the principal difference being that while the Austrian branch had a dozen ostrich plumes in their crest the Cologne family had but five.

The ancient heralds had a way of punning upon names when they granted coats of arms; and it will be seen that they did not omit to do so when they made such liberal use of plumes in the arms of the families of **Questenberg.**

With this preliminary view of the lordly branches of the old family completed, we may now forsake that illustrious company, and turn to the humbler connection from which the Americans are descended.

This history conducts us to the earliest record that has been discovered concerning any member of the family in any branch. That earliest known member was in 1418 a merchant

of the Hanseatic League, doing business in London. but retaining his citizenship or home in Lubeck, Germany. From 1418 to 1515 (and perhaps much later) several members of the family were engaged in the Hanse trade in London, all of whom were from Cologne, Germany.

"The Hanse merchants appeared in England in the year 879, in Saxon times, and remained there until 1599, a period of 720 years; and they created and built up England's trade and manufactures, minted her money, and undoubtedly laid the foundations of the commercial supremacy which has made her the mistress of the seas. The term "sterling" as applied to English money, originated from the name "Easterling" which the English applied first to the Cologne merchants, and afterwards to all the merchants of the Hanseatic League who were domiciled in London."

XVI.—TIELMANN QUESTENBERG is the first individual of the name of whom any record has been found. His christian name is spelled many ways in the various records, sometimes appearing even as **Tidem.** He was born not far from the year 1380, and in Bortfelde (now Bodenfeld) in Brunswick, where nearly all of the people are of the Saxon race. He was a Hanse merchant in London in 1418; for the records of the city of Lubec yet show a copy of a judgment of the magistrates of London, exempting the Hanseatic merchants (amongst them, Tielmann Questenberg) from the new duty demanded of them by the revenue officers.* He appears to have been a citizen of Lubeck until 1424, at which time he applied for citizenship in Cologne, and was accepted; on Dec. 3,,1427, he paid 12 Rhenish florins as fee for his citizenship.† Frequent mention is made of him in the Cologne Archives until May 20, 1446, under which date there is an entry that the city of Cologne has interceded with the widow of Tilman Questenberg in behalf of the city

---

*Feb'y 14 and Oct. 22, 1418; In the Cologne Archives; **Lubeck Records**, vi., 93.

†Cologne Records of Citizens, C. 655, fol. 36a; Knipping's City Accounts of Cologne, 1. 99, No. 29.

of Mayence—though what claim the widow had against this city is not stated.

However, the point is that prior to that date Tielman had died—probably about seventy years of age. He married SYBILLA VON SUCHTELN, but it is not known how many children they had. There are many proofs that he was the common ancestor of all the people of his name who lived in Cologne after his death until about 1797 ,when that branch of the family became extinct. His home in Cologne, situated on the Steinweg, was called "Suchteln." His son Bertold, in 1445, the year of his marriage, bought an estate in or near Cologne, called by the fanciful name of "**Zu der Lillien auf der Bruggen.**" (The Lily by the Bridge), and this property is mentioned in wills whereby it is transferred from one member of the family to another, down to the year 1646, at which time it is described in the will of Lord Constantine Ferdinand von Questenburg as "old, dilapidated and decayed."

Tielmann Questenberg seems to have had a brother named Bertold, who is mentioned in the records in 1432; but it does not appear that Bertold was ever a citizen of Cologne.

XVI.—SYBILLA VON SUCHTELN, the wife of Tielmann Questenberg, was the daughter of N. N. and TAITZGYN VON SUCHTELN. After Tielmann's death in or about 1446, by virtue of his will she inherited one-fourth of his estate, and also one-twentieth of the dwelling called "Suchteln," spoken of above. By April 26, 1448, she had married Johann Rink, and she admitted him to share her interest in that dwelling.*

XV.—BERTOLD QUESTENBERG, who was, at least so far as the records show, the only child of Tielmann, must have been born about the year 1420; for in 1445 he married, his wife being named Margareth. He is frequently mentioned in the Cologne records under dates ranging from 1442 to 1481, and those records show that, while resident in Cologne his busi-

---

*Cologne Archives; Schreinsbuchn, No. 339 and 348; cited in Memorials Quesenberry Family, vol. 2, p. 80.

ness was that of a cloth merchant of the Hanseatic League, in the London trade. It was he who, on his marriage in 1445, purchased "**the Lily by the Bridge.**" The Cologne Senate list shows that he was a Senator almost continuously from 1448 to 1481.* He had four sons: (1) Henricus (Henry); (2) John, who never married; (3) Berthold, who married Margherita von Blitterswich in 1471, and was the founder of that line of the family which was ennobled; and (4) Goddert, who married Christina Schlasgin.

XIV.—HENRY QESTENBERG, the oldest son above, was born about the year 1446. He matriculated in the University of Cologne in 1462, and probably graduated in 1446. He was then taken immediately to London, to be trained in the Hanse business conducted by his father, to which, as the eldest son, it was customary that he should succeed. The Hanse merchants in London had many curious customs. They invariably retained their citizenship in Cologne, or whatever continental city they came from, though numbers of them were in London, in and out, for many years. Their families remained at home, except that very often the sons were taken to London, to be trained in the business. They totally excluded women from the London quarter where they lived as a communal colony, and no man of the guild was permitted to stay away from those quarters even for a single night. These precautions were designed to guard their trade secrets which the English merchants were perpetually striving to discover; and the cautious Hanse merchants deemed it the safer course to cut themselves off entirely from the cajoleries and confidences of female society. If any member of the Hanse married an English woman he was expelled, and forfeited all his rights in the league. But love laughs at Hanse laws, as well as at locksmiths, and it was sometimes the case that the younger merchants fell in love with English girls, and married them notwithstanding the severe penalties.

So did HENRY QUESTENBERG. He quickly married a

---

*Memorials of the Quissenbery Family, vol. 2, pp. 28, 80.

certain English Catherine—probably in 1467. Giving up all his worldly advantage for an honest love, he seems to have been disowned and disinherited by his father. There are evidences that he began to make his living in England in an humble way, and very likely with but little capital. He seems to have left the city of London, and settled in Canterbury.*

XIII. AUGUSTINE QUESTENBURY, son of Henry above, was born in Canterbury, about the year 1648. The change in the form of the name will be observed here. In England the termination **-berg** or **-burg,** would promptly and naturally be converted into **-borough,** or **-bury,** conformably to the English idiom. The municipal records of Canterbury show that Augustine Questyngbury did begin business for himself in 1690 as a tailor; also that he continued to pay his yearly license until 1510, after which date he is mentioned no more. Probably he died about that time. He left at least two sons: John and Thomas. The latter, Thomas, must have been born about 1500, as he set up business for himself in Canterbury as a glazier in 1522.

XII. JOHN QUESTENBURY, son of Augustine above, must have been born about 1493, since the city records show that in 1507 he was apprenticed to William Warlowe (trade not given).†

XI. HENRY QUESTENBURY, his son, was born in Canterbury about 1517. The city records show that he began business in 1538, as a shoemaker, paying three shillings and four pence yearly fees as an intrante from 1538 to 1543. In the latter year he became a freeman of the city—a fact which goes to show that he was then a man of substance. A freeman was one who enjoyed or was entitled to the franchises and special privileges of the city, and a voice in the management of its affairs. He had a right to trade in the place on his own account. In the year 1543 the freemen of Canterbury

---

*Memorials of the Quisenberry Family, vol. 2, pp. 7, 29, 35.
†**Idem,** p. 36, 37.

were not very numerous. He seems to have had at least two sons: Marcus and Henry. Marcus was born not later than 1543, and was admitted and sworn as freeman of the city in 1564, "for ye whitche he paid not, he caws he was ye son of Harry Questenbery, who was a ffreeman beffore ye birth of ye said Mks."*

X. HENRY QUESTENBERY, son of Henry above. was born about the year 1541. His wife was named Mildred, and died March 18, 1604. He seems to have removed from Canterbury to Leeds, about twenty miles distant. The registers of Leeds parish show the baptisms of his children as follows: 1, Millicent, bapt. Oct. 17, 1563 (died in 1577); 2, John, bapt. Nov. 14, 1565; 3, Christopher, bapt. Jan. 28, 1568; 4, John, bapt. Aug. 20. 1570; 5, George, bapt. Apl. 26, 1573; 6, Richard, bapt. Feb'y 19, 1577; 7, James, bapt. Nov. 15, 1578; 8, John, bapt. Sept. 3, 1581.

None of Henry Questenbury's sons was married in Leeds parish, and none of them died there. After 1606 the name does not again occur in the registers of that parish, and it does not occur in the registers of any of the neighboring parishes, all of which have been examined. The entire family seems to have left Leeds; but no record has been found anywhere about any of them after their baptisms, except in the cases of two, James and one of the Johns.

Henry Questenberg must have been more than commonly well off, for his times. It is known that he left to his youngest son, James, several messuages and houses in Leeds parish, and if he did as well by the other sons he was a wealthy man. He probably died in Rochester, county Kent, some time after 1606.†

His son, John, lived and died in Rochester. A record dated July 2, 1614, mentions "Henry Questenburie, son of John Questenburie, late of the city of Rochester." John's

---

*Idem, p. 37.

widow, Jane, married Robert Johnson, of Southfleete, gentleman; and John, in his lifetime, doutbless also wrote himself "gentleman." He had two children, at least—Henry and Anne, born in 1593 and 1601. This last Henry is first mentioned in 1614. He was much the most prominent man of the name who ever lived in England. He was denominated "gentleman" in legal documents, used a heraldic seal (two wings in lure, between the letters I and R), was evidently a man of considerable wealth; died in Feb'y, 1645, leaving two daughters.*

IX. JAMES QUESTENBURY, son of Henry, of Leeds, was born in that city shortly before Nov. 15. 1578, on which day he was baptized. He lived in Leeds for some time after his marriage, for he baptized two of his children in that parish, viz.: Mildred, on May 6, 1604, and John on Jan'y 5, 1605. He then seems to have lived for a time in Bromley, Kent; for the registers of that parish show the baptism there of his son, Thomas. on March 16, 1608.

"From Bromley, James Questenbery, went to East Greenwich, Kent, now called Greenwich, which is just across the Thames from 'Old' London; and the parish registers show that he was buried there on Sept. 16, 1620. In his will, dated Aug. 12, 1620, he bequeathed all his 'lands, tenements, rent charges, annuities and hereditaments whatsoever lying in Leeds, to John Questenburye, my eldest son, and his heirs, he paying yearly out of the same to my son Thomas Questenbury, for his life, thirty shillings,' etc. Thirty shillings was a great deal more money then than it is now, and was not an insignificant annuity for a boy. He made bequests to his daughter Mildred, and to his wife Joan, the latter being named as executrix.....

"The widow, JOAN QUESTENBURY, then aged forty years, was married at St. Peters' church, Paul's Wharf, London, on May 19, 1624, to John Griffin, of the city of Westmin-

---

*Idem, pp. 38-44.

ster, 'gentleman.' a widower of sixty. The daughter. Mildred, married William Welch.''*

VIII. THOMAS QUESTENBURY, son of James above, was baptized at Bromley, Kent, on March 16, 1608.' He was the first of the name, and it is believed the only one who ever came from England to Virginia, and is believed to be the ancestor of all the family now in America. He came to Virginia, probably in 1624 or 1625. Here he married, probably when only eighteen or nineteen years of age. He had two sons, John and Francis.

In 1650 he returned to England, and settled in Canterbury, leaving his grown sons in Virginia. In June, 1663. he filed a bill in chancery, the records being still extant, to recover his annuity under his father's will. The latest record of him is dated in 1666, when he was surety on a marriage bond. He probably died in 1672. He left his widow, Alice, who was buried in 1678, at the church of St. Mary, Northgate, Canterbury; also he had daughters, as follows: (1) Joane, who was buried in 1665; (2) Sarah; (3) Mildred, who, in 1675, married William Chandler. of Canterbury; and (4) Elizabeth, who, in 1689, married Thomas Gibbens. One Samuel Questenborough, a merchant, doing business in London in 1700, was probably his son.

The mention of this Samuel in 1700 is the very latest mention of the name to be found in England. The family totally disappeared from that country, as it afterwards did from Cologne, and Austria and Silesia; but in America it has flourished as a bay-tree, and they are thousands.†

VII. JOHN QUESSENBURY was born in Virginia, in 1627. The first record he signed in Virginia was by his mark, indicating that he could not then write; but all the subsequent records with which he was concerned are signed with his name, showing that he learned to write after reaching man-

---

*Idem, p. 45, 46.

†Idem, p. 47-52; Virginia Magazine of History, vol. xi., p. 423.

hood. The t in Questenbury is shown to have been silent, and this explains why John left it out of his name when he learned to write, since he appears to have spelled it phonetically. There was no other member of the family about, except Francis, who could not sign the name either and seems never to have learned. In 1651 he assisted in a survey of the celebrated Stratford, or Lee, estate. John's first record now existant was made in 1656, June 27, when he registered "his mark of Hoggs and cattle." On May 12, 1663, he brought a heifer at the sale of personalty of one Wm. Sargent, deceased, and Humphrey Pope was security for the purchase price of 150 pounds of tobacco. In Jan'y, 1666, he bought of John Butler of Westmoreland county, one hundred acres of land; adjoining the Stratford estate, the home later of the Lees; and on Nov. 25, 1691, he purchased more land from Malachi Peale. He evidently owned other lands before his purchase of 1666, but he had purchased them while Westmoreland was part of Northumberland, and the records of the last named county were destroyed by fire in 1710. In January, 1707, he gave a deposition about a survey made by him, about fifty years previously, stating that he was eighty years old at the time of testifying.

Some time after 1658 he married **Anne Pope,** as to whom see under her own name in sketch of the Pope family. His will was signed Nov. 23, 1714, and was probated Nov. 27, 1717. The personalty was appraised on Jan'y 17, 1718, listed and valued at 55 pounds, twelve shillings. His wife survived him, and probated his will as executrix. His children were John, William and Humphrey.

The character of John Quissenberry is displayed in a most agreeable light by the following extract from the will of one of his neighbors, Tobias Butler (Feb'y 17, 1687):

"If my wife should die, I leave my son, James Butler, unto my loveing friend, John Quissenberry, and his wife; and if my wife should marry and my children should be abused then

my loveing friend, John Quissenberry to take them and raise them.''

One who could inspire such faith in a friend and neighbor in his willingness and ability to bear another's burden, and a burden so serious, must have been a good man indeed. This Tobias Butler was of the prominent Westmoreland county family of that name, one member of which, Jane Butler was afterwards the first wife of Augustine Washington, the father of George.

John Quissenberry and his family were of the church of England, communicants and members of the famous old Pope's Creek church (as to which, see sketch of the Pope family) one of the two original churches of Washington parish. The ancient records of this church have perished long ago; but it is safe to infer that the ashes of John and of many of his descendants rest in that consecrated ground. In colonial times it was adorned with many memorial stones, but for many years past its numerous graves have been wholly unmarked, and it is now impossible to identify the grave of any person there interred.

John must have been a devout man. His will runs: ''being penitent and sorry for my past sins and humbly praying forgiveness for them, I give my soul unto Almighty God, my Saviour and Redeemer, and believe myself assuredly to be saved, and that my soul with my body at the general day of resurrection shall rise again with joy and inherit the Kingdom of Heaven prepared for His elect.''

John Quissenbury, Jr., must have been born before the year 1671, for the reason that in September, 1692, the minutes of a court held for Westmoreland county show the dismissal of a suit then pending against him by Captain John Washington and he could hardly have been sued before he was twenty-one; moreover, he was one of the grand jurors of the court at the May term, 1693. He married Elizabeth ———, who took out administration on his estate October 31, 1694, as widow, and had

his estate inventoried in January, 1695. He seems to have left no children.

Humphrey Quissenbury, youngest son of John, Sr., is given a legacy of personalty by his father's will of 1714; and is made the remainder-man of John's lands in case William should die without issue. But although, in accordance with the idea then prevalent, postponed to elder brother, Humphrey got along. On July 6, 1695, he bought 100 acres of land from Christopher Pritchett. in what is now King George county, and subsequently he bought other lands in that vicinity. He died between the years 1719 and 1728, leaving at least two sons: (1) Humphrey, who returned to Westmoreland county and became quite a wealthy man, dying in 1776; and (2) Thomas, who left a son Aaron of Caroline county. From Humphrey and Aaron, descended a numerous family who are scattered over twenty states of this Union and are almost "as the sands of the sea for number," but with whom we are not immediately concerned since the lapse of years and the increase of generations have so greatly attenuated the relationship.

VI:—WILLIAM QUESSENBERRY, Sr., was as shown above, the second son of John and his wife Anne Pope, and the elder of the two survivors at the time of his father's decease. He must have been born about 1671. John's will divised to him "all my lands in ganeral." About the year 1699 he married ELEANOR MINER, sister of that Nicholas Miner who married Humphrey Pope's daughter, Jemima. On the 25th of August, 1740, he executed a deed of gift to his three sons, John, William and Nicholas, "each of them 50 acres of land (they now live on it) "being part of the land I now live on." At a poll taken at an election of Burgess on May 24, 1747, he is recorded as voting. On June 27, 1756, John Bayn conveyed to him, a life interest in 469 acres of land in consideration of one shilling yearly; and on March 5, 1757, John Bayn conveyed to him 250 acres of land in consideration of 250 pounds, current money. His will is of record. It is dated May 27, 1762, and was probated July 27 following. He was about 91 when

he died. His children were: (1) John; (2) William; (3) Nicholas; (4) Eleanor; (5) Ann; (6) Elizabeth; (7) a daughter; and, possibly, (8) another daughter.

John Quisenberry, oldest known son of William Sr., was probably born about 1700. As shown by his father's deed of gift made in 1740 he was then living to himself on 50 acres of his father's original farm, which the deed conveyed to him; and his two younger brothers were doing the same thing. John is on record as having voted at the election for Burgess in May. 1747. He died befire January 28, 1756, for his estate was appraised on that day. Evidently he left no living descendants, for no mention is made of any in his father's will; but he must have been the father of Nicholas, an inventory of whose estate was made in March, 1750; and of Christopher, who was killed at Braddock's defeat, and whose estate was appraised in October, 1756.

Nicholas Quessenberry, youngest son of Wiliam, Sr., was probably born about 1710. He also was living to himself in 1740 on a 50 acre tract, part of his father's place, and had a gift of it by the deed of that year. On April 8, 1738, Henry Ward conveyed to him 100 acres of land on Monroe's Creek, for 26 pounds. He died, leaving a will dated May 2. 1755, in which he devised to his daughter, Ann Welch, the plantation he then lived on, and bequeathed to his father his "suit of Jarmin Sarge Cloathes," and to "the child my wife now goes with" one negro girl; and provided that the remainder of his estate should be divided between his "wife and daughter and the child my wife now goes with." Will witnessed by Humphrey Pope and James Quisenberry. The personal property of this Nicholas was appraised Aug. 26th. 1755, by Lawrence Butler, Nathaniel Butler and Humphrey Pope, listed, and valued at 117 pounds, 10 shillings. The daughter Ann Welch and the unborn child were probably by different wives. The unborn child, of May, 1755, is evidently the same whom William Sr., made mention of in his will in 1762 as "my grandson. Nicholas Quisenbury."

Eleanor, oldest daughter of William, Sr., mentioned in his will as "my daughter Eleanor Bayn," was left only one shilling, a provision which it was customary to make in those days in favor of a child who was not intended to have anything, in order to show that the child had been present to the mind of the testator and had not been accidentally overlooked. From the fact that Eleanor was then married, as her name indicates, and that so small a legacy was left her, it would seem that she had already been provided for. Her husband was probably a son of the John Bayne who had made the two conveyances to William Quissenbury in 1756 and 1757, mentioned above.

Ann and Elizabeth, daughters of William, Sr., were evidently still single when his will was made. They received by the will all of their father's estate, except the devise made to William. Evidently two old maids, still under their father's roof. They were the executors named, and proved the will July 27, 1762, with John Pope and William Dod as their sureties. Ann died, still single, in the year 1779, her will being probated August 29th. She gave all of her property to her "loving Sister Elizabeth Quisenberry," and appointed her "cousin" (meaning nephew, as was then common) William Dod, and Elizabeth Quisenberry and Nicholas Dod as executors. Elizabeth Quisenberry, the other sister, left a will dated May 23, 1784, in which she gave legacies to Elijah Weaver, Richard Weaver, William Dod, Nicholas Dod, Ann Weaver, William Quissenbury and Elizabeth Bayn, eldest daughter of Ann Weaver. Ann Weaver was the same whom her brother Nicholas had mentioned in his will of 1755 as Ann Welch, married again; the other Weavers being probably her children.

William Dod and John Mothershead, mentioned in the will of William Quissenbury, Sr., as his grandsons, were evidently the sons of a deceased daughter twice married, or else of two daughters deceased; probably the former, since Wm. Dod was then old enough to be a witness to the will.

V.—WILLIAM QUISSENBERRY, Jr., second son of Wil-

liam, Sr., by Eleanor Minor, was born about 1704. He married Anne, second daughter of Lawrence Pope. In 1740 he also was living to himself on a 50-acre piece of his father's farm, which piece was conveyed to him by the deed of that year mentioned several times above. He is recorded as having voted at the election for Burgess on May 24, 1747. He must have died before Aug. 22, 1752, for on that day his wife made a deed to lands in which he did not join, and the consideration of which was in part for maintenance. He seems to have left no will. His children, so far as known were: (1) James; (2) William; (3) Nicholas; (4) Mrs. Rose; (5) Mrs. Drake.

James Quissenberry, the oldest son of William, Jr., was born about 1730. On August 22, 1752, his mother, evidently then a widow conveyed to him land and negroes, in consideration of natural love and affection, 800 lbs. of tobacco, and maintenance. He married Anne Deane (sister of Charles Deane). On Sept. 24, 1771, Daniel McCarty and wife (who were related on the Pope side) conveyed to him 60 acres of land on the north side of Monroe's Creek for 60 pounds, current money; and on the 8th of October, 1781. he and his wife, and Charles Deane and his wife, conveyed to Peggy Deane their interest in the land of Mary Brock, deceased, in consideration of 50 pounds current money and natural love and affection. His will is dated October 10, 1788; and devised his plantation in the "Irish neck" to his wife Ann during her natural life, then to his brother or his heirs; also his forest farm, a few negroes and some personalty, to be divided between his brother and sisters. This will was probated in October, 1794, shortly before which time James must have died; and the division was ordered by the court to be made between Mrs. Ann Quisenberry (the widow), Nicholas Quisenberry, Mrs. Rose and Mrs. Drake. The widow, Mrs. Ann, made a will on Feb. 16, 1808. bequeathing one negro man to Gen. John Hungerford, one negro man to Lawrence Pope, and to her niece Caty (Catherine) Dean all the remainder of her estate, real and personal.

William Quissenbury, second son of William, Jr., above.

was born about 1732, voted at the election for Burgess held in April, 1757. On July 1, 1774, he made an allotment of property to his daughter, Ann. wife of John Stoop; and in November, 1782, received from Nicholas, his brother, a bill of sale of a negro man.

IV.—NICHOLAS QUISSENBERRY, third son of William, Jr., and Anne Pope, was born in 1735. During the French and Indian war Virginia kept constantly in service one and sometimes two regiments of colonial regulars in addition to companies of rangers, and to large bodies of militia which were frequently called out. On the roll of Captain Charles Lewis' company of the Virginia regiment, taken July 18, 1756, his name appears; and it is stated that he enlisted in May, 1756, in Westmoreland county. age 21, heighth 5 ft. 5 in., planter, born in Virginia, dark complexion, brown hair.* About 1765 he married his cousin, Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Pope. On Sept. 24, 1771, Daniel McCarty and wife (relatives on the Pope side) conveyed to him 68 acres of land on Monroe's Creek, for 60 pounds, current money. He served in the Revolutionary war, as a member of Smallwood's Brigade of Virginia and Maryland Riflemen, a distinguished corps.† During the war sometime he seems to have removed his family to Wake county, North Carolina, and settled in Margate parish. Probably he was led to do so by the attraction of other members of the family who had gone thither. and by a wish to remove them to a less disturbed region; but his motives are conjectural. On the 20th Sept., 1780, he and his wife Elizabeth, describing themselves as "of Wake county, parish of Margate, state of North Carolina," conveyed to Lawrence Pope 469 acres of land in Washington parish, Westmoreland county, Virginia, for sixty thousand pounds (evidently the depreciated Continental money of that period). This was the same land which John Bayne had conveyed in 1756 to William Quissenbury, Sr., for life. How Nicholas or his wife acquired

---

*MS. papers of Geo. Washington on file in the Dept. of State, Washington.

†War Department Records.

it the records do not show. By November 19th, 1781, he had returned to Virginia. for on that day Charles Dean and wife conveyed to him two tracts of land, 125 and 83 acres, for two hundred pounds, good money. About this time his wife seems to have died; and in November, 1782, he was living in Stafford county. But by January 9, 1784, he had married a second wife, Hannah ————, and had re-established himself in Washington parish, Westmoreland county. From this time on numerous deeds to him appear of record, and several made by him and his wife Hannah. The latest in date of them is a deed made by the two on Dec. 21, 1806, to John Pratt, conveying 60 acres of land for sixty pounds. His will bears date of June 10, 1802; but of course was not proven until his death in 1810. It gave to his wife Hannah, during her widowhood. all his real and personal estate except as stated hereafter. ("This includes the land that my brother James gave me, and the negroes I have in my possession; afterwards I give it to my son George Quisenberry; and also give my part of the negroes which Ann Quisenberry hath in her possession, which negroes, being her third of the negroes that belonged to my brother, James Quisenberry, to be equally divided among my three daughters, Penelope Pope, Nancy Moxley and Catie Rigg.") He also gives land to these three daughters.

Nicholas Quessenberry seems to have been a very wealthy man for those times. It will be seen that the lands owned by him were on Monroe's Creek and in the Irish Neck. Monroe's Creek divides Westmoreland county, on its northern boundary, from King George; and immediately south of it lies the section of country on the Potomas river known as "Irish Neck," extending to another stream called Mattox Creek, which is the southern boundary of the Neck. From Mattox Creek to Pope's Creek lies the renowned district of the Washingtons, and, a few miles south of that, the Lees—Stratford. The old colonial manor of the Lee family, still remaining in a wonderful state of preservation. It will be seen in the sketch of the Pope family that it was a grandson of Nathaniel Pope who sold Stratford to the Lees; and old John Quisen-

berry made his land purchase of 1666 100 acres adjoining it. His old homestead there is still standing. It is a small, unpretentious house built more with a view to durability than for show, and it has weathered the storms of two hundred and fifty years. It is now known as the "Old Quissenbury Place," and is owned by a man named Jenkins, who has made it the model farm of Westmoreland county. In the "Irish Neck" a portion was once owned by President Monroe, and a popular summer resort known as "Colonial Beach" has of late years been established there.

Nicholas Quessenbury's widow, Hannah, was living in July, 1817, at which time she conveyed 100 acres of land to Penelope Pope and Nancy Moxley, describing them as her "daughters"; but they were in fact her stepdaughters.

George Quissenbury, the only son of Nicholas, above, and of the second wife, born about 1785, died between 1851 and 1855; married first, Frances Payne, and secondly Jane Carter, daughter of Lawrence Pope (the same to whom his father Nicholas, made the deed of 1780) and of Frances Carter. By the second marriage his children were: (1) Nicholas, who married, first, Mary L. Grimes, and had children, George and Mary; and who married second Rose Green, of Georgetown Heights, and had Lucy, Nicholas, Alice, and Rousby. George and Jane (Pope) Quisenberry had also (2) Austin, who removed to LaGrange, Missouri, and had two daughters, Emma and Martha Catherine, and a son, Augustine; (3) William Augustus, never married; (4) Catherine, who married William B. Marmaduke, and had William C. and Joseph Pope.*—and died in 1884.

Penelope Quisenberry, oldest daughter of Nicholas and his first wife, Elizabeth Pope, was born about 1766. She married, first, Jacob Vigar; and, secondly, on Nov. 22, 1793, Law-

---

*William C. Marmaduke in 1873 married Ruth Bayne, and lives at Montross, Va. Had eleven children, amongst them, Miss Hallie B. Marmaduke, who now lives at Remus, Va. Joseph P. Marmaduke never married.

rence Pope, (son of John Pope, son of Lawrence, who was brother to her grandfather Thomas) being his third wife and his second Quisenberry wife; and by him she had children: (1) Susan, or "Sukey" Pope; (2) "Caty", or Catherine Pope, who died in infancy; (3) Lawrence Berry Pope; (4) Elliott Pope; (5) John Pope, who went to New York in 1834, and was never heard from afterwards; (6) Sarah Pope. Her son Lawrence Berry Pope married Rosa Goinham and had: (1) Catherine, born Dec. 2, 1821; (2) Austin Pope, born March 7, 1823; (3) Edwin Patterson Pope, born Oct. 23, 1824; (4) Gabrielle Pope, born Dec. 3, 1826; (5) John B. Pope, born Oct. 20, 1829; (6) Lawrence B. Pope, born Dec. 26, 1831; and (7) William Bayne Pope, born Feb. 1, 1834. Her son Elliott Pope died in 1858 in Westmoreland county; he married, first Myra Neale, and secondly, Elizabeth M. Healy, having children, (1) Jane Henrietta; (2) Ann Augusta (Mrs. Henry M. Snyder); (3) Nathan M., who occupies the ancient seat of the Popes in Westmoreland, and (4) James S., who lives in Baltimore. Sarah Pope, daughter of Penelope, married James Jones, and had one son, Pope Jones, who was brutally murdered while a prisoner during the Civil War, by a Federal sentinel. Susan Pope ("Sukey"), daughter of Penelope, married first, Richard Bayne, of Westmoreland county, and had children: (1) Lawreene P., who married Delia S. Rust; (2) William, who married, first, Delia Kerfoot, and second, Amanda Kerfoot; (3) George, who married Eliza Speiden, and had Marion, of Hollins Institute, Virginia; (4) Charles (Patterson?) who married Mary Ellen Ashby, and had Nannie T. (married D. B. Clark); Howard R. Bayne, attorney at law, New York city, who married Lizzie S. Moore; Estelle Bayne, who married Fletcher P. Jones; Frances Bayne, who died unmarried; and Hunter Ashby Bayne, who died unmarried; (5) Washington Bayne, who lived at the old seat of the family in Westmoreland, died there about 1870, married Emily Hill, and had Telula (who married Ro. B. Spillman), Calvin, Ruth (who married her cousin, William C. Marmaduke), Julia, Robert and Susan.

Ann Quissenbury, second daughter of Nicholas, above and

of his first wife, Elizabeth Pope, was born about 1768. She married Alexander Moxley, Jan. 13th, 1789. She left one daughter. Susannah, who married Charles Talliaferro, Jan. 13, 1812, at which date Ann was probably a widow, since she and not the father is noted as consenting to the marriage of Susannah.

III.—CATHERINE QUISSENBURY, the youngest child of Nicholas and Elizabeth (Pope) Quissenbury, was born in Westmoreland county, Washington parish, in the year 1770. In 1792 she married JONATHAN RIGG. Account is given in the sketch of her husband, of their children, family life, removal to Lexington, Ky., in 1807, and of her widowhood on the first of July, 1834. She took a child's part of her deceased husband's estate, her share being about $12,000. In the early part of the year 1839, her older daughter. then living (Mrs. Mayes) moved to Jackson, Miss., with her husband; and in July, 1847. she left New Liberty, Ky., (where she had been living for six years past with her son Alexander) and, notwithstanding her "great horror" of those newfangled steamboats. traveled down to Jackson to pass her last days with that daughter. And there on the 5th of September, 1849, she died at "Montverde," the residence of Judge Mayes; and was buried in Greenlawn cemetery at Jackson.

THE FAMILY OF POPE.

This family is of special interest because it contributed to produce the greatest American, GEORGE WASHINGTON; and, therefore, through it, we are remotely akin to him, collaterally.

In the period between 1635 and 1660, five men of that name appear on the public records of the provinces of Virginia and Maryland, and in the two contiguous counties of St. Mary in the one, and Westmoreland in the other. They were Nathanlei Pope, Francis Pope, William Pope, James Pope and Humphrey Pope. There was also at the same period a John Pope who was one of the sheriffs of the city of Bristol, in England, in the year 1653, and was a merchant there in 1660, but seems never to have come over to America.*

Exactly what was the relationship between these six men, and exactly what were the influences which led five of them to emigrate to the colonies, seem to be not now ascertainable with certainty. The circumstantial evidences indicate clearly that they were closely related; some of them brothers, all brothers or cousins. The probability is, too, that they were descendants of one John Pope, who in the year 1546 received a grant of the manor of Preston, in Gloucestershire, of which county Bristol was the principal city.†

The probabilities are, too, that John Pope, sheriff and merchant, as above shown, was the oldest of the group and head of the family; that Bristol being pre-eminently a seafaring town, and all merchants of those days adventuring more

---

*Barrett's **History of Bristol**, p. 691; **Quisenberry and Other Families**, p. 166.

†**History of Gloucester**, Alkyns, Rudder's edit., p. 607.

or less freely with ships, it was natural and easy for young men, and especially younger sons, to be attracted by schemes of foreign travel and colonization in pleasant lands. A review of the whole situation indicates, as the most reasonable hypothesis, that Nathaniel and Francis, as comparatively young men, though not lads, went to Maryland amongst its earliest settlers, attracted by Lord Baltimore's prospectuses and the great advantages offered thereby; and that at a later date, when the wars broke out between King Charles and the Parliament, and Bristol, which adhered to the cause of the king was stormed by Fairfax in 1645, and the king was beheaded and the protectorate, establishing Cromwellism and Puritanism, set up in 1649, the others followed on after Nathaniel, but settled in Westmoreland county, Virginia, because of the very liberal terms on which that colony was then granting lands in that region to settlers of their class. Virginia, it will be remembered, was royalist in its sentiment.

A short history of those earlier Popes, although most of them are not in the direct line of our descent will at once indicate the grounds for the inferences announced above, and also illustrate the beginning in this country of the family as a whole. The subject possesses, besides, an intrinsic interest of its own, because Nathaniel was an ancestor of George Washington.

Charles I. granted the patent to Lord Baltimore, creating the proprietary colony of Maryland, in 1632. In March, 1634, the first settlement was effected, under Leonard Calvert, brother of Lord Baltimore, by some twenty gentlemen and two hundred laboring men, who located on the river St. Marys, an affluent of the Potomac; and their village was called St. Marys.

Lord Baltimore's scheme embraced not only religious, but also legislative freedom, and his charter provided for a colonial assembly. In less than three years such an assembly of the freemen of the little colony was convened, and opened

its session on the 25-26th of January, 1637. All who had taken up lands were summoned to attend in person.*

Now, whether the two Popes were amongst the twenty gentlemen of the original party of 1633-1634 does not appear; but when the first General Assembly convened at St. Mary's on Jan. 25, 1637, NATHANIEL POPE was one of those who had been summoned. The minutes show that the Lieutenant General appeared in person, and took his seat; but that Pope and six others, planters, did not appear and had sent no proxies. At the meeting of the next day (the 26th) a proxy from Pope was presented by the secretary.* He served on the grand jury at St. Mary's Feb. 12, of this year There was an adjourned session of the assembly on Feb. 26th., but Nathaniel Pope was again absent. At the session of the 19th of February, 1638, however, he did appear; and he and fourteen others authorized Thomas Gerard and Francis Gray to represent St. Mary's hundred as deputies at the next meeting of the General Assembly. Here, we have a transition to the representative principle.

Nathaniel appeared as a deputy at the General Assembly of March, 1641, and his votes appear all through the minutes of that session; also, his work on a committee to audit accounts. The same is true of the session of August, 1641, and again in a special session of September, 1642.

At the assembly of August, 1642, an assessment was made of a tax to defray the expenses of the session; and the amounts apportioned to be raised by each hundred were assessed to the **individuals** in the hundred. They apportioned to St. Mary's a total of 1,260 pounds of tobacco, and against Nathaniel Pope as his part thereof to be paid by him 180 lbs.; which was one-seventh of the whole, and three times the amount assessed against any other inhabitant, and six times that assessed against any others except three. From which it is clearly inferable that he was much the richest man in the colony.

---

* Catholic Church in Colonial Days, ch. 2 (Shea); Bancroft, v. 1, p. 247.

On the 11th of April, 1643, Nathaniel Pope and his menial servants, nine in number, were exempted from military services by a patent from Cecilius Calvert, the lord proprietary. On June 18, 1644, Calvert appointed Captain Henry Fleet a commissioner to go with his company to Pascatoway, there to negotiate with the Susquehannas about peace; and by his instructions Fleet was directed that in such matters as were left to his discretion he should consult, amongst others, with Nathaniel Pope.

In 1644 the civil war raging in England between the Royalists and the Puritans produced some disturbances in Maryland. One Richard Ingle, professing to have letters of marque from the Puritan parliament. seized St. Mary's with an armed force which plundered the province and kept it in a state of anarchy for about two years, when it was recovered without bloodshed by Gov. Calvert. On Jan. 2, 1646, Nathaniel Pope took the oath of fealty to the Calvert government. In 1647 he was sent to Kent Island, which was still in a state of disturbance, as agent for the governor, to collect the tobacco then overdue as revenue.* There seems to be no further record extant of Nathaniel in Maryland. About 1650, he probably moved over to Westmoreland county (then part of Northumberland) in Virginia.

Turning, now, to Francis Pope, it is doubtful if he crossed the ocean at the same time with Nathaniel. The records do not make mention of him as summoned to the assembly of 1637. His name first appears in the minutes of the assembly session of August, 1642, when 28 pounds of the total allotment of tobacco against the hundred of St. George for expenses was assessed against him. At the special session of September, 1642, he was fined 20 pounds of tobacco for not appearing, and later he sent in his proxy. In 1643 he was assessed in St. Mary's. He also took the oath of fealty on Jan. 2. 1646. He

---

*Archives of Maryland; **Proceedings of General Assembly, 1637-1664**, p. 4, 5, 13, 29, 116, 118, 142, 143; **Proceedings of the Council, 1638-1670**, p. 130, 150, 174, 192.

was sworn in on the commission of the peace in and for Charles county in 1661; in April, 1662, was one of three nominees to the council for sheriff of Charles county, but was not chosen, he was, however, made sheriff in May, 1663. In 1665 tobacco was over-produced, and the two colonies of Maryland and Virginia, agreed that none should be raised in 1666; and local commissions were appointed in Maryland to carry out the agreement by destroying such crops as should be planted. Francis Pope was sworn in as one of those commissioners, July 2, 1666. He was again a justice of the peace in 1670; again in 1672; again in 1675.* His will is recorded in Charles county and bore date Aug. 7, 1671; it makes mention of two sons, Richard and John. (Wm. and Mary Coll, Quarterly, Vol. XIII., p. 28.) In 1676 a meeting of the governor and council was held at Pope's Freehold; and Francis Pope seems to have given his name to Pope's Creek which, in Charles county, appears as an affluent of the Potomac River in the maps of even the present time.*

Such is the early history of the Popes in Maryland. The course of the story now takes us to Virginia.

Nathaniel Pope, as we have already seen, in 1650 abandoned his residence at St. Marys; and by the old records of Northumberland county it is shown that in 1651 he obtained a royal government patent for 1,050 acres of land on the south bank of the Potomac river at Cliffs. On Jan. 10. 1652, he is recorded as giving his "marke of hogges and cattle, underkeel in both eares." On the 6th of September, 1654, he received a patent for another 1,000 acres of land in Westmoreland county.

At this time the other Popes, spoken of above, come into view. On March 11, 1655, 200 acres on the south side of the Potomac were patented to **William Pope,** who had a second patent to 200 other acres in Nansemond county, on Oct. 30, 1662;

---

*Archives of Maryland; Proceedings of Gen'l Assembly, 1637-1664, pp. 144, 170, 176; Proceedings of the Council, 1638-1670, pp. 138, 174, 424, 449, 481, 483, 560; **Idem,** 1671-1681, p. 68, 105; **Idem,** 1667-1687, p. 21, 75.

on May 12, 1656, there was an auction sale at which John Quisenberry bought some of the property, and **Humphrey Pope** is recorded as his surety for the purchase money; and on Sept. 24, 1659, two patents for an aggregate of 1,212 acres of land were issued to **James Pope**, who had also two other patents in January and February, 1662, for an aggregate of 1,700 acres more. These later Popes were not sons of Nathaniel or Francis; Humphrey was a younger brother of Nathaniel; William and James **may** have been sons of the John Pope of Bristol, spoken of above.

Nathaniel Pope himself received another patent for 1,550 acres on April 24 1656; another for 1,050 acres on Nov. 30, 1656; and another for 1,500 acres on Aug. 31, 1657. On April 4. 1655, he was commissioned Lieutenant Colonel of Westmoreland troops. On the 16th of May, 1659, he executed a will in which he describes himself as "of Appomattox, Westmoreland county, gentleman," and states that he is about to go to England. This will was probated April 26th, 1660; so he died shortly before that date.*

Whom Nathaniel Pope married is not known; her name is given in his will as **Lucy**; and they were evidently married in England before he came to America. In his will he names as his children, Thomas, Nathaniel, Anne and Margaret.

WILL OF THOMAS POPE.

THOMAS POPE of the parish of St. Philip and Jacob in Bristol, merchant, 3 September, 1684. proved 20 October, 1685. Being now bound on a voyage to sea, &c. To my wife Joanna, for and during her natural life. my messuage and tenement called Noble's corner, and all the lands and appurtenances thereto belonging, situate in Barton Regis in the county of Glouc. The reversion and inheritance of the same messuage, &c. I give and devise to my two sons, Charles Pope

---

*Wm. and Mary Col. Mag., vol. 1, p. 187; **Id.**, vol. 12, p. 192; Ancestry of Washington (Waters) p. 52.

and Nathaniel Pope, their heirs and assigns, forever, equally between them as tenants in common.

Item I give and devise to my son Thomas Pope and the heirs of his body lawfully to be gotten all that my plantation, with the lands, servants, cattle, stock and appurtenances thereto belonging, situate and being at or near Pope's Creek in Westmoreland in Virginia, with remainder to sons Charles and Nathaniel in common. My other plantation, commonly called Clift's Plantation, in Westmoreland, on the Potomac River, in Virginia &c. I give and devise to my two sons Richard and John Pope, their heirs and assigns forever. But my wife Joanna shall hold and be endowed of one-third part of both my said plantations and &c. for the term of her natural life.

Item I make my loving friends and kinsmen Mr. William Hardridge, Mr. Lawrence Washington and Mr. John Washington, all of Virginia, aforesaid, and the survivors of them, guardians and guardian of my said sons Thomas, Richard, John, Charles and Nathaniel for the managing of my said plantations and premises in Virginia. They shall receive and take the rents, issues and profits thereof until my said sons shall attain their respective ages of one and twenty years, and they shall, from time to time, ship and consign the proceeds thereof to my said wife in England during her life, and, in case of her decease, to such other person or persons as shall be guardian or guardians of all or any of my children, sons or daughters, to be by her or them from time to time disposed and laid out for and towards the better maintenance and education of all and every my said children.

I make, ordain and appoint Richard Gotley and Charles Jones the younger, merchants of the city aforesaid, executors in trust, &c. And to each of my executors and to each of my above named friends and trustees in Virginia I give twenty shillings apiece as tokens of my love. Provision made for three daughters, Mary, Elizabeth and Margaret out of the personal estate (they under twenty-one).

Wit.: John Churchman, Wm. Meredith, Wm. Brayne and John Selwood. Cann, 124 (P. C. C.)

(a.) **Thomas Pope,** the eldest child of Nathaniel, was executor of his father's will, and inherited the plantation on the Potomac where his father lived; also the plantation called Cliffs. He married Joanna ————, and prior to June, 1677, moved to Bristol, England, where he afterwards died. His will is dated Sept. 3, 1684, and was probated Jan. 3, 1686. His children were as follows: (1) Thomas, who resided in Virginia on the estate at Pope's Creek left him by his father, who married and died early, leaving an only daughter, Mary, who married Samuel Randall. a merchant of Cork, and died childless; (2) Richard, of whom there is now no further trace; (3) John, who died early, unmarried, his will being probated in Canterberry Court, England, Feb. 4, 1700; (4) Charles, who died intestate and childless; (5, 6, 7,) Mary, Elizabeth and Margaret, of whom there is no further account; and (8) Nathaniel, who returned to Virginia, married Elizabeth Bridges, a widow (daughter of Col. William Pierce), and conveyed on July 13, 1718, to Thomas Lee, the Cliffs plantation, which thereby became a part of the famous Stratford estate, home of the Lees and on which Robert E. Lee was afterwards born. This Nathaniel died intestate about 1730, leaving an only daughter, Elizabeth.*

(b.) Nathaniel, second son of Col. Nathaniel Pope and his wife Lucy, resided in Westmoreland on land inherited from his father; obtained a patent on Hollis Creek for 1,050 acres Jan. 3, 1661; transferred the same to John Watts, Nov. 1, 1665; married Mary Sisson, and dying early, left an only son, Nathaniel, who became an attorney at law. was King's attorney for Westmoreland, clerk of Stafford, died in 1719, leaving by his wife Jane (Brooks) Brown a numerous family whose descendents are scattered all over the southern states.

---

*William and Mary Col. Magazine, vol. 1, p. 187, 188; **Idem,** vol. 12, p. 192.

(c.) Margaret, youngest child, of Col. Nathaniel Pope, married Colonel William Hardwick, an opulent widower living on Carrioman Bay, near the mouth of Nomini River, on a plantation which has long been known as "Booths'." She apparently left no issue.

(d.) **Ann,** the oldest daughter of Col. Nathaniel Pope, married JOHN WASHINGTON, a major in the same regiment with her father; and her children were Lawrence, John and Ann. On the 1st of May, 1659, Nathaniel Pope executed a deed to his "daughter Ann Washington." She was the great-grandmother of GEORGE WASHINGTON.

Before leaving this period of the family history, it will be interesting to note specially the connection between Col. Nathaniel Pope and his kinsmen and children, and the early histories of Westmoreland county and of the Washington family. Just as we have seen that Francis Pope gave his name permanently to Pope's Creek in Charles county, Maryland, so also these Popes gave their name to a similar stream in Westmoreland county, Virginia, and that stream gave name to one of the historic churches of the county. The family, as we have seen settled in that vicinity so early as about 1,650; and what is a unique fact, one of its branches yet occupy, in their own name, the home farm, acquired now more than 250 years ago.

Bishop Meade, in his fascinating work, "**Old Churches and Families of Virginia,** Vol. II, p. 169." says: "I recently paid a visit to the old family seat of the Washingtons, which is sometimes said to be on Pope's Creek, and sometimes on Bridge's Creek, near the Potomac. The farm lay between the two, which are about a mile apart, near their junction with the Potomac. The family mansion lies near Pope's Creek, and the vault where the dead were deposited near Bridge's Creek." And again, on page 162, speaking of "The Old Churches in Westmoreland," he says: "There were three of these—the Round Hill Church, POPE'S CREEK CHURCH, and one at Leeds, on the Rappahannock, Pope's Creek Church lay im-

mediately on the road from Westmoreland court house to King George. * * * It was near to this church that General Washington was born. It was in this that he was baptized. Here it was that he received those early impressions of religion which, instead of being effaced by age, seemed to grow with his growth and strengthen with his strength. * * * Trees and shrubs have been growing up over and around the old site, rendering it more difficult each year to the passing traveller to find out where Old Pope's Creek Church once stood. I should not myself, in a recent visit, have been able to discover it, but for the aid of a friend who was with me. I could not but ask myself and that friend if it were not possible that a simple but durable monument—say a pillar a few feet high— could be placed on the roadside, with the name of Pope's Creek Church upon it, to inform posterity that on that spot stood the church of the Washingtons, the Lees, the Paynes, and others. Among those whose bodies were deposited around this church is to be numbered the Hon. Thomas Lee (the father of Richard Henry Lee and a noble band of brothers and sisters,) the owner of Stratford, for whom it was rebuilt by the Queen, after being consumed by fire, who held the first offices in the colony under several governors, and whose commission as governor reached Virginia in 1756, just after his death."

In Sparks' **Life of Washington,** p. 2, is this passage: "John and Lawrence Washington emigrated to Virginia about the year 1657, and settled at Bridge's Creek on the Potomac River, in the county of Westmoreland. The two brothers bought lands in Virginia, and became successful planters. John Washington, not long after coming to America, was employed in a military command against the Indians, and rose to the rank of Colonel. The parish in which he lived was also named after him. He married ANNE POPE, by whom he had two sons, Lawrence and John, and a daughter.

Bishop Meade, in the volume already cited, page 167, says: "I have obtained the will of Mr. John Washington, which was recorded at Westmoreland court house, and whose

original is still there in an old book of wills, though in a somewhat mutilated form. He directs his body to be buried on the plantation upon which he lived, by the side of his wife and two children." (That is, his wife and two children who had come from England with him, and were then dead. See M. D. Conway, in Harper's Magazine for May, 1891, p. 889.) To continue Bishop Meade's story: "He then proceeds to distribute his property, which he says it has pleased God to give him 'far above his deserts.' After dividing a number of landed estates between his second and surviving wife and children, John, Lawrence and Anne, and also his property in England. He leaves one thousand pounds to his brother-in-law. THOMAS POPE."

Lawrence Washington, the son of Ann (Pope) Washington, married Mildred Warner, and was the father of Augustine Washington, who, in turn, married for a second wife, Mary Ball, and was the father of GEORGE WASHINGTON.

After this long narrative about the early Popes in general, we come to the particular branch from which we are descended.

VII.—HUMPHREY POPE has already been mentioned. He was a younger brother of Nathaniel. Born in England, probably in Bristol, and probably about the year 1625, he seems to make his first appearance in Virginia in the year 1655. He purchased from his nephew, Thomas Pope, son of Nathaniel, 150 acres of land near the Cliffs. and received a deed to it on Feb. 2, 1659; and he is recorded as being the surety for John Quisenbury at a public auction made May, 1663, in Rappahanock (now Richmond) county. The Westmoreland records show that he married **Elizabeth**, daughter and heir-at-law of **Richard Hawkins**, about the year 1668, being then about 43 years of age. He died about the year 1695, leaving a will, which, however, is not to be found, the book containing it having been lost. His children were: (1) Lawrence; (2) Humphrey; (3) John; (4) a daughter, who married, first, William Payne of Yeocomico, and secondly, Daniel McCarty, (who in

1715 was Speaker of the House of Burgess); (5) Jemima, who married Nicholas Minor, and had four sons and a daughter, viz: William Stewart, John, Stewart, Nicholas and Elizabeth Wherret.

Humphrey, second son of Humphrey above, executed a deed in 1719 to one Spencer, in which he names his mother, above; and in 1704 he jointly with his wife, "Amey," made a deed to his brother, John. In the year 1714 he witnessed the will of John Quisenberry; and in 1717 attested the same when probated. In the year 1734, he gave a deposition, which contains much family history of Nathaniel Pope's branch, and which is further described under the sketch of old John Quisenberry, **q. v.** In this deposition, sworn to March 29, he states his own age as "60 years, or thereabouts"—thus fixing the date of his birth about 1674. His will is dated Jan. 10, 1733, and was probated on the 29th of October, 1734. This will names his wife "Mary"; so he must have married a second time. His first wife was the "eldest daughter of Morris Veale." His children were: (1) Anne, who married ——— Conditt; (2) Sophia, who married ——— Muse; (3) Humphrey, who in May, 1755 returned the will, and in August, 1755 acted as appraiser of the personal estate of Nicholas Quisenbury, deceased, and in October, 1756 acted as appraiser of that of Christopher Quisenbery, deceased; (4) John; (5) Sarah; (6) Mary, who married William Muse.

John, third son of Humphrey, above, died in 1772 without a will. An inventory of his estate was rendered in that year. His widow, Elizabeth, married Christopher Mothershead.

VII.—ANNE POPE, sister of Nathaniel and of Humphrey Pope, was born in England and probably came over after Humphrey, say about 1665. She must have been then not less than twenty years of age, though this is a conjecture, based on the improbability of a younger female journeying to so remote a land. She married John Quisenbury, and was the executrix named in his will; proved his will in 1717 on his death,

and was then over seventy years of age. Her children have been given under the head of "John Quisenberry." **q. v.**

VI.—LAWRENCE POPE, eldest son of Humphrey, above, and Elizabeth Hawkins was born about 1670. He lived in Washington parish, Westmoreland county, and died there. About the year 1699, he married the young widow of John Spence (who then had one daughter who afterwards married a Waddy), daughter of John Jordan.* This wife seems to have died early without any Pope children; and Lawrence afterward married **Joanna,** daughter of **Thomas Waddy** of Northumberland county. On June 28, 1712, he and his wife "Joanna, daughter of Thomas Waddy, **late** of Northumberland county. **deceased,**" executed a deed to lands.† His will was proved on March 2, 1723. His children, by the last wife, were: (1) Humphrey; (2) Thomas; (3) John; (4) Jemima; (5) Anne; (6) Mary; (7) Penelope; (8) Catherine.

Humphrey Pope, son of Lawrence above, married Anne ———, who signed a deed with him to Samuel Damonville, June 29, 1736. He died, and his estate was divided in 1744. His children were: (1) Sarah (who chose Wm. Muse as guardian); (2) Humphrey (chose Thomas Clayter as guardian); (3) Mary (chose Nicholas Minor as guardian; (4) John (chose Wm. Muse as guardian).

John Pope, gave a deed Oct. 27, 1738, to Thomas Shaw for land devised to him by his "father, Lawrence Pope." He married his cousin, Sarah, daughter of Christopher Mothershead, who names her in his will of June 11, 1745. His children were: (1) John; (2) Lawrence; (3) Anne (Nancy). who married ——— Tiffey, and had sons Pope, John and William.

V.—ANNE POPE, second daughter of Lawrence Pope and Joanna Waddy must have been born about 1710. She married **William Quisenberry** the junior, **whom see.** She executed a deed on August 22, 1752, to her oldest son James Quisenberry,

---

*Waddy v. Stevenson, Jefferson's Virginia Report, pp. 5, 43.
†William and Mary Col. Mag., vol. 1, p. 187.

of Washington parish, conveying lands, in consideration of natural love and afection, 800 pounds tobacco, and maintenance.*

V.—THOMAS POPE, son of Lawrence and Joanna, born about 1705, died in Westmoreland county; his will being dated February 23, and probated March 8, 1741. He married **Mary**, one of the four daughters of **Samuel Heath**, of Northumberland county, and had issue one daughter, Elizabeth. His widow married William Tebbs of Prince William county.

IV.—ELIZABETH POPE, daughter of Thomas Pope and Mary Heath, was born about 1737; and maried **Nicholas Quessenberry**, as to whom see. She died in North Carolina, Wake county, Margate parish, in 1780 or 1781. Her children are given under the name of Nicholas Quissenbury.

NOTE—The name of Pope suggests at once to the mind the possibility of an English lineage with proud names in it; first of which will of course be Alexander Pope, the great English poet and Sir Thomas Pope the statesman of Elizabeth's time; besides whom there were four Popes, who were Earls of Downe from 1629 to 1688, when the title failed for want of an heir legally qualified. Although no opportunity has been presented to make the examination into old English records necessary to establish the connection; still it is obvious that this family must have descended from some earlier Popes in England. In the Herald's office there are two or three pedigrees of families of the name.

In the biography of Sir Thomas Pope, by Francis Warton, published 1780. it is stated that "The family, which seems at least to have been that of a gentleman, was originally seated in Kent, before the reign of Edward III." Lord Guildford's pedigree of Pope, his mother being of that family, begins with Thomas Pope, **Com. Cant. Armiger**, of the time of Edward III.; and one of his descendants, Thomas Pope by his wife, Grace Sampson, in the first half of the fifteenth century, had seven sons—quite enough to scatter the name broadcast.

---

*Quisenberry Genealogy, p. 169.

THE FAMILY OF SMOOT.

VII.—WILLIAM SMOOT was living in Virginia in 1644; for 600 lbs. of tobacco was assessed against him that year in October, as a tax toward the expenses of a late expedition against the Indians.*

In the year 1650, April 17, a document historically known as the **Protestant Declaration** was signed by Wm. Stone, governor of the province of Maryland, by the council, by the Protestant burgesses, and by a number of the "leading Protestants of the colony." Its object was to refute certain calumnies set afoot by Claiborne's Puritans who were endeavoring to undermine Lord Baltimore's tenure of his province by representing in England and to the parliament that Maryland Protestants did not enjoy the free exercise of their religion under the Catholic proprietary.

William Smoot was one of the signers of this document.†

VI.—WILLIAM SMOOT, his son, married Mary Grady; and on the 10th of March, 1693-4, he witnessed the will of his wife's mother, ELIZABETH GRADY, of Richmond county, (probated Nov. 4, 1702), by which will he was named as executor. His daughter **Mary** was the legatee.

V.—WILLIAM SMOOT, his son, born about 1705, was father of

IV.—ELIZABETH SMOOT, who married Thomas Rigg. (See page 104).

---

*I Hening's Virginia Statutes at Large, p. 287.
†**Scharf's History of Maryland,** vol. 1, p. 181.

APPENDIX A.

Through the lady Christiane Stewart, (daughter of John Stewart, third earl of Athol) mother of MARGARET BETHUNE, **ante, p. 97,** our lineage runs back, on not less than seventeen different lines, probably more, to that ALEXANDER STEWART, High Steward of Scotland, who was great-grandson of the Walter Fitz-Alan, to whom King David I. granted the hereditary office of High Steward of Scotland, and with whom the family name originated, from the office. This Alexander Stewart was, in 1255, one of the councillors to King Alexander III., then under age, and was one of the Regents of Scotland. He was principal commander at the battle of Largs, in 1263, when the Scottish army obtained a signal victory over the Norwegians. He invaded the Isle of Man, and annexed it to the Scottish crown. His grandson, Walter Stewart. also High Steward of Scotland, was in command under **Bruce** at the great battle of Bannockburn; and, in 1315, married, for his second wife, MARJORY, daughter of ROBERT BRUCE, the heroic king of Scotland. Their son Robert, was the first of the Stewarts to ascend the Scottish throne, which he did in 1371, under the title of ROBERT II. Several of the lines of descent of the Lady Christiane Stewart, above, trace through this King Robert II., through **his** son Robert Stewart, Earl of Fife and Menteith, Duke of Albany. and his (the King's) daughter Egidia. who married William Douglas, Earl of Galloway and Nithsdale.

Sir James Stewart, the Black Knight of Lorn, as he was called, was descended, in the fifth generation, from Alexander Stewart above. He was a handsome and graceful young man; and when King James I. died, leaving as his widow JOANNA BEAUFORT, an English lady, daughter of the Duke of Somer-

set, the dowager married him in 1439. Their eldest son, JOHN STEWART, of Balveny, half-brother of King James II., was created Earl of Atholl, in 1457, being the first of this family to enjoy that title; and he was the grandfather of JOHN STEWART, third Earl of Atholl, who was famous for his great hospitality and magnificent way of living—more like a sovereign prince than a subject. He married GRIZEL, daughter of SIR JOHN RATTRAY, of Rattray, and it was their daughter CHRISTIANE, who maried JOHN BETHUNE (or Beaton) seventh Laird of Balfour, as stated above. (page 97.)

Such being her immediate lines of descent it appears that the Lady Christiane Stewart, and of course her daughter, the Lady Margaret Beaton, who married the Rev. John Row, were also descended from a great number of the noble, the princely, and even the royal families of Scotland, of England, and of continental Europe. This matter must be passed over very briefly. To give it in detail would require a volume. Amongst her ancestors of the Scottish families were the following:

1. The ancient royal family of Scotland, beginning with **Eocha,** King of the Scots, who died in 826, and including his descendants on the throne, through nine generations, down to and including **David I.,** born in 1084, on the failure of whose male lines in 1285, the controversy over the succession to the throne arose between Baliol and Bruce, who were descended by female lines. This line of descent included the "gracious Duncan" of Shakespeare (in Macbeth), who was assassinated in 1039.

2. The family of Bruce, lords of Annandale, beginning with that Robert de Brus, a noble knight of Normandy, who followed William the Conqueror into England, including his lineal descendants, through six generations, to that **Robert,** fifth lord of Annandale. who was the disappointed contestant with Baliol for the Scottish throne, in 1292; and also including his grandson the hero and king, ROBERT BRUCE, whose romantic history and noble life are familiar to every school child. This pedigree traces back to King Robert by **three** different

lines, all going back through King Robert II., (Stewart) his grandson, as told above. There is also a distinct line to his sister, the Lady Mary Bruce, who married Sir Neill Campbell; and another to his sister, the Lady Isabella Bruce, who married Sir Thomas Randolph; and another to his aunt, the Lady Christiane Bruce, who married Patrick Dunbar, seventh earl of March.

3. The family of **Douglas**; the first of whom appearing in any record was **William de Douglas**, son of Theobald, of date 1175 to 1213. Third in descent from him was **Sir William de Douglas** "the hardy", who was one of the supporters of Sir William Wallace, in his patriotic struggle in 1297. His son, **Sir Archibald Douglas**, Regent of Scotland, married **Dornagilla**, daughter of **John** (the Black) **Cumyn**, of Badenoch, and their son, **Sir William Douglas**, in 1357, married **Egidia Stewart**, daughter of King Robert II., as told above, and their daughter **Egidia Douglas** married Henry Sinclair, second earl of Orkney. Another line in this family is through **Eleanora**, daughter of Sir Archibald Douglas, above, who married James Sandilands, of Calder, and whose daughter, Marion Sandilands, married Sir Gilbert Kennedy, of Dunmore. Still another line was through **Margaret**, daughter of William de Douglas, first of the line above, who married Harvey Keith, Marischal of Scotland.

The many other noble Scottish families from which this pedigree traces will be only indicated. It would be too long to give anything like an extended history of each family.

4. The ancient family of Angus, earls of Angus, from 934 A. D. to 1230.

5. The family of Cumyn, earls of Buchan and Menteith.

6. The family of Caithness, earls of Orkney and Caithness.

7. The family of Strathearn, earls of Strathearn.

8. The family of Sinclair, of Roslin.

9. The family of Keith, hereditary Grand Marshalls of Scotland.

10. The family of Carrick, earls of Carrick, from which was descended Robert Bruce.

11. The family of Kennedy, of Dunmore, lords Kennedy.

12. The family of Maxwell.

13. The family of Montgomery.

14. The family of Boyd.

15. The family of Seaton.

16. The family of Dunbar, earls of Dunbar and March.

17. The family of Randolph, earls of Moray.

18. The family of Lennox, earls of Lennox.

19. The family of Menteith, earls of Menteith, a younger branch of the Stewarts.

20. The family of Drummond, a daughter of which married King Robert III., and was mother of James I.

21. The family of Graham.

22. The family of Marr, earls of Marr.

23. The family of Campbell, of Lochawe, lords Campbell and earls of Argyle.

24. The family of Somerville.

All of the foregoing noble and historic families are fully enumerated and described biographically, in Douglas' **Peerage of Scotland**, in **Burke's Landed Gentry**, and various Biographical Encyclopedias. **Margaret Beaton** was descended from all of them, her course of descent being expressly shown, tracing through the third and fourth earls of Athol.

We turn, now, to the Saxon and Continental ancestry of **Margaret Beaton**, who married Rev. John Row.

In the fifth century it was that the Saxons began to invade the island, and to establish themselves there. Coming over under various leaders, they soon established small principalities, constituting the Heptarchy, ruled by different kings. Those kingdoms were Kent, Northumberland, East Anglia, Mercia, Essex, Sussex and Wessex.

CERDIC and his son, Kenric, landed with an army in 495. They had a hard struggle with the Britons, with many battles and varying fortunes, finally establishing the petty kingdom of Wessex, which embraced the present counties of Hants, Dorset, and Wiltshire, Berkshire, and the Isle of Wight; but it eventually absorbed all of the others, and became England. Cerdic died in 504, and was succeeded by a bewildering succession of kings for three hundred years. All that can be said of them, genealogically, is that they were of Cerdic's blood, and all contributed to the transmission of his line. Hume says that they had always been princes of the blood, descended from Cerdic. (Hist. of England, Vol. I, p. 37, 66-7.)

EGBERT was surnamed the Great. After passing some years at the court of Charlemagne, he became king in 800. He defeated the Mercians at Ellendune in 823, and in a few years completed the conquest of Mercia and Northumberland. By his military successes, and prudent policy all the states of the Heptarchy were first united into one kingdom, whose limits were nearly identical with England proper. This occurred in 827. In 835 an army of Danes invaded England, and were defeated by Egbert in a great battle. He died in 836 or 838, leaving the throne to his son **Ethelwolf,** who was father to **Alfred the Great,,** king in 871. **Edward the Elder** succeeded his great father in 901; and his son **Edmund** became king in 941. His son **Edgar,** the Peaceable, became king in 958. His son **Ethelred,** the Unready, ascended the throne in 978; and it was a granddaughter of his who married **Maldred,** founder of the family of Dunbar, as already told (this being one of the lines of descent). **Edmund, the Ironside,** his son, ascended the throne in 1016, but his kingdom was soon

overrun and taken by Canute, king of the Danes. **Edward,** son of Edmond Ironside never came to be king; married **Agatha,** daughter of **Henry II.**, Emperor of Germany; and their daughter **Margaret** (called by some historians Matilda) accompanied her brother Edgar Atheling to Scotland, at a later date; and there, about 1070 she married King Malcom III., one of the long line as told above, in the paragraph on the Royal Family of Scotland, **ante,** page 154.

It has also been shown above, page 153, that Sir James Stewart married **Joanna Beaufort,** widow of King James I, who was an English lady of the great house of Lancaster, great-granddaughter of Edward III; and that **Margaret,** sister to Edgar Atheling, and who married Malcolm III, was a granddaughter of the German Emperor, Henry II. Through those lines, and others not necessary to set forth here, the lady **Margaret Beaton** was remotely descended from many of the princes and sovereigns of continental Europe: from the Plantagenets, counts of Anjou and kings of England; from the dukes of Normandy, later conquerors and kings of England; from the Carlovingians, kings of France, including Charles Martel, and the Emperor Charlemagne; from the Capets, counts of Paris and kings of France; from the kings of Leon and Castile descendants themselves of Pelayo, Gothic prince, and king in 718 A. D.; from the kings of the Asturias, and of the romantic little kingdom of Navarre; from the kings of Arragon; from the counts of Flanders of Varmandois, of Holland and of Hainault; from the dukes of Brabant; from the emperors at Constantinople (from Basil, the Macedonian, to Romanus II.) of the period 885 to 972, A. D.; from the imperial family of Russia, beginning with Ruric (861 A. D.) to Yaroslav (1054 A. D.), whose daughter married Henry I., king of France; and from the dukes of Saxony, kings and emperors of Germany, including Henry the Fowler.

It would be long and tedious to set forth all of those pedigrees; and unnecessary, besides, because they can readily be traced in histories, and in the various works on genealogy.

However the line of **Bruce**, the hero and king of Scotland, is specially attractive; and with it, I shall close the history of our family. It is as follows:

1. Robert de Brus, a Norman knight, in the invading army of William the Conqueror; **2,** Adam de Bruce, who acquired 94 lordships in Yorkshire alone; **3,** Robert de Bruce, a companion in arms of Prince David of Scotland, afterward David I., from whom he received the grant of the celebrated lordship of Annandale, in Scotland, which he resigned later to his own son; **4,** Robert de Brus, born in 1124, to whom William the Lion, of Scotland, confirmed the grant of Annandale; **5,** William de Bruce, died in 1215; **6,** Robert de Bruce, fourth lord of Annandale, who married Isabella, second daughter of David Earl of Huntington, brother of William the Lion, and so laid the foundation for a claim to the throne of Scotland, when the direct line of William failed in 1290: 7, Robert Bruce, the historical claimant of the Scottish throne, against Baliol; 8, Robert Bruce, a distinguished knight, soldier and statesman, a crusader, died in 1304; 9, **Robert Bruce,** the great hero and king; 10, Marjory Bruce, married Walter Stewart, High Steward of Scotland, who commanded under Bruce at Bannockburn; 11, Robert II., king of Scotland, first of the Stewart kings; 12, Robert Stewart, Duke of Albany; 13, Marjory Stewart, married Sir Duncan Campbell; great grandson of Mary Bruce, sister of King Robert I.; 14, Sir Archibald Campbell; 15, Sir Colin Campbell, 1st earl of Argyle; 15, Sir Archibald Campbell, 2nd earl of Argyle; 16, Mary Campbell, married John Stewart, 2nd earl of Atholl; 17, John Stewart, 3rd earl of Atholl; 18, Lady Christiane Stewart, married John Beaton, laird of Balfour.

Another line: 12, Robert Stewart, Duke of Albany, **above;** 13, Margaret Stewart, daughter, married John Stewart, Lord of Lorn; 14, John Stewart, Lord of Lorn; 15, Isabella Stewart, married Sir Colin Campbell, 1st earl of Argyle above, thus giving to their descendants three Bruce lines.

Another line: 11, Robert II., king of Scotland, above;

12, Egidia Stewart, his daughter, married William Douglas; 13, Egidia Douglas, married Henry Sinclair, 2nd earl of Orkney; 14, William Sinclair, 3rd earl of Orkney; 15, Eleonora Sinclair, married John Stewart, 1st earl of Atholl; 16, John Stewart, 2nd earl of Atholl, married Lady Mary Campbell, above.

There are two other Bruce lines, which, however, do not trace through King Robert; they are: 7, Robert Bruce, the rival of Baliol, as above; 8. Christiane Bruce, his daughter, married Patrick Dunbar, 7th earl of March; 9, Patrick, 8th earl; 10, Patrick, 9th earl; 11, George Dunbar, 10th earl of March, married Agnes Randolph; 12, Janet Dunbar, married Sir John Seton; 13, Sir William Seton; 14, Catherine Seton, married Herbert Maxwell; 15, Catherine Maxwell, married Sir Gilbert Kennedy; 16, John Kennedy, 2nd lord; 17, Elizabeth Kennedy, married Sir John Rattray; 18, Grizel Rattray, married John Stewart, 3rd earl of Atholl; 19, Lady Christiane Stewart, above.

And; 8, Robert Bruce, above; 9, Isabella Bruce, his daughter, sister to King Robert, married Thomas Randolph; 10, Agnes Randolph, married George Dunbar, 10th earl of March, above.

In conclusion: and to bring all of the foregoing lines, from Lady Christiane (Stewart) Beaton, down to date:

18. Lady Margaret Beaton; married Rev. John Row.
19. Catherine Row, married William Rigg, the elder.
20. William Rigg, of Aitherney, married Sarah Inglis.
21. James Rigg, married Helen Akenhead.
22. Alexander Rigg, goldsmith, wife's name unknown.
23. James Rigg, emigrated to Virginia, about 1720.
24. Thomas Rigg, married Elizabeth Smoot.
25. Jonathan Rigg, married Catherine Quesenbury.
26. Elizabeth Rigg, married Daniel Mayes.
27. Edward Mayes, married Frances E. Lamar.

GENEALOGY OF THE FAMILY

—OF—

LONGSTREET

—WITH—

ITS RELATED FAMILIES

—OF—

VAN LIEWEN, LANEN VAN PELT, VAN LAER, VERPLANCK, WOOLEY, POTTER, TUCKER, FITZRANDOLPH, DE LANGTON, BLOSSOM, DENNIS, MOORE, SEABROOK, GROVER, LAWRENCE, STILWELL, VAN DYCK, COWARD, THROCKMORTON, STOUT, VAN PRINTZ, BRITTON, PARKE, ELMSLEY, HAWKINS, AND OTHERS.

COMPILED AND WRITTEN FOR PRIVATE INFORMATION.

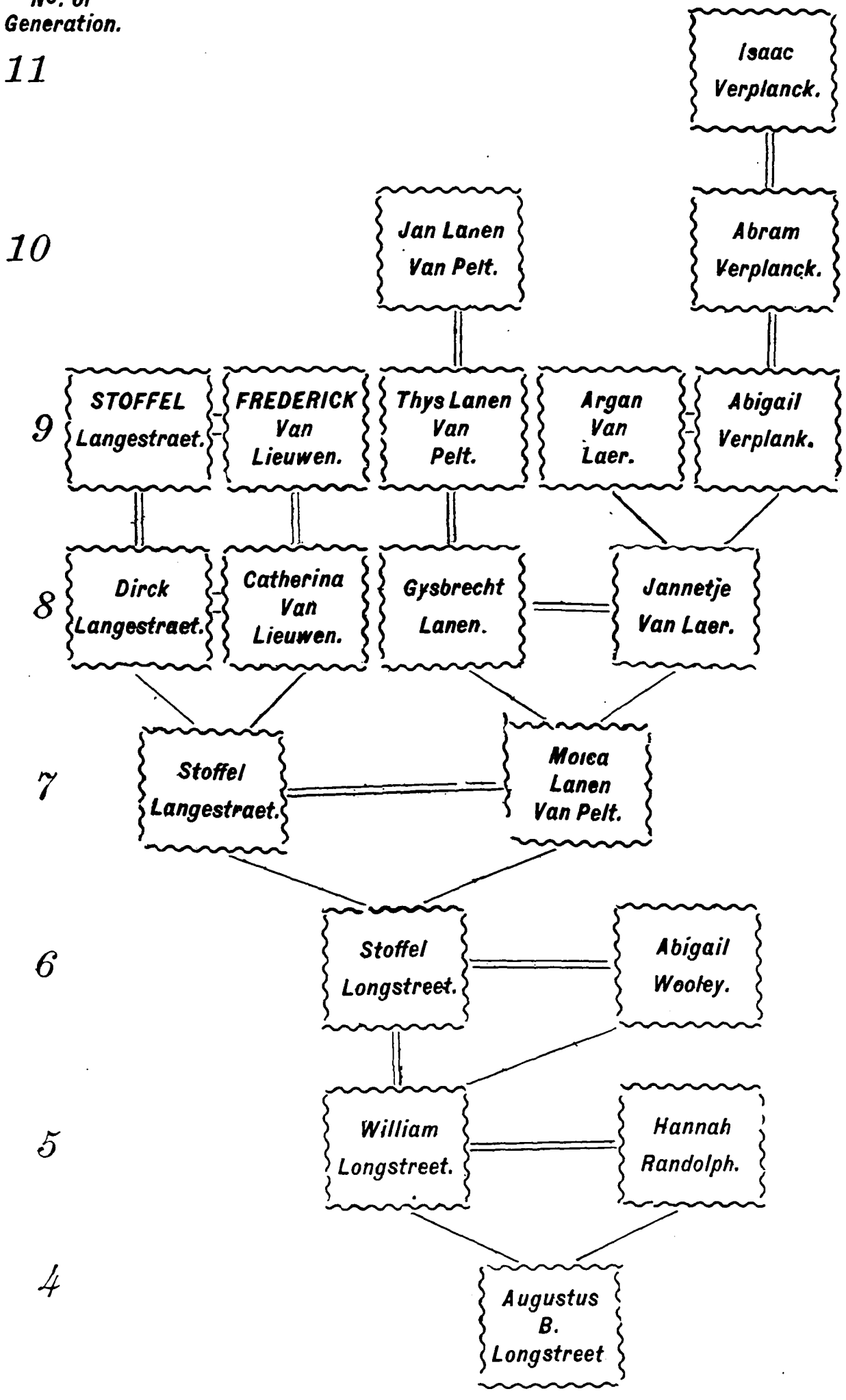
—BY—

EDWARD MAYES,

OF JACKSON, MISS.

SUBJECT TO CORRECTIONS.

TABULATED PEDIGREE—Longstreet.



THE FAMILY OF LONGSTREET.

The family of LONGSTREET, with the related families of VAN LIEUWEN and LANEN VAN PELT, immigrated from the Netherlands to the Dutch colony of New Netherlands, at intervals from 1652 to 1663. It is well, therefore, in an account of the lives of these old people, to give a short view of the country from which they came, and of the colony where they settled.

"The Netherlands, or Low Countries, denoted, when first spoken of in history, the whole plain extending from the foot of the Vosges and the Ardennes to the North Sea, and comprised not only the present kingdom of the Netherlands, but also Belgium and the northernmost parts of France. It was inhabited by three distinct though kindred tribes—the Frisians, to the north; the Batavians, of Germanic stock, in the centre; and the Belgae, of the Gallic stock, to the south. The Belgae were subjugated by Cæsar; the Batavians were at first allies of Rome, but after the unsuccessful attempt of Claudius Civilis in 67 A. D., to unite the Batavian communities into an organized empire, they too were conquered by the Romans. The Frisians submitted after repeated defeats and rebellions. In 357 the Batavians are spoken of as forming part of the Roman army in the battle of Strasbourg against the Germans, and as displaying great valor. But after this time their name disappears from history. The Belgae gave way to the Franks; the Saxons pushed onward from the east; new, though kindred tribes, took possession of the soil; only the Frisians withstood.

"On the establishment of the great Frankish empire under the Carlovingians the whole plain was incorporated, and the population christianized. But by the division of the empire of Charlemagne the country was divided, the southern part falling to France, the center to Lothringia, and the northern to Germany; and for centuries the different parts followed the different destinies of the main bodies to which they belonged.

"Meanwhile the feudal system got a foothold in the country. Dukedoms, Brabant, Limburg, Luxemburg; countships, Artois, Flanders, Holland; bishoprics, Mechlin, Utrecht, etc,

were formed ,and the remote position of the country made the feudal lords more independent of the royal or imperial power here than any where else. On the other hand, the situation on the ocean and the mouths of the great rivers invited to commerce, and alongside of the feudal lordships flourishing cities grew up, and surrounded themselves with strong fortifications.

"By a marriage, the countship of Flanders became united to Burgundy in 1384; and subsequently the Burgundian dukes succeeded, partly by force, partly by craft, in gaining possession of the whole country, which they governed well. By another marriage the Netherlands, with the other Burgundian dominions, came into possession of the house of Hapsburg in 1477 ,and Charles V. took a great interest in the development of Dutch industry and commerce. By the division of his empire between Austria and Spain, the Netherlands fell to Spain; and it was a good consequence of this combination, so fatal in other respects, that the Dutch retained their full share in the new commerce which was opened up by the discovery of America and the establishment of the Spaniards in the East Indies. On the whole, it was not so much the interests of the two countries which clashed as the differing characters of the people and its ruler.

"The Reformation made a deep impression and spread widely in the Netherlands and Phillip II determined to root it out. The result was a war which lasted over eighty years (1566-1648), and ended with the humiliation, not to say the ruin, of Spain, and the establishment of the Netherlands as one of the principal powers of Europe. The salient points of this struggle were, the formation at Utrecht (Jan. 23, 1579) of a union between the seven northern provinces, Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, Friesland, Groningen, Overyssel and Gelderland, and the recognition by Spain of this union by the armistice of twelve years concluded in 1609. By the peace of Westphalia (1648) the independence of the republic of the United Provinces was formally acknowledged, while the southern provinces, nearly corresponding to the present kingdom of Belgium, remained with Spain, and within the Roman Catholic church.

"The prosperity of the young state was prodigious. For about a century it was absolute master of the sea. It crushed

the Spaniards and acquired possessions in America and the East Indies. It checked the Portugese and kept down the English. After the battle of Goodwin Sands (Nov. 29, 1652) its admiral, Van Tromp, paraded a broom at his mast head along the English coast, as a token that he had swept the channel; and in June 1667 De Ruyter sailed up the Thames and blockaded the port of London. In the Baltic also the Netherlands became perfect masters by the Peace of Copenhagen (1660), by which the Swedes held the one coast of the Sound and the Danes the other, thus leaving the course tolerably easy for the Dutch. At the same time that they actually held in their hands the commerce of the world, their achievements in science (philology theology, natural philosophy) and art (painting) gained the admiration of all Europe. Their resistance to the arrogance of Louis XIV. was their greatest glory. After that period the importance of the republic gradually declined, not because its activity and prosperty really declined, but simply because it was superseded by England."

The New Netherlands.—It will be remembered that the course of the long and bitter war between Spain and the United Provinces was interrupted by an armistice of twelve years, effected in 1609. In September of that year, "Hendrick Hudson, a navigator in the service of the States General of Holland," discovered the Bay of New York, "and ascended both it and the Hudson River to a point a little below Albany. On his return ,landing in England, he despatched to Holland an account of his discoveries." In the following year (1610) some merchants of Amsterdam sent a small vessel to the Hudson River to trade with the Indians for furs, which, it is well known, continued for a number of years to be the principal object of commercial attraction to this part of the new world. In 1613, six years after the English settlement at Jamestown, and seven years before that at Plymouth, two small trading forts were built on the Hudson River, and four houses erected on Manhattan Island. In 1614 an expedition consisting of five vessels was sent out by the States General to explore this region. These explorers ran along the whole length of Long Island, ascended the strait now known as the East River, entered the Sound, and also passed up the Hudson, and along the Jer-

sey coast to the Delaware River, which they ascended for some distance. In October 1614 the States General granted to the explorers the exclusive right to trade between the Delaware and Connecticut Rivers for three years from that date. In 1615 a fort and trading house were erected just below the present site of Albany, another on the southwest point of Manhattan Island and called New Amsterdam; and messengers were dispatched to the Indian tribes to induce them to trade with the company, which had organized as the United New Netherlands company. On the expiration of their grant, the States General refused to renew it; but they continued to trade thither until about 1623 or 1624, when the Dutch West India Company, a powerful mercantile association chartered in 1621, took possession of the lands temporarily granted to their predecessors. In 1623 it sent a ship, under the command of Cornelius Jacobse Mey, with settlers fully provided with means of subsistence, and with articles of trade, which ,going up South (or Delaware) river fifteen leagues from its mouth, to the site of the present town of Gloucester ,N. Jersey ,about four miles below Philadelphia, Mey there erected Fort Nassau, the first European settlement in that region. In the same year, Fort Orange was established where Albany now stands. The whole colony received the name of *New Netherlands;* its limits embracing substantially the states of New Jersey and Delaware, and the eastern portion of New York. It was divided, geographically and politically, into two sections; one about the Delaware river, the other about the Hudson.

In 1624 Peter Minuit was appointed Director of the New Netherlands; and he soon brought over colonists, who settled on Long Island. Staten Island and Manhattan Island were purchased from the Indians, the latter for $24. Up to 1629 the settlements were simply trading establishments. In that year, however, the council of the West India Company took the remarkable step of granting to certain individuals extensive seignories, or great tracts of land with feudal rights over the lives and persons of their subjects.

Minuit's administration came to an end in 1632, when he was succeeded by Wouter van Twiller. This director extended the limits of the colonies. He planted a new settlement on

the Connecticut River, at the site of Hartford, erected a fort there, and furthered the interests of the company. But the company's interests were not those of the people. The trading post over-shadowed the colony. For a number of years, the history of New Netherlands had been "more or less a history of the acts of the director, who proceeded more like the agent of a great commercial institution than the ruler of a vast province. He assumed to be the head of the agency, and all the other inhabitants of the colony were either his servants or his tenants. The absorption for their own benefit, of the most fertile lands by officers of the company had naturally tended to prevent actual settlers from coming to New Netherlands, and the company itself had thus far failed to send over colonists as required by the charter." The attention of the Dutch government was drawn to the condition of the colony. "A short investigation compelled them to announce officially that the colony was retrograding, its population decreasing, and that it required a change in the administration of its affairs." This step resulted, in 1637, in the appointment of a new Director, William Kieft; in overthrowing the monopoly of the American trade enjoyed by the company since 1623; and in opening, not only the trade, but also the cultivation of the soil, under certain conditions, to every immigrant, denizen or foreigner. This revolution was not unaccompanied by troubles; for Kieft's administration of eight years was one of constant turbulence, and of trouble with the colonists, with the Indians, and with the English settlers in Connecticut and on the eastern part of Long Island. Still, the new order of things gave to the drooping colony a fresh lease of life. Its population, hitherto only transient, as it consisted mainly of the company's servants who returned to Europe at the expiration of their respective terms, now became permanent; whole colonies coming to escape the insupportable government of New England, servants who had obtained their liberty in Maryland and Virginia availing themselves of the opportunity to make use of the experience acquired on the tobacco plantations of their English masters, wealthy individuals of the more educated classes emigrating with their families and importing large quantities of stock, and the peasant

farmers of continental Europe seeking freehold homes on the banks of the Hudson, and on Long Island, which they could not acquire in the land of their birth. These all flocked to New Netherlands, and gave to New Amsterdam something of its present cosmopolitan character; for Father Jogues found there in 1643 eighteen different nationalities represented by its population."

In 1645 Pietrus Stuyvesant was appointed Director in the place of Kieft. For nineteen years he ruled the colony with great ability, albeit under many difficulties. An English invasion and conquest terminated his administration; for, as may be supposed, it was not without a struggle that England would submit to this plantation of a Dutch colony between her own settlements, and on territory claimed by her.

In 1497 the Cabots, father and son, under an English commission had explored the coast from Newfoundland to Florida. From 1584 to 1590 Sir Walter Raleigh, under a patent from Queen Elizabeth, had attempted settlements in Virginia; and in 1606 James I. had granted patents for North and South Virginia, extending from the southern boundary of North Carolina to the northern boundary of Maine, and under which the colonies at Jamestown and Plymouth had been planted. In 1613 a band of Englishmen from Virginia had attempted to drive the Dutch from the Hudson River. In 1627 Governor Bradford, of the Plymouth colony wrote to the Dutch colonial government, most earnestly asserting the right of the English to the territory occupied by the Dutch, and urging the latter to clear their title, "for otherwise," he said ,"it will be harder and with more difficulty obtained hereafter, and perhaps not without blows." In 1640 a number of emigrants from New Haven colony settled on the left shore of the Delaware; and in the same year, English colonists, basing their claims on a grant made by the Plymouth colony in 1635 of the whole of Long Island to the Earl of Stirling, settled in the present county of Suffolk, on that island, and resisted all efforts of the Dutch to drive them off.

So it was, that in the year 1664 Charles II. resolved upon the reduction of New Netherlands. By his royal grant he divided it into the two proprietary English colonies of New York and

New Jersey, giving the whole to his brother, the Duke of York. Without any formal declaration of war with Holland, Sir Robert Carr, Col. Richard Nicholls, and some others, with a small fleet and some land forces, were sent over to take possession of the territory. This expedition arrived before New Amsterdam in the latter part of the year (1664). Stuyvesant, the Dutch Governor, though a brave soldier, was, on account of the defenceless state of the place, obliged to surrender. Sir Robert Carr, with two frigates, was sent to compel the submission of the colony on the Delaware; which he effected with the expenditure of two barrels of powder and twenty shot.

The colony being thus reduced, Col. Nicholls remained Governor until 1668, when Colonel Francis Lovelace succeeded him. In August 1673 the colony was recaptured by the Dutch; but in the February following, was restored to the English, and permanently, by treaty.

Long Island, or "Lange Eylandt", as the Dutch called it, was first settled in the spring of 1625, during the Directorship of Peter Minuit, and under his auspices. A number of Walloons, compelled by Spanish intolerance to leave their homes, went over to Long Island, and settled where Wallabout (*Wahlebocht, or bay of the foreigners*) now in the city of Brooklyn, still reminds us of the origin of its first colonizers. These people seem to have been squatters on Indian lands, and their settlement did not expand. The island was then occupied by about fifteen tribes or settlements of Indians, and was a great manufactory of wampum from the abundance of quahog or hardshelled clams. The more material and fruitful European settlements began later; by the Dutch, at Gowanus (a village one mile south of Brooklyn) in 1636; by the English, forging downward from New England, in Suffolk Co., in 1640. The first land grant or the Island was by purchase from the Indians in 1636, by Jaques Bentyn and William Adrianse Bennett, of 690 acres at Gowanus.

The settlers on the island, as indeed all the Dutch colonists, were possessed by a strong love for the fatherland; and they gave names to their settlements similar to those in the old country. Those at New York gave to it the name of New Amsterdam. Those on Long Island gave to their settlements

the names of Amersfoort, Breukelen. Midwoud, New Utrecht, Gravezande, etc.

From the proximity of these regions with New Amsterdam, the establishment of which as a trading post we have seen so early as 1613, it was to be expected that the settlement of the west end of the island would proceed with rapidity and permanency. But the desultory manner in which the settlements were commenced, without union of counsel or concert of action, necessarily rendered their progress slow, and makes it extremely difficult to ascertain the true date of their origin. The fact is, that for a number of years the scattered inhabitants of the whole west end were dependent on New Amsterdam for all their civil and ecclesiastical privileges. All the magistrates who exercised authority among them received appointment directly from the Director. The people crossed over the East River, and attended divine worship in New Amsterdam.

The earliest existence of anything like a municipal organization, in any of these towns, of which we have evidence, is that of Breukelen in 1646. The settlement of Flatbush, which they called Midwout (Middle-woods) was probably commenced as early as any of the towns in Kings county, but, as with the others, without any direct efforts to establish a town.

The geography of that region, so far as it concerns us, and as it was finally developed in the period from 1650 to 1670, was as follows: Breukelen (Brooklyn) was immediately opposite to New Amsterdam, across East River; one mile south of that lay Gowanus; a little west of south, at the western extremity of the island, and on the Narrows, was New Utrecht, about four miles from Brooklyn; and Gravesend was four or five miles further south. Four miles south, southeast from Brooklyn was Flatbush, or Midwout and three miles further on in the same direction lay Amersfoort, or Flatlands. Jamaica was 12 miles east from Brooklyn. Thus it will be seen that these villages were near to each other; only two to four miles between some, and twenty miles covering the greatest distance between any of them.

We have full data of the establishment and progress of New Utrecht, and will go into them somewhat extensively, as a typical town, affording a view of the characteristics of these

remarkable people; a people who have most profoundly effected the American institutions and nature. To prevent confusion, and secure clearness of view, we shall consider the ecclesiastical history of the town distinct from the temporal.

With their habits of industry and order, the early Dutch brought over also their principles and faith. They trusted in God; and they introduced into the country of their adoption the same high standard of religious culture by which they had been carefully reared at home. Jehovah was acknowledged and worshiped by them. So soon as they had formed a settlement, they sought to organize a church, and to erect a building wherein they might worship God. Until 1654 those on Long Island attended on the worship in New Amsterdam; but in that year Reformed Dutch churches were organized at Flatbush (Midwout) and Flatlands (Amersfoort), the Rev. Mr. Megapolensis and a committee being sent over to Flatbush for that purpose, on the 9th of February. The first Dutch minister *settled* on Long Island was Rev. Johannes Theodorus Polhemus, a former missionary to Brazil, and a minister of great zeal. He was authorized by Governor Stuyvesant, October 13, 1654, to preach in Flatlands, Flatbush and Brooklyn.

On the 15th of December, 1654, the governor appointed Rev. Mr. Megapolensis, John Snediger and John Stryker commissioners to erect a church at Flatbush, and on the 9th of February following he ordered the people of Brooklyn and Flatlands to assist in building it. By his order, it was erected in the form of a cross, 28 by 60 or 65 feet, and 12 feet between the beams—the rear to be occupied as the minister's dwelling. It cost 4,637 guilders, or about $1,800. This amount was contributed by the inhabitants of the town, and the salary of the minister—$416 per year—was raised by taxation. In 1656 the Governor ordered that the minister should preach every Sabbath morning in Flatbush, and in the afternoons alternately in Flatlands and Brooklyn. Dominie Polhemus enjoyed a long pastorate of twenty-two years. He died June 9, 1676, deeply lamented, and was buried in the church at Brooklyn. Under him a church was built in Flatlands in 1662, and one in Brooklyn in 1666.

For several years the inhabitants of the town of New

Esopus Indians, the Long Island towns were thrown into great confusion and deeply outraged by an irruption from the English towns on the east, of some 150 armed men, on foot and on horse, led by one Capt. John Scott, "an unprincipled adventurer." These men proclaimed the sovreignity of their "dread lord" Charles II, seized the block houses, over-turned the cannon, flouted their own flag about, and made themselves generally obnoxious to the amazed and peaceable Dutch folks. The effect of this outrage was to produce confusion, and continual bickerings between the two people, until the seizure of the colony by Col. Nicholls in the year 1664 as narrated.

At this date, beef sold for 2*d.*, pork for 3*d.*, butter for 6*d.*, per pound. Wheat was 5*s.*, rye 2*s.* 6*d.*, and corn 2 *s.*, per bushel. Victuals 6*d* per meal; labor 2*s.* 6 *d.* per day; lodging 2 *d.* per night; board 5 *s.* per week; beer 2 *d.* per mug. These prices varied but little during the next twenty years.

On the 15th of August, 1668, Governor Nicholls issued a patent to the town in the usual form, giving it recognition by the English authorities.

In March 1672 England and France declared war against the Netherlands; and on the 23rd day of July, 1673, Evertsen and Bincks, with a Dutch squadron, arrived in the Lower Bay; and on the 30th of July, the province was surrendered to them, to the great joy of the Dutch settlers, whose experience of the English government was not very satisfactory. On the 29th of August, all the men of New Utrecht, 41 in number, took the oath of allegiance to the Netherlands. But this rejoicing was of short duration; for on the 10th of November, 1674, the colony was finally surrendered to the English, pursuant to the treaty of Westminister. *

It was at this period, under these circumstances, and in this region: in the twilight of American history, under the Dutch

---

*—Bibliography: Authorities for the foregoing text are as follows: Johnson's Universal Cyclopedia; Lippincott's Gazetteer of the World; Historical Collections of New Jersey, Barber & Howe, pp 9, 10, 11, 14, Narrative and Critical History of America, Winsor, v. 4, pp. 398, 403; and *passim;* Hist. of Long Island, Prime, pp. 61 63, 64, 322, 323; Reformed Dutch Church, Celebration of 1877, pamphlet, pub. under direction of Consistory, pp. 10-12, 5-40, 47.

dominion, and amid scenes of anxious care, that several progenitors of our family appeared in the New World. Of those whom we shall note in this connection, the first comers were the family of Van Lieuwen, in 1652, in the year when Van Tromp was parading the English Channel with his broom aloft, seven years after the appointment of Peter Stuyvesant to the Directorship of the Province, and two years before the organization of the first congregation on Long Island. Next came the Longstreets, in 1657, five years later, and two years after the building of the church at Flatbush. Then arrived the family of Lanen van Pelt, in 1666, the year before the English seizure of the province, and fourteen years before the organization of the church at New Utrecht.

Although the family of Van Lieuwen preceded the Longstreets by five years, and the natural course of historical statement would therefore demand that account be first given of them, yet the logical arrangement of a genealogical narrative requires that the Longstreets be given precedence; they are the main branch, and any other course would beget confusion.

By way of preliminary, a statement in respect to Dutch names is needed. They then made but little use of *family* names. Many of them had none. Even in the most formal and important documents men are frequently designated by their Christian names alone; and that, where they were possessed of patronymics. It was, however, the custom to add to a man's own Christian name that of his father. These peculiarities cause much trouble, in tracing genealogies. There is one drawback on this difficulty, however, which is that the name of a person, as written, usually gives the Christian name of his father; thus *Stoffel Dircks,* means Stoffel the son of Dirck; *Thys Janse* means Thys the son of Jan. The terminations used for this purpose were various, but principally these: *s, z, es, se, ees, en, sz.*

IX.—STOFFEL LANGESTRAET is the first of the family of whom anything is known, and what is known of him is rather negative than otherwise. He was the father of his son, as shown by the son's name, in the manner explained. He never came to America, so far as appears. He was of the Netherlands, but whether of the United Provinces or of the Spanish Netherlands is not determined. We know neither when he was born, nor where he lived, nor whom he married, nor when he died. The English equivalent for his name was Christopher Longstreet. There is a family of the same name, *Langestrasse,* which is German, and of the Grand Duchy of Brunswick; but whether there is any connection between them and the Dutch family, I do not know.

VIII.—DIRCK STOFFELS LANGESTRAET immigrated in 1657, twelve years after the appointment of Stuyvesant as Director of the province, two years after the erection of the church at Flatbush, and seven years before the seizure of the province by Nicholls. He settled at Flatlands (Amersfoort); and this fact, since the village was of less consequence than either Flatbush (only three miles away) or Brooklyn, and was named for a town in Utrecht, from which those who inhabited and named it presumably came, renders it *probable* that Langestraets were from Utrecht. However that may be, Dirck (or Richard, in the English) was in 1677, a member of the Flatlands church, sitting under the ministry of the Rev. Mr. Zuuren. He may have been for years before that an active member of the church, and probably was; for it must be remembered that the lists in the Flatbush record begin with the year 1677. In 1687, in September, thirteen years after the first cession of the province to England, there was a general administration of an oath of allegiance to the British Crown to all of the Dutch people; and with the others, Dirck took that oath at Flatlands. He appears again on an assessment roll of that village for the year 1693, and on a census roll of 1698. After this his name occurs no more on the Long Island records; and it is thought that he moved to Monmouth county, New Jersey.

In his younger manhood, but after his arrival in this province, he married CATHARINA VAN LIEUWEN; afterward, in his older age, some time before, but not far from, February 13,

1690, he married Johanna Havens, widow of Johannis Holsaert. An ante-nuptial agreement made with this second wife is still to be found in the town records of Gravesend; and in it reference is made to his son Stoffel Dircksen. At an early period, date now unknown, he had bought land at Shrewsbury in New Jersey, which he devised by his will to his son Richard. By his first wife Catherina, he had issue as follows:

(1)—Stoffel Dircksen, of whom hereafter.

(2)—Claasje Dircksen, born about 1672 and who married Abraham Lott, of Jamaica.

(3)—Adrian, baptised September 16, 1677.*

(4)—Richard, born about 1680.

(5) A daughter (supposed), who married Samuel Osborne.

(6)—Samuel (supposed); married Barbara Antonides.

VII.—STOFFEL DIRCKSEN LANGESTRAET was born about 1666.

About 1695 he married MOICA, (called by way of pet name MAYKE *or* Maicken) LANEN VAN PELT, daughter of Gysbrecht Tuysz Lanen Van Pelt, of New Utrecht. He was a deacon of the Flatlands church in the year 1698. Not long after this he, his brother Adrian, and probably his father moved across to New Jersey. There he settled on the Neversink Hills (some accounts say at Deal) in Monmouth County, where his descendants abound to this day.

From the "American Weekly Mercury," of date February 14-21, 1726-7, the following extract is taken:

"Langstreat Theophilus.—From the Shrewsbury in East Jersey, on Saturday, the last day of December, 1726, Theo-

---

*—Adrian; bapt. Sept. 16, 1677; married Christina Janse 1707. On asst. roll of Flatlands 1693, and census of 1698; owned land in Gravesend; moved to Freehold, N. J., and deacon there 1721; died in 1728; wife died after 1726. Issue (all bapt. at Marlboro): 1, Christine, or Katherine, bp. Nov. 27, 1709, mar. Aug. 24, 1741, Wm. Williamsen of the Raritan; 2, Jan. bp. Jan. 13, 1712, mar. Dec. 17, 1746 Antje Cowenhoven: 3. Dirck, of Princeton, born about 1713, mar. about 1749, Margaret Shenck, widow of Wm. Cowenhoven: 4, Nellie, born about 1715; 5, Winnifred, born about 1718; 7, Maria, born about 1721, mar. Dec. 5, 1742, Dirck Sutphen; 8, Arianche, born about 1723, 9, Stoffel, born about 1726, mar. Nov. 28, 1753, Nellie Shenck.

philus Longstreat, of Shrewsbury in the county of Monmouth, aged near sixty years, he met with seven swans flying over a meadow, who shot down six of them at one shot, such a shot was never known amongst us."

His will, dated December 1, 1739, was probated March 1, 1741; and he therefore died about the latter date. In that will, he calls himself "Theophilus," an erroneous interpretation of his proper name of Stoffel, or Christopher. He signed his name "Stoffel Langstrat." The will of his wife was dated April 8, 1752, and it was probated Mar. 13, 1753; so that she must have died about the latter date. These wills name some of their children, but not all of them.* Those children, so far as now known, were as follows:

1. Dirck (Richard), baptized in Brooklyn, April 25, 1697.†
2. Jane (or Jonica), born about 1698.
3. Catherine, born about 1700; married Jan Sutphen, of New Jersey, about 1720.
4. Mary (or Maria), baptized May 6, 1702; married first Wm. Hendricksen, of New Jersey; and second, Dirck Sutphen.
5. Sarah, born about 1705.
6. Gisbert (or Gilbert) born about 1707; baptized November 26, 1710; married Rachel Schenck; died in 1758.
7. Aaron, baptized Nov. 26, 1710; married May 6, 1754, Lydia Hull.

---

*—See Appendix 1, and Appendix 2.

†—Dirck married a wife named Jane, or Jonica. He died Dec. 4, 1795, in his 99th year. We find this mention of him in "The Historical Collections of New Jersey," on page 351: "The following account of an incursion of the British into this township in the American Revolution, is contained in a published letter, dated Kildare, Monmouth Co., April 9, 1778: 'About 135 of the enemy landed on Sunday last, about 10 o'clock, on the south side of Squam inlet, burnt all the salt-works, broke the kettles, etc., stripped the beds, etc., of some people there, who I fear wished to serve them; then crossed the river, and burnt all except *Dirrick Longstreet's*. After this mischief they embarked. The next day they landed at Shark river, and set fire to two salt-works, when they observed fifteen horsemen heave in sight, which occasioned them to retreat with great precipitation; indeed, they jumped in their flat-bottomed boats with such precipitation they sunk two of them." At the time of this fortunate escape, Dirck was 82 years of age.

8. STOFFEL, of whom, hereafter.

9. Moica, baptized March 6, 1716; supposed to have married Johannes Leek.

10. Anna, born about 1718.

Having brought the family history down to the middle of the last century, and reached the period when the name assumed its English form of LONGSTREET it may be helpful and interesting to interrupt the course of the narrative in order to consider what manner of people these were and after what fashion they lived. History tells us something of the traits and habits of their friends and neighbors.

"In their family intercourse, and among themselves in their business matters, they continued to use the Dutch language. Several of the old people do so to this day. Their frugal mode of life, their severe and constant bodily labor, their economical habits, were proverbial. For many generations, their word was their bond, a verbal contract being deemed sufficient. If they toiled hard and earned money they studiously endeavored to save it by prudent investment. They indulged in no costly dress or equipage, and in home-spun garments, neat, clean and whole, they visited the market-place and the sanctuary. The avails of the family toil, in spinning flax and wool, in weaving and coloring, were constantly seen in the ordinary dress, and in the many articles for family use. Goodly stores of domestic linens and woolens were sure to be found in every well regulated family.

"Nor were they apt to be long retained in the piece, as they came from the weaver's hands, or from the fulling and dressing mills. They were at the earliest convenience of the industrious mother and her active daughters, manufactured into appropriate garments for every member of the family. So far did these provident arrangements extend that in the event of a death, the habiliments for the corpse need not be sent for, or hurriedly put together. The well stored cases or old fashioned clothes-press, contained them all. We have seen on some occasions, the beautifully plaited and well crimped garments brought forth to meet the painful exigency. From the same bountiful stores, when the daughters went forth in the new relation of wives, and commenced house keeping, their mothers'

industry, and their own early labors, were well attested by the goodly supply of personal garments, with bedding of every description, and in more recent times, with beautiful domestic carpeting, of their own spinning and coloring.

"It was, however, common for the youthful husband and wife to have their home, for the first year of married life under the roof of her parents.

"With the young people of both sexes, the custom long prevailed of riding on horse-back. Especially about the seasons of the holidays at New York, Christmas, Easter and Whitsuntide. In the evening rides, going in pairs, a beau and a belle mounted on the same animal, the latter seated behind the former, with firm grip holding on to him who had sought her company. Go where you might, you were sure to see, near the parental dwelling, the huge stepping-block, with its convenient and wide notches, well cut in, serving for steps by which to ascend to its even top, as a firm foundation on which for the sprightly girl to stand until the well-kept steed should be brought up, and thence to spring into her seat; and on which, on returning, to alight. It is only within the last twenty-five years (written 1856) this once favorite mode of youthful pleasure-riding, gave way to that of companies of two pairs each, in a substantial wagon, and which, in still later days, has been superseded by the most tasteful buggy. On marriage occasions, long processions of wagons or sleighs, filled with the mirthful escort of 'the happy twain made one,' told of the nuptials, wherever they went, the whole company singing by the way. If they did not possess the luxuries of the neighboring city of New York, or indulge in its extravagances, the people did possess and enjoy their home comforts, and were well content.

"In the old churches the number of the first psalm was set with movable figures suspended at the sides of the pulpit. These the clerk properly arranged before service, so that every one might readily prepare to sing. It was also the clerk's duty to have an hour-glass properly placed near the minister at the commencement of the sermon, and as the last grains of sand left the upper for the lower cavity, it was a reminder that the time had arrived for the conclusion. Some preachers, however, quietly allowed the sand to run out, and then informed their

audience, that as they had sat so patiently through the one, they would proceed with a second. The collections during the service were taken in velvet bags attached to the ends of long poles, with a small alarm bell fastened to the end. When a coin was given the bell rang; if it passed through a pew silently, it showed that nothing had been contributed by the persons in that pew. It required experienced dexterity to handle them well, to avoid the pillars and the bonnets. Previous to 1802 there were no stoves in the churches. The ladies were accustomed to bring their foot-stoves, and to replenish them at a house near by.

"In those days, when the ladies went out to spend the day, or to make an afternoon visit at the parsonage, they carried their spinning wheels and flax with them. Among the old social customs was one to furnish the persons invited to funerals, with tobacco, pipes and liquor—a custom which was sadly abused. This was happily abandoned about 1815. Funeral sermons do not appear to have been used in this church in olden times."*

To return to the genealogy:

VI.—STOFFEL LONGSTREET, son of Stoffel Dircksen, was born on the 14th of July, 1712, and was baptized December 25th, 1713. On the 16th of December, 1743, he married ABIGAIL WOOLEY, a singular marriage— one of pure Dutch descent and religion, the other pure English and a Quakeress. He settled near Allentown, in Upper Freehold Township, Monmouth county. This county, with which the Longstreets were so thoroughly identified through three generations, was originally settled by Dutch, Scotch, and some English immigrants, who moved thither about the year 1664. It was established as a county in 1675; during and about the year 1684 it had come to be the most wealthy county in the province, paying the greatest amount of taxes. It was easily accessible from New York, and offered a safe anchorage for vessels within Sandy Hook. Here Stoffel Longstreet passed his life, and here he died on August 31, 1782. His funeral text was the 44th verse of XXIV Matthew: "Therefore be ye also ready; for in such an hour as ye

*—Authorities:—"Early Settlers of King County," Bergen, title, *Langestraat;* "Annals of Classis, etc., of Bergen," Taylor, pp. 78-90; "Pamphlet of Consistory."

think not the Son of Man cometh." The hymn sung was the 90th psalm, first part, common meter; but from what hymnal is not known. His wife survived him nearly four years, dying on Thursday, May 25, 1786.* His will may be found herein as Appendix No. 3. His children were as follows:

1. Daniel; never married.
2. Gilbert; married Helen Hankinson; died in 1787. Had one daughter, Eleanor.
3. John; married Lucy Tapscott;†
4. WILLIAM, of whom hereafter.
5. Mary, married Elisha Wall.
6. Lydia.

V.—WILLIAM LONGSTREET, son of Stoffel Longstreet,was born in New Jersey in 1760. There he married Hannah Randolph (formerly Fitz-Randolph) about 1783-1785, and about the same time moved to Augusta, Ga., "He was by nature a genius, and but for the want of means might have won the laurels which the more fortunate Fulton secured in the application of steam to the propulsion of boats on navigable waters. As early as September 26, 1790, he addressed a letter to Thomas Telfair, governor of Georgia, stating that his plan was completed, and expressing his thorough confidence in its success if he had means to perfect it. These he asked of the governor or the legislature, to which the matter was submitted. No action, however, was taken. This was three years before Fulton's letter to the Earl of Stanhope announcing his ideas respecting the moving of ships by the means of steam. Longstreet's plan was very different from Fulton's. Failing in obtaining public aid at the time, several years afterwards he procured funds from private sources, which enabled him to put his boat in operation on the Savannah river, and it moved against the current of the river at the rate of five miles per hour a few days after Fulton's like success on the Hudson in 1807. He also invented and patented the 'breast-roller' of cotton gins, which was of incalcul-

---

*—"Early Settlers," above; also Family Bible of Stoffel's own.

†—Children: Stoffel, William, John, Daniel, Abigail, and Lydia.

able value to the growers of the long staple or sea-island cotton." *

The letter alluded to above is still in existence amongst the archives of Georgia. It is as follows:

Augusta, Ga., September 26th, 1790.

Sir:—I make no doubt but that you have often heard of my steamboat, and as often heard it laughed at. But in this I have only shared the fate of all other projectors, for it has uniformly been the custom of every country to ridicule even the greatest inventions until use has proved their utility.

In not reducing my scheme to practice has been a little unfortunate for me, I confess (and perhaps the people in general), but until very lately I did not think that either artists or material could be had in this place sufficient.

However, necessity—that grand source of invention—has furnished me with an idea of perfecting my plan, almost entirely with wooden materials and by such workmen as may be gotten here; and, from a thorough confidence of its success I propose to ask for your assistance and patronage.

Should it succeed agreeably to my expectations, I hope I shall discover that sense of duty which such favors always merit, and should it not suceed, your reward must lay with other unlucky adventurers.

For me to mention to you all the advantages arising from such a machine would be tedious, and indeed, unnecessary. Therefore I have taken the liberty just to state in this plain, humble manner, my wish and opinions, which I hope you will excuse and shall remain, either with or without your approbation, Your Excellency's most obedient and very humble servant, WILLIAM LONGSTREET.

To His Excellency, Edward Telfair.

Appleton's American Encyclopedia, after giving substantially the same account of Longstreet's steamboat, proceeds to say: "Cotton had previously been ginned by two rollers, not quite one inch in diameter, which caught the fibres, pressed out the seed, and delivered the clean cotton on the other side,

---

*—Gov. A. H. Stephens, in Johnston's Universal Encyclopedia, edition of 1880.

where it was taken by the ginner's hand, and deposited in a bag attached to his person. Longstreet invented and patented the 'breast roller,' moved by horse power, which entirely superseded the old method. He set up two of his gins in Augusta, which were propelled by steam and worked admirably; but they were destroyed by fire within a week. He next erected a set of steam mills near St. Mary's, Ga., which were destroyed by the British in the war of 1812. These disasters exhausted his resources and discouraged his enterprise, though he was confident that steam would soon supersede all other motive powers."

William Longstreet, about the year 1800, moved to Edgfield District, South Carolina. He died in 1814, his wife surviving him twenty-three years. Their children were:

1.—*James,* who married Mary Ann Dent in 1814, and died in 1833. Their children were Anna, William, Sarah-Jane, John, James (the great Confederate general), Henrietta, Rebecca, Julia, Eliza Parke, Maria Nelson, and Sarah Jane (second of the name.) *

---

*—Descendants of James Longstreet, son of William:

A.—Anna Longstreet, born 1814, died 1839; married in 1833 to Dr. Hutcherson Dent.—Their children were Mary Ann, and George. Mary Ann Dent, born March 7, 1834, died Feby. 22, 1883; married, first, in 1855 to Dr. Dewitt Kimble, and had a daughter, Anna Dent, who died in infancy; the widow then married, Nov. 16, 1865, Dr. Henry Augustine Minor, and had children, Anna Dent Minor, H. Dent Minor, Frances Washington Minor (born Dec. 23, 1869), Henry A. Minor, Jr. (born March, 1871), Launcelot Longstreet Minor (born Aug. 14, 1876), and William Lucian Minor (born 1874, died in infancy).

Anna Dent Minor, above, born Aug. 8, 1866; married, Sept. 8, 1887, to Tatum Dent; children, Henry Minor Dent, born Jany. 4, 1889; William Dent, born August 24, 1890; Albert Tatum Dent, born June 30, 1892; Mary Cooper Dent, born Oct. 8, 1894; Emmett Cooper Dent, born Oct. 1, 1896; Frances W. Dent, born Jany. 5, 1898.

H. Dent Minor, above, born March, 1868, married Florence Frazier in April, 1897; a daughter, Mary Lane, born Jan'y. 8, 1899.

B.—William Longstreet, born 1817, died 1889; married Mary Davies, March 20, 1850.—Their children were John Davies, Mary Dent, William, Frances Butts, Bessie B., James, Maria Wightman.

Mary Dent Longstreet, above, born June, 1853; married April, 1874, to Edward Thomas Bush; children, Wyatt M. Bush (born

2.—*Gilbert,* who married, first, Elizabeth Leigh, and had

Jany. 26, 1875, married Kittie Rush, Jany. 26, 1897), Alice Bush (born July 31, 1876), E. T. Bush, Jr. (born July 22, 1878), Wm. Longstreet Bush (born Aug. 22, 1880), Mary Bush, Florence Bush, Linda Bush, and James Bush, Jr.

Frances Butts Longstreet, above, married John A. Tyson, April 30, 1889, children, John A. Jr.; Bessie, Thomas S., Sallie W., James L., and William.

Bessie B. Longstreet, above, married Thomas N. Shearer, Feby. 19, 1895.

Maria Wightman Longstreet, above, died in 1888; married in 1885 John A. Tyson; children, Mary Foote, Maria Longstreet.

C. and D.—Sarah Jane and John Longstreet died in infancy.

E.—James Longstreet, the celebrated Confederate general—as to whom, see any biographical dictionary—born 1821; married, first, in 1849, Louise Garland; children, Garland, Augustus, Lee, James Jr., Louise (who married Dr. Welchel, and has two children), and Randolph (who married, and has a child). General Longstreet still lives, at Gainesville, Ga.; has a second wife.

F.—Henrietta Longstreet, born 1822, died 1864; married, in 1843, Dr. Archie Clemens; children, James Longstreet, Anna Longstreet, Jerry (died in infancy), Archie Mills (died unmarried).

James Longstreet Clemens, above, born Sept. 1845, married Minnie Ward, Oct. 1883; children, Jerry, Ward, Emily, Lillie, Henrietta Longstreet.

Anna Longstreet Clemens, above, born 1847, died 1872; married, August, 1868, Wm. B. Augustus; children, Henrietta (born 1869, died), and Wm. B. Jr. (born, 1870).

G.—Rebecca Longstreet, born 1824, died Feby., 1881; married, first, Benjamin Stanback, in 1842; second, in 1851, Judge Reuben Ruff.

H.—Julia Longstreet, born 1826, died 1854; married, in 1851, Dr. Wm. Murphy; children, Mary Louise and George Steptoe—both died.

I.—Eliza Parke Longstreet, born Jany. 20, 1828; married Sept. 17, 1844, Walter B. Lucas; children, Fannie Holt, Anna Longstreet, Wm. Augustus (born Aug. 2, 1848, died Oct. 11, 1869), Mary Eliza, Maria Davies, Reuben Ruff (died in infancy), Walter Foote (born Feb. 14, 1855, died Jany. 22, 1897), Julia Murphy (born Aug. 11, 1857, died July 1859), John Dent (born May 16, 1859, died Oct. 12, 1885), Early Clement, James Longstreet, Percy, Rubena (born Jany. 18, 1866, died July 1867), Ernest, and Ruff (born Jany. 15, 1873, died June 1874).

Fannie Holt Lucas, above, born Sept. 7, 1845, died March 9, 1899; married, first, Oct. 1867, James W. Eckford; children, Fannie

one child, which died in infancy. He married, second, Hen-

Lucas Eckford, (born Jany. 30, 1869, died March 1874) and James W. Eckford, Jr. (born Dec. 23, 1873; married, Dec. 2, 1896, Mary Rice; has a daughter, Fannie Delle, born Sept. 21, 1897). Fannie Holt Lucas, married, second, Dr. J. S. Featherston.

Anna Longstreet Lucas, born Sept. 27, 1846, died Nov. 2, 1892; married, May 4, 1869, T. N. Shearer; children, Eliza Lucas Shearer (born March 1870; married, Nov. 5, 1893, Mahlon Brown; children, Annie Glenn, born Aug. 9, 1894, and Robert Shearer, born Jany. 22, 1897), William Vassar Shearer (born Jany. 1872; married, Oct. 31, 1892, Minnie Lee Davis; children, Thomas Wesley, born Sept. 1895, and Wm. Vassar, Jr., born Sept. 22, 1897), Walter Lucas Shearer (born Sept. 1873; married, July 28, 1898, Miss Eddie Cockrell), Addie Minor Shearer (born Sept. 10, 1876) Grace Carlton Shearer (born July, 1878), Mattie Shearer (born April, 1881), and Fannie Longstreet Shearer (born Dec. 27, 1882).

Mary Eliza Lucas, above, born March 18, 1850, died Aug. 12, 1892; married, Sept. 1873, Hampton Lea Jarnagin; children, Rebecca B. (born Aug. 8, 1874; married, April 30, 1895, Harry B. Rigg), Fannie Lucas (born Nov. 10, 1876), Calvin (born March 6, 1878), and Hampton Lea (born Feby. 24, 1881).

Maria Davies Lucas, above, born Jany. 15, 1852; married W. P. Minor, Jany. 4, 1870; children, Fannie E. Minor (born July 3, 1871; married John Fisher Ames, see below), Mary A. Minor (born May 5, 1873; married, June 4, 1895; children, Fan Minor, died in infancy), Annie Lucas Minor (born June 12, 1875, died Sept. 10, 1876), Sallie F. Minor (born Sept. 10, 1877), Maria L. Minor (born June 25, 1879), Henry A. Minor (born May 24, 1881), Walter L. Minor (born Feby. 3, 1883), Lucian Minor (born Aug. 28, 1884), Wm. P. Minor, Jr. (born Jany. 20, 1886), Longstreet Minor (born June 14, 1888), Mildred W. Minor (born Jany. 13, 1890) and Lile Bouldin Minor, died in infancy.

Early Clement Lucas, above, born Feby. 11, 1861; married Grace Brock, 1888; children, Walter B., John F., Early C., Mary (died), and Fanny.

James Longstreet Lucas, above, born March 2, 1863, married Annie Dick Yeates, June 1888; children, Walter Yeates (born Dec. 1889), and James L., Jr. (born July, 1891).

Percy Lucas, above, born June 26, 1864; married, first, Alice Brooks, Sept. 22, 1886; children, Georgia Brooks (born Oct. 1887), William Brooks (born July, 1891). Percy Lucas married, second, Nov. 16, 1898, Belle Bell.

Ernest Lucas, above, born July 16, 1870; married, June 30, 1891, Lola McIntosh; children, Lola May (died in infancy), Earnest L. (died in infancy), and John Featherston (born Jany. 14, 1897).

rietta Eve, and their children were, Aphra A., Hannah B., Elizabeth E., Gilbert, Sarah, Emma E., Anderson-Paul, William, Gaston, Gilbert (second of the name) Gilbert himself died in August, 1851.

3.—*Rebecca,* who married Abial Camfield; children, Han-

J.—Maria Nelson Longstreet, born Oct. 1829; married Elisha Dismukes, July 1849; children, Emma D., Dick (died in infancy), Mary R., Elisha (born 1856, died 1874), Henrietta, Longstreet (born 1861, died 1875), and Edwin Lee (born 1864, died 1875).

Emma D. Dismukes, above, born June 2, 1850, died Jany. 1875; married Dr. J. S. Featherston in April 1874 .

Mary R. Dismukes, above, born 1854, married E. H. Smythe; a daughter, Maria Annette, born March 5, 1880.

Henrietta Dismukes, above, born 1859; married John C. Cavett, Oct. 1879; children, Emma Louise (born July 1880), Mattie B. (born 1881), John C., Jr. (born 1883), Bessie L. (born 1885), James, Longstreet, Emmette, and Mary Etta.

K.—Sarah Jane Longstreet, born July, 1831, married Judge Charles B. Ames, Aug. 22, 1855; children, Victoria (born Sept. 27, 1861; died), John Fisher, Sarah Marshal, and Charles B., Jr.

John Fisher Ames, above, born Oct. 16, 1862; married, first, Annie E. Yates; children, Charles Fisher (born Oct. 30, 1883), Valentine (born Nov. 26, 1885), Mary Yates (born Sept. 25, 1887), Annie Ella (born Sept. 25, 1893), Sarah Fisher (born April 21, 1896).—John Fisher Ames married, second, Fannie E. Minor (above), July 28, 1898; children, William Minor (born April 20, 1899).

Sarah Marshal Ames, above, born Sept. 9, 1867; married Daniel W. Williams, Jany. 6, 1887; children, Benjamin Ames (born March 7, 1889), Maud Longstreet (died in infancy), Helen (born July 20, 1893), and Roger Chilton (died in infancy).

Charles B. Ames, Jr., above, born Aug. 1, 1870; married Feby. 6. 1894, Elizabeth Pearl Allen; children, Benjamin Allen (born Nov. 24, 1894), and Elizabeth Longstreet (born Aug. 20, 1896).

*—Gilbert Longstreet's descendants are as follows:—

A.—*Aphra A.* born Dec. 6, 1819; married Richard Colin Ketchum; died in 1849, leaving a son, Richard Colin Ketchum.

B.—*Hannah B.* died unmarried.

C.—*Elizabeth E.* married Anderson Carmichael.

D.—*Emma E.* married Josiah Sibley.

E.—*Anderson Paul* married, first, Laura Ayres; second, Mary Carmichael.

F. to J.—Gilbert, Sarah, William, Gaston and Gilbert, died in infancy.

nah, William, Elizabeth, Mary, Rebecca, John, Lydia, Octavia and Sarah.

4—*Rachel,* who seems to have died unmarried.

5.—*Augustus Baldwin,* of whom hereafter.

6.—*William,* who married Mary Ann White; children, James Carter, Gilbert Augustus, Eliza Ellen, Mary Ann, and Anna White.—He died in 1835.†

IV.—AUGUSTUS BALDWIN LONGSTREET was born September 22nd, 1790, on Reynolds St., in Augusta, Ga He was about ten years of age when his father moved to South Carolina; but after two or three years Augustus was sent back to Augusta to school. Up to this time his highest ambition was to excel in athletic sports, and his progress in study was slow; but being now thrown on intimate terms with George McDuffie, since clebrated, he acquired from McDuffie a fondness for learning. Subsequently he passed three years in the celebrated school of Dr. Moses Waddel in South Carolina, whence he departed for Yale College in 1811. Graduating at Yale, with the degree of bachelor of arts in 1813, he went immediately to the law-school of Judges Reeve and Gould, at Litchfield, Conn., where he remained a year.

---

*—Rebecca Longstreet's (Camfield) descendants were as follows:

A.—Hannah Camfield married Benjamin Baird.

B.—William Camfield married Penina Freeman.

C.—Elizabeth Camfield married Joseph Milligan, Sr.

D.—Mary Camfield married Andrew Rowland.

E.—Rebecca Camfield married Aaron Roff.

F.—John Camfield died unmarried.

G.—Lyda Camfield married Valentine Beauclair.

H.—Octavia Camfield married Joseph Milligan, Jr., son of the other of the same name.

I.—Sarah Camfield died unmarried.

†—William's descendants: James-Carter married Mary-Anne Lamar, and had one son, Chancellor James Carter Longstreet,now of Grenada, Miss.; Gilbert-Augustus married Harriet Wentel and had one son David Longstreet, now of New Orleans, La.; Mary-Ann married Thomas Walton, and died childless; Eliza-Ellen and Anne-White, died in infancy.

Chancellor James C. Longstreet, above, married in 1898, Mrs. Mary Ann Pass, nee Ragsdale, widow of W. S. Pass.

In 1815 he was admitted to the bar of the Superior Court in Richmond County, Georgia, and began the practice under very flattering auspices. Here, too, he was elected Captain of the 398th district Company of Georgia militia.—On March 2nd, 1817, he married Miss Frances Eliza Parke, of Greensboro, Georgia, born in Randolph Co., North Carolina; and he settled in Greensboro. In 1821 he was elected member of the legislature from Greene County; and in 1822 was raised to the bench of Superior Court for the Ocmulgee Circuit. This was then as high a judicial tribunal as there was in Georgia, there being no Supreme Court; and Judge Longstreet was the youngest practitioner (though not the youngest man) ever raised to that position.

In that period the degree of Master of Arts wes conferred on him by the University of Georgia. In 1824 he became a candidate for Congress. His prospect for election was in the highest degree promising; but in the midst of the canvass the death of his oldest child, a son whom he loved very dearly, so crushed his ambition as to cause him to relinquish the contest. This bereavement caused his mind to turn toward more serious matters, and he resolved to devote himself to a religious life, but without the intervention of churches. The last resolution was, however, so far modified by reflection and experience that in 1827 he joined the Methodist Church. In the same year he moved back to Augusta, where he practiced his profession, appearing at the bars of the courts of Georgia and South Carolina, and the Circuit and Supreme Courts of the United States.

In 1833, during the hottest of the nullification conflict, he took charge of, and edited, the *Augsta Sentinel,* a democratic paper which, in 1838 was merged into the *Augusta Chronicle and Sentinel.* In 1839 he abandoned the legal profession, while in full and profitable practice, and entered the Methodist ministry. He was stationed at Augusta. During that year the yellow fever appeared there for the first time, and with terrible malignity. He and Father Barry of the Catholic Church (afterwards bishop) were the only clergymen in the city; and both were untiring in their ministrations to the sick and the dead. Meeting often at the bedsides of their common

charge, relying for strength and aid on the same inspiration, their association soon grew into an ardent friendship. Perhaps to this experience is to be attributed in great measure the moderation which always distinguished. Judge Longstreet's religious views, notwithstanding the ardor of his native temperament.

In this same year, 1839, he was elected President of Emory College; and entered on the duties of that position February 10, 1840.

In 1844 Judge Longstreet was a member of the General Conference of the Methodist Church, at New York; and it was he who, when the Conference adopted the resolution calling on Bishop Andrew to desist from exercising the duties of his office so long as he should hold slaves, offered what is known as the "Declaration of the Southern Delegates," which led to the separation of the church, a few days later, into its Northern and Southern branches.

In 1848, President Longstreet accepted the presidency of Centenary College, at Jackson, La., resigning from Emory for that purpose; but he resigned also from Centenary in June 1849, and accepted the presidency of the University of Mississippi, at Oxford in that State, entering on his duties in September.

In 1851 the degree of Doctor of Laws was conferred on him by Yale College, at the suggestion of John C. Calhoun.

At the University, Dr. Longstreet not only discharged the duties of president, but also gave instruction in governmental science and law, until the law chair was established in 1854. President Longstreet resigned in 1856, retiring, as he supposed, from public life. He was a good manager, and, with his wife's little fortune and his own earnings, had accumulated quite a comfortable independence.

However, in 1857 he accepted the Presidency of the South Carolina College at Columbia. About this time he was made an honorary member of the Smithsonian Institution, a distinction which he valued very greatly. In 1860, President Buchanan appointed him delegate to the world's Statistical Congress, which met in London in July. When that body convened Lord Brougham delivered an address of welcome, in which he took

occasion to call the attention of the United States minister pointedly to the fact that the representative of the United States was seated in the same deliberative body with a negro—a delegate from one of the West India islands. The dissension over slavery was at its most excited period then; and Dr. Longstreet construed this act of Lord Brougham's and the response of the negro delegate, and the reception given to the incident by the assembly, as a gross insult to his country in the person of her minister to the Court of St. James. He left the Congress immediately, publishing his reasons therefor in the *London Chronicle.* His open letter was cordially approved by the Americans in London, and by the President and Cabinet at home. It will be found as Appendix 4.

When the civil war broke out, nearly all of the college students entered the army. Thereupon President Longstreet resigned toward the close of 1861. During the war he remained in Georgia and Alabama, as a refugee from North Mississippi, which was subject to raids of federal troops; but on the cessation of hostilities he returned to Oxford, on North Street. There, in 1868, he lost his dear wife after a union of more than fifty years. He died on the 9th of July, 1870, after a fortnight's illness. His decease was painless, tranquil and happy; the fit consummation of a long, useful and holy life.

Sketches of Judge Longstreet may be found in almost any Encyclopedia of American biography. Bishop O. P. Fitzgerald published a biography of him, in 1891, through the publishing house of the Methodist Church South, of Nashville, Tenn.—a volume of 318 pages duodecimo; and in Mayes' biography of Lucius Q. C. Lamar, (Nashville, 1895,) will be found much matter about him and his family.

Hon. A. H. Stephens, of Georgia, says of him, in Johnson's Encyclopedia, amongst other things, this: "With his most devoted piety, Judge Longstreet was always a decided politician. Reared in the Jeffersonian school of strict construction and State Rights, he adhered inflexibly to those principles in all that he wrote or spoke until the time of his death. He also possessed a wonderful taste for humor, of which the marked exhibitions that contributed to his fame were so delicately done, and with such moral tone, as not to detract in the least from

his clerical office. This was one of the most striking features in his varied and extraordinary character. His *Georgia Scenes* (1840) and *Master William Mitten, or the Youth of Brilliant Talents who was Ruined by Bad Luck* (1848) stand among the first works of American wit and humor. Among his graver writings may be mentioned his sermon on *Infidelity* before the Young Men's Christian Association, *Letters from Georgia to Massachusetts, Letters to Clergymen of the Northern Methodist Church,* and *A Review of the Decision of the Supreme Court of the United States in the Case of McCulloch v. Maryland.* His pen was never idle. Up to the time of his death he was a regular contributor to a number of periodical publications."

In pages 164 to 168 of Bishop Fitzgerald's biography of Judge Longstreet, is to be found an account, drawn from the Judge himself, of his motives in the production of both the *Georgia Scenes* and *Master Mitten.* The value of the former as a contribution to American literature cannot be fully understood without reading that account, or without holding also in view the fact that Judge Longstreet struck out a new path in literature—the character sketches, now so common, being then a novelty.—When the *Georgia Scenes* was published, in 1840, the copyright was purchased by the Harpers, who brought it out; and it so happened that six sketches, or "scenes," written at a latter period have never appeared in the book of that name: they are *Little Ben, The Gnatville Gem, Julia and Clarissa, Darby Anvil, The Family Picture,* and *The India-rubber Story.* Of these *Darby Anvil* was published by Bishop Fitzgerald in the appendix to the biography, where it may be found.

The remainder of the unpublished "scenes" will be found, so far as they may be recovered in Appendix 6 to this pamphlet.

In July after Judge Longstreet's death, a memorial service was held at Emory College. Judge James Jackson, of the Supreme Court of Georgia, delivered the address. It will be found as Appendix 5 to this pamphlet.

The children and descendants of Judge Longstreet, by his only marriage, were as follows:

1.—Alfred-Emsley, born July 20, 1820: (2) Henrietta, born December 25, 1821; (5) Ebenezer Torrance; (6) George McDuffie; (7) Fitz-Randolph; (8) Rebecca Lewis—all of whom died in infancy.

3.—Frances Eliza, born in Greensboro, Ga., April 12, 1824; married Dr. Henry R. Branham, and moved to Oxford, Miss., in 1849, where she lived until her death, Oct. 29, 1899. Her descendants are,

(a)—Augustus Longstreet Branham, born in Oxford, Ga., September 7, 1846, died Sept. 17, 1867, unmarried.

(b)—Harris Parke Branham, born in Oxford, Ga., June 1, 1849; married Miss Emma Gale Isom, of Oxford, Miss.; children, Thomas Dudley (and a twin, Robert Henry, who died in infancy), Irene (who married F. Petrie Hamilton, of Jackson, Miss.), and Mary (and a twin brother, Longstreet, who died in infancy). Mr. Branham is president, in 1907, of banks in Benjamin, and in Seymour, Texas. Dudley Branham, in 1897, married Miss Virginia Mitchell, who died, childless, in May, 1907.

(c)—Verlinda Branham (always called Linda) born University of Miss., on August 18, 1852; married William Absalom West, of Oxford, Miss. Her children were five: Fanelle Longstreet, born June 26, 1877 (married in May 1902, Audley W. Shands, of Sardis, Miss., and had children, Fanelle who died in infancy, and Garvin Dugas, born May 1906); Linda Branham West, born Oct. 3, 1878 (married in August 1899, Rev. Charles Hinton, of Vicksburg, Miss., and had children, Charles F., who died in infancy, Augusta L. born in 1902, and Charles West born in January, 1904); also Wm. Branham West, born November 11, 1880; Kate Reading West, born February 24, 1883; Augustus L. West, born January 25, 1885; of whom, the last three died in infancy.

III.—VIRGINIA LAFAYETTE LONGSTREET was born in Greensobro, Ga., June 24, 1826. Educated at the Wesleyan Female College, in Macon, Ga.; and married, on the 15th of July, 1847, Lucius Q. C. Lamar. Died on the 30th of December, 1884. For a sketch of this lovely lady, and of her equally lovely sister, see Mayes' Biography of L. Q. C. Lamar. Her descendants are,

II.—FRANCES ELIZA LAMAR (1) born in Oxford, Ga., July 20, 1848. Married May 11, 1869, Edward Mayes, then of Carrollton, Miss., now of Jackson; children (a) Mary Lamar Mayes, born Oxford, Miss., March 22, 1870, married Sept. 22, 1898, to Alexander Bennett Sanders, a civil engineer, now, of Providence, La.; (children, A. Bennett, Jr., born July 10, 1899; Fannie Mayes, died in infancy; Edward Mayes and Mary Mayes, twins, born Nov. 2, 1905); (b) Lucius Lamar Mayes, born Oxford, Miss., Nov. 21, 1872, died in infancy; (c) Elizabeth Lamar Mayes, born Oxford, Miss., January 28, 1878, (married Wilbur C. Eakin, Nov. 28, 1905); (d) Edward Walthall Mayes, born Oxford, Miss., May 1, 1880, died June 14, 1886; (e) Lucius Lamar Mayes, born Oxford, Miss., July 22, 1882; (f) Francis Lamar Mayes, born Oxford, Miss., July 26, 1885; and (g) Basil Robert Lamar Mayes, born Oxford, Miss., October 13, 1889.

2.—Lucius Q. C. Lamar, born Oxford, Miss., August 15, 1860; married in 1880, Kate Lester, of Oxford, Miss.; now living in Washington, D. C.; a son Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus Lamar, fourth generation of that name, born December 11, 1880. Married, 2nd., Miss Atala Nicholson, November 30, 1899, (children, Mirabeau B., born May 9, 1902; Janvier Longstreet, born 1903; Lavoisier Henry, born February 1906).

3.—Sarah Augusta Lamar (called Gussie), born Oxford, Miss., 15th August, 1860; educated at Wellesley, Mass.; married, 5th May, 1880, to F. Hugh Heiskell, of Memphis, Tenn.; children, Joseph born 17th February, 1881 (died a lad); Lamar, born 3rd February, 1883; Virginia Longstreet, born 5th August, 1885, (married September 1905, Wm. Dunbar); Hugh McKinney, born December 28, 1888; Augustus Longstreet, born 4th November, 1890; Mary Loretta, born June 27, 1894.

4.—Virginia Longstreet Lamar, born Oxford, Miss., January 25th, 1865; married July 21, 1887, William Harmong Lamar, of Alabama, a distant cousin. They now live at Rockville, Md.; Mr. Lamar being a lawyer; children, Virginia Longstreet, born March 1, 1889; Gussie Glenn; Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus (fourth generation of the name); and William Harmong.

was not a Fitz-Randolph, because he was the **ancestor** of Ralph, who gave the patronymic later; 2, also, that Engleram may not have been Ralp'h father, but a remoter ancestor.

2.—RANDULPHUS FILIUS ENGELRAMI, as the name shows, a son or descendant of Engelram. In **Fuller's** lists of the sheriffs of the counties of Nottingham and Derby,* he is shown to have held that office from the second year to the twelfth of Henry II.; i. e., from 1155 to 1166. He was therefore probably born about 1115-1120. The sheriffs of that period were county officers, appointed annually by the king. Thus they were strictly and directly responsible to the king. It was their duty to see that the king's revenues were duly collected and paid over into his treasury; to summon juries and enforce the judgments of the courts, to see that the peace was kept; and if they met with resistance they could call out a force of men, known as the **posse comitatus** (i. e., the power of the county), and overcome all opposition. The fact that Ralph, or Randolph, was appointed to that office by Henry II. shows very clearly that he must already have been a man of high standing in the county; and the further fact that he held it for eleven years successively shows that he must have discharged its duties well. Manifestly he was a prosperous and fortunate man, of whom his descendants were proud; because as already stated, they took his Christian name for their patronymic. Speaking of this, and in continuation of his remarks on family names quoted in the preceding note, Foss says, on page 247, "Thus, in this family of Fitz-Randolph, or Fitz-Ralph, none of those mentioned by Dugdale bore that Christian name; Robert's son William was not styled Fitz-Robert, nor was William's son named Fitz-William; but all were called Fitz-Ralph, or Fitz-Ranulph. There must, however, have been a progenitor so baptized; and in Fuller's list of the sheriffs of those counties it will accord-

---

*Thomas Fuller was an eminent divine and author, born in Nottinghamshire in 1608. Amongst other works, he published, in 1668 a **History of the Worthies of England**, which is the authority cited by Foss. "Fuller was," says S. T. Coleridge, "incomparably the most sensible and least prejudiced great man of an age that boasted of a galaxy of great men." **—Lippincott's Biog. Dictionary.**

ingly be seen that the immediate predecessor of Robert was **Radulfus** filius Engelrami, who held the office from the second to the twelfth year of Henry II. From him, then, who was, no doubt, the father of Robert, we have the family sur-name. And, further, the name Radulphus in this Radulphus filius Engelrami, and in this Robertus filius Radulphus, is called, by Madox,* Radulphus, quoting respectively the rolls of 9 and 19 Henry II. Thus it appears that Ranulphus and Radulphus are both abbreviations of, or derived from, Randulphus, and that they, in fact, are all three one and the same name. The name of the great justiciary,Glanville, familiarly called sometimes Ralph, and sometimes Ranulph, though usually styled in the rolls Radulphus, is a sufficient example of the indiscriminate use of the three names."

3.—ROBERT FITZ-RANULPH (or Randolphus), then, succeeded his father, Ralph, as sheriff of the counties of Nottingham and Derby in the twelfth year of Henry II.; i. e., in 1166. This succession is another proof of his being the son of Ralph; for, as Foss remarks, on page 246, it was the practice of the times to continue the sheriffalty in one family for several generations. Robert was, from the time of his reception of this office, probably born about 1126-31. He held that position until the year 1171, when he surrendered it. He is thought to have been concerned in the murder of Thomas a Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury, which occurred in that town on the 29th of December, 1170, and to have retired from office on that account. Says Foss, he "founded the priory of Beauchief in that county (Kent), in expiation of that crime, as is supposed by some:" page 243. He held the lordships of Alfreton, Norton and Marnham, in Derbyshire.

Left sons (1) WILLIAM, (2) Hubert and (3) Gerald

William Fitz-Radulphus (or Ralph, or Ranulph) was eldest son of Robert. Foss says, on page 243, 246, "Whether the father was guilty or not, the son was certainly not excluded from the court. If Robert were indeed concerned in the mur-

---

*In his work on the "History, etc., of the Exchequer of the Kings of England;" see Lippincott's Biographical Dictionary.

der of Becket (an act which, though not authorized by the king, cannot be supposed to have been disagreeable to him) the reason of Robert's retirement in the 16th year" (i. e., of Henry's reign) "would be at once explained; since this would be a sacrifice which respect for the feelings of the times required, but which would not extend to the exclusion of the son, who was not implicated in the crime."—"Whether the father was guilty or not, the son was certainly not excluded from the court;" on Robert's retirement in 1170 from the sheriffalty, William was placed in that office, and held it for the eight following years. He continued to be employed in places of trust up to the reign of King John. He and one Robert Mantel (a justicier of this reign), so early as 18th of Henry II. (1172) accounted as receivers of the pasnage of the king's forests throughout England; an office of considerable importance, as may be inferred from its having afterwards been filled by Geoffrey Fitz-Peter. In 20 of Henry II., (1174), he was, as sheriff of Nottingham and Derby, joined with Godfrey de Luci, one of the king's justices, in setting the assize of those counties: and in the next six years he sat in the king's court, in which he seems to have held a high place, as his name appears first of several before whom pleas and conventions were taken; and in some instances he is mentioned thus: "*per Willielmum filium Radulphi et Socios suos,*" without noting who those companions were. During those years, also, he went, as one of the justices into fourteen several counties, to hold courts.

When his father died, he succeeded to the three baronies mentioned above.

In 1180, (26 Henry II), he was appointed dapifer or seneschall of Normandy, in right of which he had the custody of the castle of Caen, for which a livery of £300 per annum was allowed him. This office, which comprehended that of justiciary, he continued to hold until his death. When Richard I. went to the Holy Land, he committed Alice, the King of France's sister, to the custody of Wm. F.-R., who resolutely refused to deliver her up to her brother, notwithstanding his repeated demands. In the character of seneschall he is a witness to the charter granted by King Richard to the Church of

Rouen, in the 8th year of his reign, (1196); and in 2 John, (1200) he is mentioned on the Norman roll as being present in the king's court at Caen, with the other justices and barons there.

He gave the Church of Blackwell to the canons of Thurgarton, in Nottinghamshire. He died in 1200.

Now, here comes in a difficulty. According to Dugdale's Baronage, he had, by his wife Alice, *one* son, *Thomas,* who succeeded him, and died without issue; also, three daughters, who thus become his heirs; viz: Alice, married to Sir William de Chaworth; Joane, married to Robert, the son of Richard de Lathom; and Lettice, who died unmarried. Yet, according to a genealogy, in the account of the priory of Beauchief, in Dugdale's Monasticon, William, (who died in 1200) left surviving him a son named *Robert,* who was the father of a Thomas by *his* wife Agnes. It is curious that Godwin, in his *"de Praesul,"* represents *Robert,* Bishop of Worcester, who was elected in 1190, and died in 1193 (seven years *before* William) as the *only* son of Wm. F.-R. seneschall of Normandy.

Whatever may be the exact truth of these differing statements, it is evident that the male line of William either became extinct, or else was continued through Thomas, son of Robert. If not through this Thomas, then the name was probably continued through *Gerald Fitz Randolph,* third son of Robert, who was one of the twelve "inquisitores" mentioned by Foss, Vol. 1. p. 243, in the year 16, Henry II. (1170), and whom Dugdale has mistakenly called "Justices itinerant." We now come to

4.—Hubert Fitz Ralph, second son of Robert, who, on the failure of the male line of his elder brother, William, became head of the family. The first account of him is of about 33 H. II. (1187) when "Henry de Stuteville gave account of 15 l. or the scutage (tax) of the Fee which was parted between him and Hubert Fitz Ralph. Afterwards, there is mention of the honour of John de Stuteville, concerning the moyety of

the Barony of Hubert Fitz Ralph, and that there was paid by said John," etc.*

In Brown's History of Nottinghamshire, p. 239, Hugh Fitz-Ralph is mentioned as "one of the great barons who, in the days of John, took up arms against the king" (i. e., in 1215, A. D.).

In "County Records of the surnames of Francus," etc., by French, under the titles "Nottinghamshire: Broxtow Hundred: Wandesley"—appears this passage:

---

*—Thoroton's Hist. of Nottinghamshire, Vol. 2, p. 291.

THE FAMILY OF FITZ RANDOLPH.

"A. D., 1227-65. Hugh Fitz-Ralph, for the love of God, and for the health of his soul, and for the souls of Agnes and Idonea, his wives, of RALPH and HUGH, his sons, and for the souls of all his ancestors and successors gave to God and the Church of the Blessed Mary in Stanley Park, and the canons of the order of the Premonstratenses there serving God," certain lands fully described; "and he likewise confirmed to that monastery, for the same reasons, fourteen bovates of land in Little Halum, in Derbyshire, which the said canons gave him in exchange for ten bovates in Seleston."

Either Ralph or Hugh, mentioned above, apparently died without sons, leaving a daughter and heiress, Estachia, who married Nicholas de Cantilupe (of a celebrated and great family of that period) and carried to him the manor of Greasley. See Brown's History above.

There occurs now a hiatus of about two hundred and fifty years in the family history collected by me. No further information has been obtained until the time of Henry VIII. At that period other data have been obtained. It is the same family certainly. They bear the same name (modernized, they live in the same vicinity, have relations with the same families, own substantially the same estates; and these evidences are borne out by the family traditions and common repute of ancient descent.

XIII.—JOHN FITZ RANDOLPH is the first of the later line. He seems to have been a person of consequence; is designated "gentleman," and held a commission in the royal army as Colonel. There are two letters extant, written to him by Henry VIII, in one of which the king empowers him to raise military forces for service. In 1515 he purchased from Cuthbert de Langton, gentleman, the estate of Langton Hall (or Westwood), in Nottinghamshire. He was succeeded by his son.

XII.—CHRISTOPHER FITZ RANDOLPH, called "of Langton Hall," who married Joan, one of the daughters and heirs apparent of Cuthbert de Langton. Pending his marriage there

were covenants made concerning the marriage between de Langton and another Christopher Fitz-Randolph, cousin of this one. Christopher, son of John, above, had by his marriage with Joan de Langton, four sons: Thomas, John, Edward, and CHRISTOPHER, Thomas Fitz Randolph was born about 1530; succeeded to Langton Hall, and his descendants retained it until 1790. He married Katherine, daughter of Godfrey Foljambe, knight. James Fitz Randolph, his son, was born about 1650; he also succeeded to Langton Hall; married Katherine, daughter of Walter Manteniel of Nottinghamshire; died 1612; children Philalethes, who was born in 1592 and died childless, and Thomas and Ferdinand, both of whom also died childless, and Isabel, to whom went the estate. (*Thoroton's Nottinghamshire,* p. 296).

XI.—Christopher Fitz Randolph, fourth son, was born about 1540. The name of his wife is not discovered, nor any full account of his family. His son

X.—James Fitz Randolph immigrated to America in 1630, and settled at Scituate in the Plymouth Colony. His son,

IX.—*Edward Fitz Randolph,* from Nottinghamshire, England, born about 1616, immigrated with his parents, as stated above, in 1630. The name, at that time, was variously spelled. SAVAGE in his Biographical Dictionary, gives it thus: Fitzrandle, Fittsrendolfe, and Fittsrandolfs. The family, at the first, settled at Scituate, in the Plymouth Colony, in the year 1630. There, Edward, on the 10th of May, 1637, married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Blossom; and joined the church on the 14th following. In the year 1639, he moved to Barnstable, on Cape Cod; and there had issue:

1.—*Nathanael,* baptised 9th August, 1640; died at 4 months.

2.—*Nathanael,* baptised 15th May, 1642; married in Barnstable, November, 1662, Mary Holley, and had issue, John and Issac; married second, Jane Hampton, 12th April 1706-7.

3.—*Mary,* baptised 6th October, 1644; died young.

4.—*Hannah,* baptised 23rd April, 1648; married Jasper Taylor, November 6, 1668.

5.—*Margaret,* baptised 2nd June, 1650.

6.—*Mary,* baptised 2nd June, 1651; became second wife of Samuel Hinchley, 15th January, 1669,—brother of Governor Hinckley, of Massachusetts.

7.—*John,* baptised 7th October, 1653; married Sarah Bonham.

8.—*Joseph,* baptised 1st March, 1656; married Hannah Conger, January, 1687.

9.—*Thomas,* baptised 16th August, 1659; married Elizabeth Manning, 23rd November, 1686.

10.—*Hope,* baptised 2nd April, 1661.

11.—*Benjamin,* born in 1663. The *exact* date of the birth of Benjamin is not known. His baptism is not shown by the Barnstable registers as are those of his older brothers and sisters. It was about this time, say 1665-8, that the family, Edward with his unmarried sons, moved to Piscataway Township, Middlesex County, New Jersey. Edward and his wife died and were buried, at Piscataway. The earliest authentic history of this township is gathered from the public records, which state that the large tract on the east side of Raritan river, which comprises the towns of Piscataway, Elizabeth, etc., was purchased from the Indians in 1663. The purchasers were John Bailey, Daniel Denton, Luke Watson, and others, who obtained a patent in 1664 from Governor Nichols, who acted under the Duke of York. Amongst other early settlers, the Fitz Randolphs are shown by the county records so early as the year 1681. Most of these settlers were Baptists, as is supposed. However, the tradition is that there were but six professed Baptists, viz: Hugh Dunn, who was an exhorter, John Drake, afterward their pastor, Nicholas Bonham, John Smalley, Edmond Dunham, afterwards minister of the Seventh-day Baptists, and *John Fitz Randolph,* who is evidently *John, 7,* above. Those persons were constituted a Baptist Church, in the spring of 1689, by the assistance of Rev. Thomas Killingsworth, who was then pastor of Middletown and Cohansey churches.

VIII.—*Benjamin Fitz Randolph,* between 1696 and 1699 moved to Princeton. There he bought of Richard Stockton

lands (about 100 acres) including the present site of the college, as early as 1704; and later, but before 1709, he bought of the Stockton tract that portion then unsold, between Bayard and Witherspoon Streets, on the north side of Main Street. He was twice married; first in July, 1689, to Sarah Dennis, of New Brunswick, New Jersey, who died in 1732, and was buried in Princeton. He married, secondly, on May 14, 1733, Margaret Robertson. He died in the year 1746, at the age of eight-three years and six months. His children by the first wife were as follows:

1.—Sarah.

2.—Grace, who died young.

3.—Ruth, who married, first, Edward Harrison, of Griggstown; and, secondly, in 1720, John Snowden, of Philadelphia. Two children by the first marriage; by the second, four.

4.—Hope, who married Henry Davis, and had seven children.

5.—Grace, (second), who married Stephen Johnes, of Maidenhead, in 1728. Seven children; one of them, Sarah, married Noah Hunt.

6.—Elizabeth.

7.—Benjamin, born April 24, 1699. Married Elizabeth Pridmore, and had three children. Died in 1758.

8.—*Isaac,* of whom hereafter.

9.—Nathanael, born November 11, 1703; married Rebecca Mershone in 1729, and had fourteen children. He gave to Princeton College the ground on which it now stands, and was one of those who laid the cornerstone in November, 1755. The most prominent of all the New Jersey Quakers.

By his second wife, Benjamin Fitz Randolph had two other children.

10.—Mary, and

11.—Margaret.

VII.—*Isaac Fitz Randolph,* born April 10, 1701, at Princeton; married Rebecca Seabrook, November 28, 1728. Issue by her:

1.—*James,* of whom hereafter.
2.—*Daniel,* married Margaret Stewart.*
3.—*Benjamin,* married Anna Brambich. †
4.—*Stephen* never married.
5.—*Isaac.*
6.—*Huldah,* married a Mr. Combs. §
7.—*Rebecca.*
8.—*Rhoda,* married Moses Robins.**
9.—*Ruth,* married Esek Robbins ††

By a second wife, whose name was Hannah Lee, married February 17, 1745, Isaac Fitz Randolph had another daughter, Elizabeth, an another son named Isaac, who died childless. He built a mill on the Millstone River, a short distance above the Aqueduct Mills.

VI.—*James Fitz Randolph* was born near Princeton, October 1, 1730; married Deliverance Coward. By the bond for their license of marriage, dated 15th March, 1760, "James Fitz Randolph and Thomas Harrison, both of the County of Monmouth," were sureties for "said James Randolph and Deliverance Coward."

James was a resident of Upper Freehold Township in Monmouth County. An old ledger of one Dr. James Newell, still in existence, charges James "Randle," for "curing yr. cut foot, £ 5;" and "a visit to yr. brother Daniel, 7|-"—in the year 1756. James and Daniel "Randall" were both taxed as land owners in that township in 1758.

---

*Issue: Rebecca, married Thomas Brown, and had daughter, Sarah; Rhoda, married John Conover; Jane; Mary; Isaac; Robert; (these four never married): and Charles, who married Widow Clifford, and had issue: Louisa, Jade, Mary-Ann, Augustin, Sarah, Frances-Rebeeca.

†Issue: Anna; Mary, married John Jacob Sluyter, moved to Georgia, and had issue: Randolph, who died in infancy, and Anna-Frances-Eliza, who married a Mr. Slaughter; no children.

§Issue: Ezekiel; Stephen; Issac and Thomas, twins; Elizabeth; Rebecca. and Polly.

**Issue: John, Thomas, Elizabeth. Margaret, Mary, Rebecca, Ann

††Issue: Thomas, Esek, Elizabeth, Nancy.

He was a volunteer in the Continental Army; was one of Morgan's riflemen for a time; was in the battles of Monmouth, Princeton, and others. He hated the tories, and took pleasure in harassing them. When Lord Howe's proclamation offering protection to those who would desert the American ranks was published, one of his warmest friends took protection. Randolph never spoke to him again.

The following is taken from the U. S. Government publication, "American Archives," Vol. 1, fifth series, C. 18:

"*Gen. W. Livingston to Gen. Washington,*

"Elizabethtown, July 5, 1776.

* * * "'I have this moment received an express, with a piece of information, which I trouble you with, only from the advantage that may arise from your having intelligence of every kind, that the whole may be compared together; and, to prevent mistakes, I beg leave to transcribe the letter.

"" 'Sir: A relation of Mr. Dississoway stole away from Staten Island* last night in a small canoe, with JAMES FITZ RANDOLPH (both of whom are returned again;) they are staunch friends, and say, that if Dississoway does not return by tomorrow, his estate shall be forfeited. RANDOLPH says he is much insulted for being a Whig by the lowest sort, but must return to save his family from being hostages. He heard the Major with other officers declare, at about four o'clock yesterday, that there should be three thousand men loaded at Amboy this day, before that time; and from what he could gather that they intended to push matters in the Jerseys. We are in such a situation at this time, that with difficulty we raise a small guard, and many begin to talk of being afraid we are sold; and if the clamour is not soon stopped *God* only knows what soon will be the consequence in this place, as some intend to go over, themselves and families, and not return.' ""

"'This letter was written this morning, and is signed *Daniel Moores*, who is a principal man in that neighborhood.

* *

"'WILLIAM LIVINGSTON.

"'To His Excellency Gen'l. Washington.'"—(Am. Archives, Vol. 1, Fifth Series, C. 18.)

*Then just seized by the British under General Howe.—(E. M).

James Randolph himself died a martyr to the American cause, a prisoner in what was then called "the Provost," a wretched prison in New York—then in possession of the British.

He appears to have been the ancestor who dropped the prefix of "Fitz" from his name; as his *will* indicates. That instrument bears date 7th April, 1778. It describes him as "James *Fitz* Randolph, of the County of Monmouth, etc., yeoman." It was *signed* "James *Randolph* [*S*]." In the will, he devised to his wife, Deliverance, during her lifetime, "my plantation wheron I now live, as far as the fence south of Lahaway" (brook). His personal estate, by the inventory, amounted to £378.0.9; and he also devised saw mills, cedar swamps, pine lands, negroes, salt works, and a plantation at "Sketor Cove," and orders his sloop to be sold—indicating that he was a man of considerable property. His sons, Samuel, John, Isaac and Stephen, were to be put to trades, and to receive their portions at the age of 21; and his daughter, *Hannah,* hers at 18 or marriage. His executors were his brother, Benjamin Fitz-Randolph, Tobias Hendrickson (husband of Rebecca, sister of Deliverance Coward), and Thomas Forman, Esq.

This will was proven 20 Decr. 1781; so that James must have died about that time. His issue were as follows:

1.—*Hannah,* married *William Longstreet;* born March 23, 1761.

2.—*Samuel,* married Sarah Harrison; issue, Samuel, John Mary, (mar. a Slayton) and Deliverance. Deliverance mar. Abner Fairchild, and her children were Washington, and Hannah. Hannah Fairchild married 1st, a Mr. Wright, and had children.

3.—*John,* married Margaret Harrison; isssue, one daughter, Maria.

4.—*Isaac,* married Ellen Hunter; issue, Isaac, Rebecca Hannah, Elizabeth, Augustin, Ann, John, Dalziel and James.

5.—Benjamin; died in boyhood.

6.—Stephen; died unmarried.

Daniel and *Benjamin Randolph,* brothers of James, were also staunch Whigs during the Revolutionary War. The latter

bore honorably a Colonel's commission, and survived the war. Daniel Randolph was taken prisoner and thrown into a prison-ship, where the hardships he endured deprived him of the use of his legs—a misfortune from which he only partly recovered in after years. The story of his capture is thus told in the *Historical Collections of New Jersey*, p. 328-9, by Barber & Howe, edit. 1847:

"In the American revolution, a rude fort or blockhouse was erected a short distance N. of the bridge, at the village of Toms River, on a hill about a hundred yards E. of the road to Freehold, on land now belonging to the heirs of Elijah Robins, deceased. In the latter part of the war this blockhouse was attacked by a superior force of the enemy. Its commander, Captain Huddy, most gallantly defended it until his ammunition was expended, and no alternative but surrender left. After the brave little garrison was in their power, it is said they deliberately murdered five men asking for quarters. From thence, Captain Huddy, *Justice Randolph*, and the remaining prisoners, were taken to New York, when, suffering the various progressions of barbarity inflicted upon those destined to a violent or lingering death, these two gentlemen, with a Mr. Fleming, were put into the hold of a vessel. Captain Huddy was ironed hand and foot, and shortly after barbarously hanged on the shore at the Highlands of Navesink. Annexed is the British account of this expedition, taken from *Rivington's Royal Gazette*:

" 'On Wednesday the 20th inst. (March, 1782), Lieut. Blanchard, of the armed whale-boats, and about eighty men belonging to them, with Capt. Thomas and Lieutenant Roberts, both of the late Bucks County volunteers, and between thirty and forty other refugee loyalists, the whole under the command of Lieutenant Blanchard, proceeded to Sandy Hook, under convoy of Captain Stewart Ross, in the armed brig. Arrogant, where they were detained by unfavorable winds until the 23rd. About 12 o'clock on that night, the party landed near the mouth of Toms River, and marched to the blockhouse at the town of Dover (now Toms River), and reached it just at daylight. On their way they were challenged and fired upon, and when they

came to the works they found the rebels, consisting of 25 or 26 twelve-months men and militia, apprised of their coming, and prepared for defense.

"'The post into which they had thrown themselves was about six or seven feet nigh, made with large logs with loop-holes between, and a number of brass swivels on the top, which was entirely open, nor was there any way of entering but by climbing over. They had, besides swivels, muskets with bayonets, and long pikes for their defense. Lieutenant Blanchard summoned them to surrender, which they not only refused, but bid the party defiance; on which he immediately ordered the place to be stormed, which was accordingly done, and though defended with obstinacy, was soon carried. The rebels had nine men killed in the assault, and twelve made prisoners, two of whom were wounded. The rest made their escape in the confusion. Among the killed was a major of the militia, two captains and one lieutenant. The captain of the twelve-months men stationed there, is amongst the prisoners, who are all brought safe to town. On our side, two were killed—Lieutenant Iredel, of the armed boatmen, and Lieutenant Inslee, of the loyalists. Lieutenant Roberts and five others are wounded, but it is thought none of them are in a dangerous way. The Town, as it is called, consisting of about a dozen houses, in which none but a piratical set of banditti resided, together with a grist and saw mill, were with the blockhouse burned to the ground, and an iron cannon spiked and thrown into the river."

Samuel and *John Randolph*, sons of James, were in the militia while their father was in the regular service. *John* was also a privateersman during the war. His vessel was taken by a British ship. The privateers were all withdrawn from the prize except four, of whom John was one. These four determined on a recapture. Seizing an opportunity when most of the prize-crew were below, they closed the hatchway, and with crow-bars soon cleared the deck. They then gave warning to those below that any attempt to come up would be met by death. That sufficed; and the recaptured vessel was carried safely into New York. At the time, this was considered one of the most daring adventures of the war. When peace was re-

stored John Randolph was made Captain of a Revenue Cutter. While he was at St. Mary's, a British ship was captured and brought into that port [*Query*,—why and by whom?—E. M.] While she was lying in the river, another British vessel came up, anchored off the port, and manned boats to come in and cut her out. Randolph collected 40 or 50 men, and went on board the captured ship to defend her. As the boats approached, all of the men save 8 or 10 fled to the shore. When the boats reached the vessel, those eight or ten surrendered. Randolph, enraged at their defection, and desperate in his anger, resolved to die on deck rather than to fly or surrender. He fought until he fell by a sabre-cut that was as remarkable as was his own bravery—it cleft his head nearly down to the mouth.

V.—HANNAH RANDOLPH was born March 23, 1761. She married William Longstreet in New Jersey about 1783-85, and moved, with her husband to Augusta, Ga., as related in the sketch of his life; for which, see pp. D.—22-24. A lady of unusually strong and estimable character; wise, and finely educated for that time. Many of her letters to her sons are yet in existence, and show remarkable intelligence and thoughtfulness. She was a thrifty housekeeper and manager, a kind mistress to her slaves, and a loving parent. She died in 1837, having remained for twenty-three years a widow. A copy of her will, which was duly probated in February or March, 1837, is published herewith as Appendix, No. 8.

THE FAMILY OF LANGTON.

The connection of the family of LANGTON with this geneology arises through the marriage of Christopher Fitz Randolph with Joan de Langton, as related in the sketch of him on page D—55.

The family was an exceedingly ancient one. The first account of it discovered is the mention of

I.—GEOFFRY DE LANGTON, to whom was granted, in the time of king Henry III. (i. e., between 1216 and 1281) the estate in the county of Nottingham, known as Langton Hall, de-

scribed by metes and bounds, and granted to him by Richard de Ruddington. *Thoroton* says that this estate remained in Geoffry's family until the time of Henry VIII.

2.—THOMAS DE LANGTON and Robert de Barton, in the 13th. of Edward II. (i. e., in 1297), paid 20 shillings of the remainder of their account of the manor of Kirkeby-on-Asnefield, which was Lora de Stoteville's, an alien. This Thomas was evidently the heir of Geoffry, and probably his son.

There is now an hiatus of about one hundred years. The next member of the family mentioned historically, so far as I have discovered is

XV.—JOHN LANGTON, of Kirkeby, who died about 9 Henry VI. (i. e., about 1431), being then the owner of Langton Hall, and also of six closes, with the appurtenances, by the service of the hundredth part of a knight's fee. This John was evidently the heir of Geoffry, and probably his lineal descendant, since he was owner of Langton Hall. As he was also named "of Kirkeby," he was *probably* also descended from the Lora de Stoteville mentioned in the preceding paragraph, who was herself *probably* a descendant of the Henry de Stuteville, and of the John de Stuteville, who were mentioned in the sketch of Hubert Fitz Randolph, p. D.—53; but his descent from these Stutevilles is conjectural.

XIV.—RICHARD LANGTON was the son and heir of John, above; and succeeded to the estates on his father's decease, about 1431. He, in turn, was succeeded by his son and heir.

XIII.—CUTHBERT LANGTON, who in 6 Henry VIII (1515) enfeoffed several men of various estates, and amongst them Col. John Fitz Randolph. And there were covenants made about that time, between one Christopher Fitz Randolph and Cuthbert, in respect of the marriage of another Christopher, a cousin of the former, and the daughter of Cuthbert.

XII.—JOAN DE LANGTON, was the daughter of Cuthbert, in respect to whose marriage that contract was made. She espoused Christopher, son of Col. John Fitz Randolph, as told on page D.—55. When her father died without a male heir, she, as one of his daughters, inherited Langton Hall, and carried it into the Fitz Randolph family.*

* Tharoton's Nottinghamshire, Vol. 2, pp. 291, 292, 296.

THE FAMILY OF BLOSSOM.

X.—THOMAS BLOSSOM.—The story of this family carries us back to the days of *separatism* in England, to the *Leyden* settlement, and the *Plymouth* colony.

In the origin and development, the strengthening and the triumph, of those agencies which transferred from the Old World to the New the trial of fresh ideas and the experiment with free institutions, the colonists of New England had the leading part. It is a well-established and familiar fact, that the first successful and effective colonial enterprises of Englishmen in New England found their motive and purpose in religious variances within the English communion. The facts, persons and incidents which must be dealt with in treating this special matter of religious contention within the English Church, give us simply the opening in series and course of what under various modifications is known as the history of Dissent, and about which the strife then engendered has continued essentially the same down to our own times.

Who were the Separatists, whose utterances, scruples, and conduct seemed so whimsical, pertinacious, disloyal, and refractory in Old England, and whose enterprise has been so successful and honorable in its development in New England?

It is enough to start with the fact, that up to the reign of Henry VIII, the Pope asserted and exercised a supremacy in both civil and ecclesiastical affairs in the realm. If there was a church in England, it was allowed that that church must have a head. The Pope was acknowledged to be that head. Henry VIII., with the support of his Parliament, renounced the Papal supremacy, and himself acceded to that august dignity. When this occurred, all the loyal people of the realm became Separatists. It was nothing new. The term "separatist" or "sectary" carries with it a changeing significance and association, according to the circumstances of its application. It was first used to designate the Christians. When the unity of the Roman Church was sundered at the Reformation, all those once in its communion who parted from it were Separatists. All the Reformed bodies of the Continent substantially regarded them-

selves as coming under that designation, which might have been applied and assumed with equal propriety as the epithet, "protestants."

Nonconformity, Dissent, Separatism, in England, are not to be regarded as factiously obtruding themselves upon a peaceful, orderly, and well-established system, already tried and approved in its general workings. The Reformation in England was then but in progress, in its early stages; every thing had been shaken, all was still unsettled, unadjusted, not reduced to permanence and order. The early Dissenters regarded themselves simply as taking part in an unfinished reform. The Church in England, under entanglements of civil policy and complications of State, gave tokens of stopping at a stage in reform quite different from that reached by the Protestants of the Continent. There the course was free. In England it was impeded, leading to a kind of establishment and institution in hierarchal and ritual administration, which had more regard for the old Church, and looked to more compromise with it. From the first indication of the breach with Rome under Henry VIII, through the reigns of his three children and the four Stuarts, the Reformation was neither accomplished in its process, nor secure of abiding in the stage which it had reached. More than once during that period there were not only reasonable fears, but actual evidences, that a renewed subjection to the perfectly restored thralldom of Rome might, in what seemed to be merely a cast of the dice, befall the distracted realm of England. The Court, Council, and Parliament, pulsated in regular or irregular beats between Romanism and Protestantism.

The elemental ferment of the spirit which vivified Puritanism began with the circulation and reading of parts or the whole of the Scriptures in the English tongue. The free and devout reading of the Scriptures, when engaging the fresh curiosity and zeal of thoroughly earnest men and women, roused them to an amazed surprise at the enormous discordance between the matter and spirit of the sacred Book and the ecclesiastical institutions and discipline under which they had been living. "the simplicity that was in Christ," contrasted with

Richard Beauchamp, lord of the manor of Carse, died in 1439, leaving this John one of the executors of his will.—When John died in 1474, he was seired, not only of the manors of Apperly (in Deerhurst) and of "the Lea", but also of Carse-court: and Carse-court, Apperly and part of "the Lea" went to his son Philip, who must have married an heiress of Beauchamp's—for Carse-court remained in the Throckmorton family for 150 years. **Philip** had a son William, who had a son Thomas; but we are more immediately concerned with

XVI.—JOHN THROCKMORTON, son of John (XVII), called "of Lone", who married (1) a daughter of one Naufan, and (2) a daughter of THOMAS SCARGILL (XVII), by whom he had

XV.—CHRISTOPHER THROCKMORTON, who was sheriff of Gloucestershire in 1488; married a daughter of SIR JOHN HARLEY (XVI), knight, and died in 1514, seized of the manor of Culverden.

XIV.—WILLIAM THROCKMORTON, his son, was sheriff in 1530. Married the eldest of five daughters and co-heirs of SIR DAVID MATTHEWS (XV), of Glamorganshire. Had a daughter Elizabeth, who married Henry Huntley, of Boxwell. Giles Throckmorton, who in 1543 exchanged same land in Berkshire for lands in Deerhurst and the cite of the priory therein, Gloucestershire, was probably his son.

XIII.—SIR THOMAS THROCKMORTON, knight, son of William, was also sheriff in 1559. Married MARGARET (XIII), one of 6 daughters and co-heirs of THOMAS OF WHITTINGTON, (XVI), Esq., of Pauntley. Acquired the manor of Charfield in 1556. Seems to have married a second wife, Margaret, daughter and co-heiress of William Harwood, with whom he got three additional manors.

XII.—SIR THOMAS THROCKMORTON, son of first marriage, had livery of lands in 1567. Was sheriff in 1590 and 1603. Married, 1, daughter, Elizabeth, of Sir Richard Berkeley of Stoke Gifford; and, 2, daughter of Sir Edward Rogers. Died in 1607. Had several children; and his estate seems to have been considerably divided. Had a son William, who succeeded him as sheriff and who married Cicely, daughter of Thomas Baynham of Clowerwell, lord of Charfield and Fortworth. Sir Thomas had also a son (by which wife, not ascertained),

XI.—JOHN THROCKMORTON, born about 1580; his wife's name not known. He was the father of

X.—John Throckmorton, the immigrant, who was born about 1610. This gentleman immigrated from England to the colony of Massachusetts Bay, in company with Roger Williams and others, in the ship "Lion", embarking at Bristol, Dec. 1, 1630, and arriving at Nantasket on Feby. 5, 1631. He located first at Salem, and removed thence to Rhode Island. There, he is named, in a land-grant made 10th April, 1637, as "neighbor Throckmorton". On the 8th Oct., 1638, he was one of the twelve persons to whom Roger Williams deeded land that he had bought of Canonicus and Miantonomoh; and in which Williams speaks of him as "my loving friend and neighbor, John Throckmorton". At that time he was one of 54 persons to whom were allotted house-lots in Providence. Apl. 22, 1639, he bought of Roger Williams his interest in Chibachuwest, now called Prudence Island: and on 27 July, 1640, he and thirty-eight others signed an agreement for a form of government.

About this time, his name disappears for a period from Rhode Island records, appearing in those of New York as one of the first settlers of WestChester Township in West Chester County. In the "History of West Chester County" by Bolton it is said: "The township of West Chester was probably settled in 1642, by a Mr. John Throckmorton, with thirty-five associates, who came from New England, with the approbation of the Dutch authorities."—By their reply to his petition "their High Mightinesses" grant permission to "Mr." Throckmorton and thirty-five families to settle within three miles of New Amsterdam **(Albany Records.)** He received July 6th, 1643, for himself and thirty-five associates, from Governor Kieft his land-grant, in which he is called "Jan" Throckmorton. This grant embraced the eastern portion of the township of West Chester. "Throckmorton's Neck" he called it, in remembrance of his father's manor in Worcestershire; and the locality is still indicated by what is now known as "Throg's Point" (an abbreviation of Throckmorton's Point), on the northern shore of Long Island Sound, above New York City.

In this settlement at Westchester, John Throckmorton was associated with the celebrated Anne Hutchinson, who had been driven out of New England by the Puritans, for teach-

ing doctrines which they considered heretical. It appears probable that the Westchester Settlement was designed chiefly in her interest and that of her followers.—In a letter bearing date, 1 July, 1639, Throckmorton and his wife are alluded to (the Rev. Hugh Peters of Salem, writing to the church at Dorchester) as having had "the great censure passed upon them in this our church." He says that they and certain others "wholly refused to hear the church, denying it and all the churches in the Bay to be true churches." The Puritans seem to have felt bitter toward the recalcitrant colony. Mr. Winthrop records of them that "these people had cast off ordinances and churches, and now at last their own people, and for larger accommodation had subjected themselves to the Dutch, and dwelt scatteringly near a mile asunder." Rather a curious criticism from such a source, considered in the light of the history of the Plymouth colony.

The settlement here, however, was but brief. On the 6th of Oct., 1643, the Indians attacked it. Mrs. Hutchinson and all her family except one daughter were killed. The same fate befell some others; amongst whom, were all of the family of John Throckmorton who happened to be at home, except, perhaps,his wife. Some of the settlers that escaped the massacre went back to Rhode Island; John Throckmorton in the number; retaining, however, his lands and possessions in Westchester.—His name appears frequently in the records of Providence in connection with transfers of real estate. In 1652 he was Moderator; in 1655 admitted Freeman of the colony. From 1664 to 1675 he served as Deputy in the General Assembly. In 1667 was a member of the Town Council. In 1665, he was one of the grantees under the "Nicholls Patent", under which the shore townships of Middletown and Shrewsbury, Monmouth Co., N. Jersey, were settled.

On the 18th of July, 1672, he wrote a letter to Roger Williams upbraiding him for his letter to George Fox, in which Mr. Williams had proposed a joint discussion touching Quakerism. He addressed two other sharp letters to Roger Williams, in one of which he warned him to provide an armour of proof as Goliath did, for "G. Fox is furnished with that armour that thou hast no skill to make use of: having also the sword of the spirit to cut down thy airy imaginations."

Some time after 1677, in which year he was Town Treasurer of Providence, he moved to Middletown, N. Jersey.

John Throckmorton died and was buried at Middletown, New Jersey, where he was probably on a visit, some time shortly prior to the 1st Sept., 1687, since on that date the Providence records show an assessment of 3s. tax against "Estate of deceased John Throckmorton."—**Issue**

1—**Freegift,** died without issue, before 1669.

2—**Patience,** born 1640; married, in Dec., 1665, John Coggeshall, son of a prominent Rhode Island family. Died Sept. 7, 1676. Had nine children.

3—**John,** of whom hereafter.

4—**Job,** born Sept. 30, 1650, who was at Middletown in 1667, but previous to 1699 removed to Shrewsbury. Married in February, 1685, at Middletown, Sarah Leonard. Died 20 Aug., 1709, and was buried in the family burial-ground at Middletown, where his gravestone still exists, although now fallen and broken. Issue, John, Joseph, and Job; and, **probably,** James and Samuel. He is the ancestor of **all** the present family of Throckmorton in New Jersey. Frequently mentioned in New Jersey Archives, vol. XIX; see the index.

5—**Deliverance,** married prior to Aug. 14, 1671, James Ashton, first pastor of the Baptist church at Middletown and the first church of that denomination in New Jersey.

6—**Joseph,** married in Westchester Co., N. York, but no wife or children survived him. He was a sea-captain, and owned two vessels. His death was 2 Dec., 1689, (old style) while absent on a voyage from Philadelphia to Barbadoes. His will left his realty to Joseph, the oldest son of his brother John.

IX.—JOHN THROCKMORTON, JR., born between 1642 and 1646, was among the first settlers in New Jersey under the Nicholls Patent; and, like his brother Job, is found among the number to whom were awarded town-lots in Middletown at the original division in 1667. He is said to have come direct from Westchester county, where he had personally represented his father's interests. He appears, also, to have owned property either there or in Rhode Island; since, under date of Nov. 6, 1669, "John Throckmorton, Jr. of Middletown" appoints as his attorney in fact "his father, John Throckmorton, of Providence, Rhode Island." He married, at Middletown, Dec. 12, 1670, ALICE STOUT. He was a

prominent man in the public affairs of his time: was a member of the provincial assembly in 1675 and later years, and a justice of the court in 1683. He died in the summer of 1690, and was buried in the family burying ground on his own land in Middletown. He left a will, dated 17 July, 1690, and proven 22 August following. (East Jersey Deeds, Liber D., p. 221), wherein he disposed of a large estate. He is frequently mentioned in vol. XIX of the New Jersey Archives; see the index. Issue of John Throckmorton, Jr.:

1—**Joseph**, who died previous to 8 Oct., 1726, childless; his estate going to his sisters. Also often mentioned in vol. XIX New Jersey Archives.

2—**Rebekah**, who married John Stillwell, and removed to Staten Island, where they afterwards resided.

3—**Sarah**, married Dec. 8, 1691, Moses Lippet, and much of the property of her father (including the family burying-ground) passed into their hands.

4—**Alice**, married Thomas Stillwell of Middletown, brother of John.

5—PATIENCE, who married Capt. **Hugh Coward**, as stated below.

6—**Deliverance**, who died unmarried, as appears by a certain deed, dated May 7, 1750.

VIII.—PATIENCE THROCKMORTON, daughter of John Throckmorton, Jr., and Alice Stout was born somewhere between the years 1670 and 1685. She married Capt. Hugh Coward (see p. 116) between the years 1700 and 1705. Her married life was not long. Left a widow, she married, second, a man named Lake. She herself died before the year 1726.

———o———

NOTE: The Throckmortons of Virginia and of Texas are of a different branch. They were descended from Gabriel Throckmorton, who lived in 1577-1626, and was father of Robert Throckmorton, of the county of Huntington; who was father of John Throckmorton; who was father of Gabriel Throckmorton, who immigrated to Ware Parish, Gloucester Co., Virginia.

ANECDOTE.

MRS. JOHN THROCKMORTON, SR.—The following

family tradition was dictated by Mrs. Hannah Longstreet to Judge Longstreet, about the year 1830. The circumstances all serve to identify Mrs. John Throckmorton, Sr., as the heroine of the story: and the massacre of 1643, alluded to in the sketch of her husband, given above, as the occasion.

"Deliverance **Throckmorton** was the daughter of parents who settled in New England.* The inhabitants of her parents' neighborhood were attacked by Indians, and many of them were murdered. The mother of Deliverance was taken prisoner, and carried off by them. After a march of a day or two, the Indians encamped for the night, and fell asleep. While they slept, she made her escape, and retraced her steps as well as she could. She had not proceeded very far when she heard the Indians in pursuit. She laid herself down among the branches of a fallen tree, close to the trunk. The Indians came up, and, mounting the log almost over her, stood and listened. They were, however, soon lured away by the rustling of leaves at a little distance, caused by some hogs. They laughed when they discovered their mistake, and disappeared. As soon as they were gone, she resumed her march, continuing it all that night, and until the afternoon of the next day, when she reached a burnt village, the only inhabitant of which was a solitary chicken. This she caught; cooked it upon the burning end of a log, and ate it —thus preserving her life. Refreshed by her repast, she resumed her journey, and was soon met by a company of whites in pursuit of the Indians.—A few months afterwards, she gave birth to a daughter, and named her Deliverance in commemoration of her own remarkable deliverance from the savages. Deliverance fell heir to a large landed estate in Upper Freehold, Monmouth Co., New Jersey. She never married, and at her death, bequeathed her estate to her cousin, John Coward, who in consideration of her munificence, named his daughter, **Deliverance.**"—(Here Mrs. Longstreet fell into an error. Deliverance Throckmorton, the child so named, married James Ashton, as stated already. It was **her** neice, Deliverance Throckmorton, daughter of John Throckmorton, Jr, who was also her namesake, that remained single, got the fortune, and left it to John Coward. This De-

---

*Mr. and Mrs. John Throckmorton; but **then** in New York.

liverance lived in John Coward's family, and was his aunt. It was common in those days to speak of uncles, aunts, nephews and nieces as **cousins.** Hence, the term used by Mrs. Longstreet to describe the relationsship was not incorrect.—Deliverance Coward's inhibitance of the name was, therefore, one degree further removed from the story than Mrs. Longstreet placed it.—E. M.)

THE FAMILY OF STOUT.

(See tabulated pedigree, p. 115.)

XI.—JOHN STOUT lived in Notinghamshire, England, and was "of a good family." It is not now known what family he had other than his son.

X.—RICHARD STOUT, the first American progenitor of the American family of Stout, in New Jersey. He was born in 1609. The opposition of his father to his marrying a girl of inferior social position led him to enlist on a man-of-war. At the end of seven years of service he was discharged at New Amsterdam (New York), then a Dutch colony.

He was one of the first settlers of Gravesend, L. I., in 1643, under these circumstances: Lady Deborah Moody (daughter of Walter Dunch of England and widow of Sir Henry Moody) and her associates, to avoid persecution in Massachusetts and New England, left that locality and came to New Netherlands, settling in 1643 in Gravesend, among the more tolerant Hollanders. In October of that year she and her settlers were driven off by the Indians to Amersfoort (Flatlands), where they remained until the end of the Indian war, and then returned to Gravesend.—Stout must have been amongst the war-refugees from Gravesend.—By an agreement entered into at Amersfoort while the war was in progress (as per Lib. 2 of Gravesend records) it was concluded that in the settlement of Gravesend, each associate should be accommodated with a certain quantity of land within a certain fence to be erected, which land should be divided into 28 parts, each person to receive a part and also a building-lot. On Dec. 10, 1645, Gov. Stuyvesant issued a patent authorizing the establishment of the town; and on the laying out of it, in 1646, under the aforesaid agreement, plantation lots were assigned to RICHARD STOUT (lot No. 18), JAMES GROVER, Ralph Cardell, Lady Deborah Moody, and 23 others: and each of the said grantees was required to keep up twenty poles of the common fence.—On Oct. 26, 1649, he was living in Gravesend, and sold to John Thomas his crop

of tobacco for 210 guilders. In 1657, a town list was made of "what land every man hath in tillage ter yeare in Gravesend": and RICHARD STOUT had 17 morgens (34 acres)—the largest area of any man's, except that of Richard Vaughn, who had 18 morgens. Apl. 5, 1661, he bought plantation lot No. 26 of Edward Griffin.

The following account of the family of **Stout** is from Benedict's History of the Baptists.|| This account was published in 1790.

"The family of the Stouts are so remarkable for their number, origin and character, in both church and state, that their history deserves to be conspicuously recorded; and no place can be so proper as that of Hopewell (township), where the bulk of the family resides. We have already seen that Jonathan Stout and family were the seed of the Hopewell church, and the beginning of Hopewell settlement: and that of the 15 which constituted the church, nine were Stouts. The church was constituted at the house of a Stout, and the meetings were held chiefly at the dwellings of the Stouts for 41 years, viz. from the beginning of the settlement to the building of the meeting-house, before described (1715 to 1756). Mr. Hart was of opinion (in 1790) 'that from first to last, half the members have been and were of that name: for, in looking over the church book, (saith he) I find that near 200 of the name have been added; besides about as many more of the blood of the Stouts, who had lost the name by marriages. The present (1790) two deacons and four elders are Stouts; the late Zebulon and David Stout were two of its main pillars: the last lived to see his offspring multiplied into an 117 souls.'—The origin of this Baptist family is no less remarkable: for they all sprang from one woman, and she as good as dead: her history is in the mouths of most of her posterity, and is told as follows: 'She was born at Amsterdam, about the year 1627: her father's name was Van Princes. (She married in Amsterdam, and) she and her first husband, whose name is not known, sailed for New York, then New Amsterdam, about the year 1645. The vessel was stranded at Sandy Hook. The crew

---

||In this account are two errors of **date**, which are corrected from family records, and from "Smith's Hist. of N. Jersey", pub. in 1765,—the corrected dates being in brackets.

got ashore and marched toward New Amsterdam; but Penelope's (for that was her name) husband, being hurt in the wreck, could not march with them. Therefore, he and his wife tarried in the woods. They had not been long in the place before the Indians killed them both (as they thought) and stripped them to the skin. However, Penelope came to, though her skull was fractured, and her left shoulder so hacked that she could never use that arm like the other. She was also cut across the abdomen so that her bowels appeared; these she kept in with her hand. She continued in this situation for seven days, taking shelter in a hollow tree, and eating the excrescences of it. The seventh day she saw a deer passing by with arrows sticking in it, and soon after two Indians appeared, whom she was glad to see, in hope they would put her out of her misery. Accordingly, one made toward her, to knock her on the head; but the other, who was an elderly man, prevented him; and, throwing his matchcoat about her, carried her to his wigwam (said to have been near the site of Middletown village), and cured her of her wounds and bruises. After that, he took her to New Amsterdam, and made a present of her to her countrymen, that is to say, an **Indian** present, expecting ten times the value in return. It was in New York, that one RICHARD STOUT married her. He was a native of England, and of a good family. She was now in her 22d year, and he in his 40th. She bore him seven sons and (five) daughters, viz: Jonathan (founder of Hopewell), John, Richard, James, Peter, David, Benjamin, Mary, Sarah, ALICE (Deliverance and Penelope). The daughters married into the families of the Bounds, Pikes, Throckmortons and Skeltons, and so lost the name of Stout; the sons married into the families of Bullen, Crawford, Ashton, Traux, &c., and had many children. The mother lived to the age of 110, and saw her offspring multiply into 502, in about 88 years."

The marriage of Richard Stout and Penelope (**nee** Van Printz, which is the proper form) took place in 1648. They immediately removed to Middletown, New Jersey; where in 1648 they and five other (Dutch) families were the only white persons in the settlement. The old Indian who had saved her life used frequently to visit her: and upon one occasion saved the lives of the settlers by disclosing to her a plot of the Indians to massacre them all.

"The village of Middletown is in a fertile country, near the heart of the township. * * * The Baptist church is worthy of note, from its having been the first of this denomination established in the State. The annexed sketch of its origin is from **Benedict's History of the Baptists**: 'For the origin of this church, we must look back to the year 1667, for that was the year when Middletown was purchased from the Indians by 12 men and 24 associates. Their names are in the town book. Of them, the following were Baptists:

"RICHARD STOUT, John Wilson, William Layton, JOHN STOUT, Walter Hall, William Compton, JAMES GROVER, John Cox, James Ashton, Jonathan Bown, Jonathan Holmes, John Bown, Obadiah Holmes, George Mount, Thomas Whitlock, John Beeckman, William Cheeseman, JAMES GROVER, Jr.

"It is probable that some of the above had wives and children of their own way of thinking; however, the forenamed 18 men appear to have been the constituents of the church of Middletown, and the winter of 1668 the time."1

The foregoing purchase from the Indians was the outcome of a patent granted 8th Apl., 1665, by Col. Richard Nicholls, then in command of the English expedition at New York (see, sketch of Dirck Stoffeles Longstreet), to Richard Stout and 23 others, conveying that portion of East Jersey now represented by the county of Monmouth. As we have seen he had already resided there about twenty years. He became quite wealthy, and was a prominent man in the affairs of the settlement, up to the year 1690, about which time he probably died, aged about 82 years. The last mention of him is on Aug. 30, 1690, when he executed deeds to two of his sons. He and his family are frequently mentioned in the New Jersey Archives, vol XIX; see the index. His wife died about 1737, and is said to have been buried in the Throckmorton family burying-ground in Middletown.

IX.—ALICE STOUT, born in Middletown, N. Jersey, then an Indian country, about the year 1650, married John Throckmorton, as already stated, on the 12th day of December, 1670. See p. 124. Her husband died in 1690, leaving her sole executrix of his will, and on Aug. 23 of that year she was also granted letters of administration on the estate

---

1—N. Jersey Hist. Collections: Barber & Howe; p. 354.

of her deceased brother-in-law, Joseph Throckmorton (New Jersey Archives, vol. XIX, p. 179). In the following year she married Robert Skelton, another early settler of Monmouth county; by whom she had a daughter, Susannah, who afterwards married Barnes Johnson.

THE FITZ RANDOLPH-COWARD SIDE, Continued.

BRITTAIN FAMILY.

Number of Generation.

10.— Nicholas Stillwell mar. Ann Van Dyck

9.— Nathaniel Brittain mar. Anna Stillwell

8.— Joseph Brittain

7.— Rev. John Coward mar. Alice Brittain

6.—James Fitz Randolph mar. Deliverance Coward

5.— **Hannah Randolph**

THE FAMILY OF BRITTAIN, OR BRITTON.

After the method of that time, the name of this family was spelled in several ways: viz., Britton, Brittan, Britten, Brittain, Brittaine. The first and fourth are the modern epelling, and the first was that used by our ancestors, Alice Britton, who became the wife of Rev. John Coward.

IX.—NATHANIEL BRITTAN appeared in Long Island before the year 1660, and in that year married Anna, daughter of Nicholas Stillwell (X.). Nathaniel was an Englishman, and was either accompanied by, or shortly followed by his brother William. In 1660 also, Brittan bought of Hendrick Cornelise a plantation in Flatlands (Amersfoort) of 25 morgens (50 acres) as per p. 15½, of Lib. B. of Flatbush records.—In Jany., 1663, his father-in-law, Nicholas Stillwell, sold to Mr. Francoys de Bruynne, for 700 guilders in wampum a portion of the "Turk's plantation"; providing in the deed for reasonable satisfaction to be made by said Francoys to "my son-in-law Nathaniell Brittanie at or upon the 25th of March next for the house and housing which bee the said Nathaniell built upon said land." So that it appears that Nathaniell for a time lived on that plantation, and probably cultivated a part of it. On the 3d of April, 1664, he bought of Albert Albertse Terhune his New Utrecht farm, with the meadows thereunto appurtaining; but afterwards applied to the courts to declare this purchase void, or to make a deduction of £100 in the price, in consequence of the loss of the meadows through a decision of the convention at Hempstead in 1665 (convened after the conquest of the colony by the English) to the effect they belonged to the town of Gravesend. After considerable litigation the court decided that a deduction of 500 guilders wampum value should be made (see page 496 of **Valentine's Manual** of 1852). In 1664 Nathaniel obtained a patent for a tract of 144 acres on Staten Island, and in the following year was

licensed to keep a tavern in the city of New York. He did not remain in New York long, but soon settled on his Staten Island property; and here his brother also settled.

On the 14th of July, 1678, there was a great baptismal occasion in the Reformed Dutch church of Brooklyn. Among those baptised were the family of William Britten, of Staten Island, to wit; Mary, his wife, aged **31**; and their children, William aged 15, Nathaniel aged 13, **Rithart** aged 11, Joseph aged 9, Benjamin aged 7, **Jan** aged 5, and Daniel aged 1½. Nathaniel Britten and others are recorded as witnesses.

Nathaniel died in 1683, on Staten Island. There is evidence that at one time he was a dealer in dry-goods. His children were as follows:—

1—William, born in 1661, and a resident of Staten Island in 1701.

2—Nathaniel, born in 1663, and a resident of Staten Island in 1701.

3—Sarah, born in 1664.

4—Rachel, born in 1665.

5—JOSEPH, born in 1667; of whom, hereafter.

6—Rebecca, born in 1668, married Abram Cole in March, 1695.

7—Benjamin, born in 1669, and a resident of Staten Island in 1701.

8.—John, born in 1670.

9—Abigail, born in 1671.

10—Daniel, born in 1674.

11—Nicholas, bapt. Sept. 17, 1680; and **perhaps**

12—Abagail, second of the name.*

VIII.—JOSEPH BRITTON was born in 1667, probably in New York. We know but little of him. From 1714 to 1723 he owned 155 acres of land on the northern line of Upper Freehold township in Monmouth county, New Jersey, where the village of New Sharon now is. He afterwards removed to Trenton, where, in 1747, he owned lands upon which the State House now stands.‖

---

*Early Settlers of Kings Co.; Bergen; pages 50, 277; Kings Co. Genealogical Club Collections, v. 1, No. 4, p. 59, 60.

‖A Richard Britton, probably, though not certainly, a son of Joseph, was taxed in the year 1758 in Upper Freehold on 150 acres of land, and lived near John Coward's plantation in 1766.

VII.—ALICE BRITTON, daughter of Joseph, was born not far from the year 1708. She was married to JOHN COWARD, (VII.) about the year 1727, and died Oct. 30, 1766. She was buried near her husband. See p. 116.

XI.—GEORGE EVELYN, son of Thomas of Long Ditton, must have been born about 1600.

X.—REBECCA EVELYN, daughter of George Evelyn, above, was born about 1625-1630. Married DANIEL PARKE, and died at Long Ditton, January 2, 1672, leaving behind her "a most hopeful progeny."* She does not appear ever to have come to America. Her husband and family seem to have moved to Virginia after her death.

NOTE—There were a George Evelyn and a Robert Evelyn, brothers, sons of Robert Evelyn, of Godstone, in England, who were quite conspicuous in political affairs in the Province of Maryland, in the period 1633 to 1638. The former was commander of Kent Island. These men were probably grandsons of George Evelyn, of Watton, above; but that fact has not been ascertained with certainty. Robert Evelyn, the younger, is denominated, "of Watton, Surrey." The books cited below would doubtless clear up the point, but they are not accessible to me.||—E. M.

***Bruton Church**, p. 88.

||**Evelyns in America**; G. D. Scull, 1881; Neills **Founders of Maryland**, p. 54.

THE FAMILY OF HAWKINS.

This family comes into the pedigree of the Longstreets by the marriage of **Mary Hawkins** to **Emsley Parke.** The first ancestor known to the writer was

XIV.—JOHN HAWKINS, of Tavistock, who married JOAN, daughter of WILLIAM AMADOS (XV.) of Launceston, and held lands under the corporation of Plymouth, where he probably lived. "All evidence," says the **Dictionary of National Biography,"** points to the Hawkynses as being a Devonshire family settled for many generations at Tavistock."* John died before the year 1490.

XIII.—WILLIAM HAWKINS (or Hawkyns) "sea-captain and merchant, son of John Hawkyns of Tavistock," etc., was probably born at Plymouth," etc. "Early in the 16th century William Hawkins was a well-to-do freeman of Plymouth. He seems to have combined the business of ship-owner, captain and merchant, also serving occasionally as an officer in the king's ships. He may probably be identified with the Hawkyns who in 1513 was master of the Great Galley, a ship of 700 tons and 400 men. * * * We may suppose that he was the William Hawkyns who in 1523, and again in 1524, was associated with John Amados as collector of the subsidy in Devonshire. Hawkyns is described by **Hackluyt** as 'a man for his wisdom, valour, experience, and skill in sea causes, much esteemed and beloved by King Henry VIII., and one of the principal sea-captains in the west parts of England in his time.' Only three of his many voyages are mentioned. In or about 1528, in command of his own ship, the Pole, of 250 tons, he sailed for the Guinea coast, where he traded with the negroes for ivory and other commodities; and afterwards, 'arriving on the coast of Brazil, used there such discretion and behaved himself so wisely with these savage peo-

*Vol. 25, p. 227, under title "William Hawkins."

ple, that he grew into great familiarity and friendship with them.' In a second voyage, about 1530, 'one of the savage kings of the country was contented to take ship with him and to be transported into England,' Hawkyns leaving behind in the country, as a pledge of his safety, 'one Martin Cockeram of Plymouth.' This Brazilian king was brought up to London and presented to Henry VIII., at Whitehall, and a year later sailed with Hawkyns on the homeward voyage. Unfortunately he died in the passage out, and it was feared that Cockeram's life might be in danger. The savages were, however, 'persuaded by the honest dealing of our men;' the hostage was safely restored, and Hawkyns returned to England with his ship freighted and furnished with the commodities of the country.' In 1523-3, and again in 1538-9, Hawkyns was mayor of Plymouth, which he also represented in the parliaments of 1539, 1547 and 1553 (October to December). In February 1554-5, he is spoken of as 'recently deceased.' He married **Joan,** daughter of WILLIAM TRELAWNEY, (XIV.), and left issue two sons, William (died 1589) and John. Sir Francis Drake is sometimes spoken of as the nephew of Sir John Hawkyns, and it has been supposed that his mother must have been a sister of Sir John, a daughter, that is, of William Hawkyns. But no exact evidence of this has been found."* Of William Hawkyns, son of William, and brother of Sir John, there is a separate sketch in the **Dictionary,** vol. 25, p. 228: also a long separate article on **his** son William (third of the name) on page 229-230: both were navigators and adventurers.

XII.—SIR JOHN HAWKINS, or Hawkyns, "naval commander," etc., "was born at Plymouth in 1532," etc. "He was admitted a freeman of Plymouth in 1556. He was bred to the sea, and while quite a young man made 'divers voyages to the Isles of the Canaries,' where he learned 'that negroes were a very good merchandise in Hispaniola, and that they might easily be had upon the coast of Guinea.' The last of these voyages was probably in 1561. He had already, in or about 1559, married **Katherine,** daughter of

---

*Copied from vol. 25 of **Dict. of National Biography,** p. 227-228, title "Hawkins, William:" which article cites "**Worthies of Devon,** by Prince, and Hakluyt's **Principal Navigators,** vol. iii..

BENJAMIN GONSON (XIII.), treasurer of the navy, the son of WILLIAM GONSON (XIV.), treasurer of the navy before him and captain of the **Mary Grace** in 1513, when Hawkyns' father was personally master of the **Great Galley.** With the assistance of his father-in-law and of other influential friends, including Wynter, another principal officer of the navy, who became 'liberal contributors and adventurers,' he fitted out three good ships, and sailed from England in October 1562." Here follows a long account of Hawkins' adventures as a navigator, slave-trader, sea-captain, etc., the substance of which may be found in any biographical dictionary. This account is very interesting and complete. It covers seven pages, and concludes thus: "He died at sea off Porto Rico on 12 Nov. 1595. His death was doubtless due to the effect of the West Indian climate on a man no longer young, and with a constitution already weakened," etc. "Hawkyns was buried at sea, but in accordance with his will a monument was erected to his memory in the church of St. Dunstan's-in-the-East, in which parish he had resided for thirty years, and to the poor of which, as well as of Plymouth and of Deptford, he bequeathed the sum of 50 l.," etc.

"**Dame Katherine** died after a lingering illness in the first days of July, 1591. By the special permission of her husband, she executed a will on 23 June 1591. Hawkins married, secondly, Margaret, daughter of Charles Vaughan, of Hergest Court in Herefordshire, but had by her no issue. She died in 1619," etc.

"The name, though now commonly written Hawkins, was by Sir John himself, as well as by his brother William, his son Richard, and his nephew William, invariably written Hawkyns. The Spaniards, their contemporaries, preferred Aquinas or Achines, or occasionally Acle; in Portugese-Latin it appears as de Canes."*

XI.—SIR RICHARD HAWKINS, only son of Sir John Hawkins, by his first wife KATHERINE GONSON (XII.), was born in 1561 or 1562, and "was brought up almost from infancy among ships and seamen. He probably made at an early age short voyages in coasting or cruising vessels, but went for the first time to the West Indies in 1582, under the command of his uncle, William Hawkyns." Here follows a

---

*Dict. National Biography, vol. 25. pp. 212 to 219.

long sketch of his subsequent career; captain of the Dutch galliot in Drake's expedition of 1585-6 to the West Indies; commander of the Swallow against the Invincible Armada in 1588, and of the **Crane** in his father's expedition of 1590; commander of the **Dainty**, in which he started out in 1593 to circumnavigate the globe, but was captured off the western coast of America by the Spaniards after a three days battle (of which expedition, he wrote a history, "Observations in his Voiage into the South Sea," A. D. 1593, 8 vo., published in 1622). Released in 1603 from his captivity, Hawkins was knighted 23 July, 1603; was member of parliament for Plymouth in 1604, and in the same year was made vice-admiral of Devon. He was one of the council appointed by James I. in the Virginia charter of March 9, 1607, for the government of that proposed colony. In 1620-1 he was vice-admiral, under Sir Robert Mansell of the fleet sent to the Mediterranean to reduce the Algerine corsairs.

"In his will, executed on 16 April, 1622, he describes himself as 'sick and weak in body but of perfect mind and memory.' The next day (17 April) he was seized with a fit while attending the privy council on business connected with his last command, and died, as we are led to suppose, actually in the council chamber. By his wife, **udith,** who survived until 1629, he had issue, besides four daughters, two sons, John and Richard, from both of whom Mr. C. Stuart Hawkins, of Hayford Hall, near Plymouth, claims descent."*

At the time of his death, Sir Richard was living on the estate of Slapton, in Devonshire, which he had purchased. Of his daughters, three were named Margaret, Joan and Mary. His younger son Richard left issue who continued to live through successive generations about Kingsbridge, in England, so late, certainly as 1778.

X.—JOHN HAWKINS, older son of Sir Richard, was born about 1600. He succeeded to the estate of Slapton on the death of his mother in 1629. By his wife, HESTER, he had three sons (1) Robert, died in 1644 in childhood; (2) John, born in 1639 and died in 1642; and

IX.—JOHN HAWKINS, who was born in 1643. He

---

*Dict. National Biography, vol. 25 p. 223-225; Introduction to Hawkyns' **Voyages**; Hening's **Virginia Statutes,** vol. 1, p. 78.

married **Mary**, daughter of EDWARD DEWE (X.), of Islip, Oxfordshire, son of RICHARD DEWE (XI.), of Abingdon by (XI.) ELIZABETH TESDALE, a descendant of THOMAS TESDALE, one of the founders of Pembroke College, Oxford. By Mary Dewe he had fourteen children born between 1671 and 1698. In the year 1682 he settled at Great Milton, Oxfordshire. The date of his death is not given.| The second of his children was William Hawkins, born in 1673, the great criminal lawyer, author of the "Treatise of the Pleas of the Crown," sketches of whom may be found in almost any dictionary of biography.

VIII.—JOHN HAWKYNS, a younger son of John Hawkins above and MARY DEWE, born about 1680, emigrated to Virginia about 1705 and finally settled in St. Anne's Parish, Essex county. On Nov. 3d, 1724, Thomas Chew, of Spotsylvania county, Gentleman, conveyed to him, describing him as "John Hawkins, of St. Anne's Parish, Essex county, Gentleman," 1280 acres of land in St. George's Parish, Spotsylvania county, which had been granted to said Chew by patent dated June 12, 1723. And on the same day, Larkin Chew conveyed to him, under the same designation, 501 acres additional, also in St. George Parish, Spotsylvania county, being part of a patent granted to Larkin Chew, June 4, 1722.*

In the winter of 1724-5 he seems to have moved over into King William county, for on July 6, 1725, Harry Beverly conveyed to him, describing him as "John Hawkins of King William county, planter," 400 acres of land on the N. E. side of Pamunkey River, and on both sides of the mouth of Terry's Run, **alias** Jigging River.|| He died prior to Oct. 7, 1740, leaving a wife, Mary, and children, Joseph, William, Philemon, Elizabeth (wife of George Smith), Phoebe (afterwards married to a Smith), and Mary (wife of Tallaferro Craig). William, who resided in Essex county, describing himself as "of St. Anne's Parish, Gentleman," and his wife, Margaret, on Oct. 9, 1747, conveyed the 501 acres above

---

| Dict. Natl. Biog. v. 25, p. 230, title Hawkins, Wm.; Introd. to Hakluyt's voyages, p. 1.

*Spottsylvania County Records, Deed Book A., date Nov. 3, 1724.

|| **Idem.**, date July 6, 1725.

mentioned to Rice Curtis, Jr. the same having been devised to him by his father's will. On Oct. 7, 1740, and Nov. 16, 1742, deeds of conveyance and release were executed to Philemon by his brother Joseph and two of his sisters, in which their father is described as deceased. ||

VII.—JOSEPH HAWKINS is described in the deeds mentioned above as "son and heir" of John; which fact indicates that he was the oldest son, and under the custom of primogeniture would inherit such of his father's lands as were not devised by will. He must have been born about 1707 or 1708, for the earliest discovered record of him is in the Order Book of the Spottsylvania county militia, when he, as one of the officers of Capt. John Scott's company, produced his commission before the court of His Majesty's Honorable Justices, and took the oath as directed by law, on Sept. 2, 1729.* In 1740 and 1741, he was living in Hanover county, and in 1741 had a wife JANE; in the former year he executed one of the deeds of release to his brother Philemon, mentioned above; and in the latter, he received a deed from James Jones and wife to 200 acres in St. George's parish, Spottsylvania county, and made a deed to Robert Jackson of a lot in Fredericksburg. The death of his father and the inheritance and purchase of lands lying in that county seem to have caused him to return to Spottsylvania, for in the second deed of release to Philemon, executed Nov. 1742, he describes himself as of that county. |

On the 7th of Sept. 1742, he produced before the Justices, as above, his commission as Captain of a Company of Horse, in which commission he is described as "Gentleman;" and he took the customary oath. || On the 17th of August, 1744, he witnessed the will of one Edmond Byrne; and on the 4th of Sept. following was appointed administrator of that estate. On Nov. 6, 1744, William Gains and wife conveyed to him 442 acres in Spottsylvania county. On April 7, 1747, he had a deed from his sister Mary and her husband, "Taliver Cragg," to 200 acres of the lands of their father on Terry's Run above. On Nov. 1, 1748, he witnessed a deed made by

---

|| **Idem.**, dates mentioned.

*Order Book, 1724-1730, p. 342.

| Spottsylvania Deed Books C and D, dates Oct. 6, 1741,

Robert Stubblefield to Richard Baylor.|| On Oct. 21, 1760, he had a deed from Bernard Moore to 310 acres in the north fork of the North Anna River. On Nov. 19, 1767, he conveyed to Larkin Chew 120 acres on a branch of Plentiful Run, in Spottsylvania county.*

On March 30, 1769, he executed his will, witnessed by and others named in text above.
his brother Philemon and others, in which he left to his wife Jane, "the tract of land left me by my father with that part of the back land that I purchased from Bernard Moore, Gentleman." He also left lands to his son Joseph, and legacies to his daughters Lucy and Sarah. His wife Jane, and sons JOHN and Joseph were made executors. He died before March 27th, following; for on that day the will of Larkin Chew makes mention of him as then "deceased."| A deed by the son Joseph Hawkins and his wife Margaret, executed April 17, 1775, to Wm. P. Thurston shows that the widow Jane was still living at that date; and on January 13, 1784, she was living in Henry county, and executed a release of those lands to Thurston.||

VI.—JOHN HAWKINS, elder son of above, was born about the year 1735. In August, 1767, he was living in Hanover county as is shown by a mortgage of that date, executed to him by one Edward Coleman.* Shortly after the death of his father he moved down to Guilford county, North Carolina. He was appointed High Sheriff of that county under the royal government, just before the Revolutionary War, and maintained some state, keeping a coach with a coat of arms emblazoned on its doors. When the Revolution began he adhered to the cause of the colonies; consequently he was deemed by the English and tories to be a great traitor, especially because of the official position he had occupied. They captured him, mutilated his right ear, and imprisoned him during three years in a prison ship in Charleston harbor. At the close of the war he returned to his family in Guilford county, but lived only a few years, being accidentally drown-

---

|| Order Books, 1738-1749, p. 186.
*Deed Books E and G, dates named.
| Spottsylvania county Will Book D., pp. 525 and 431.
|| Deed Books, J and K, dates named.
*Spots. Deed Book G., date Aug. 22, 1767.

ed in the Haw river. The name and nativity of his wife have not been discovered; but he left two sons, John and Hardy, and three daughters, Elizabeth, MARY and Frances M.

The children of John and Hardy Hawkins, sons of John (VI.), went west, and settled in Illinois or Indiana. His eldest daughter, Elizabeth, married, first, John Dick, who died in a year, leaving a daughter, Mary Hawkins Dick, who subsequently became the mother of Mrs. Mary Hawkins Jackson, of Nashville, Tenn. Elizabeth Dick, widow, married Thomas Crowder, and left several children, one of whom married a Mr. Nash. Frances M. Hawkins, the youngest daughter, marriad a Mr. Duggar, and left two daughters, Eliza and Caroline the former of whom married a Dr. Williams, and the latter married Dr. Battle, both of Lagrange, Georgia.* Amongst the Longstreet letters, there are many references to "Aunt Duggar," and a few letters written by her.

V.—MARY HAWKINS, second daughter of John (VI.), was born Sept. 9th, 1771. She married Emsley Parke on the 16th day of October 1794; and had by him three children, Pleasant S., Alfred W., and Frances Eliza, whose history is given in the section on the Parke family, **ante** p. D—147. When she was left a widow by the death of Emsley Park, Mary married, about the year 1808, Mr. Ebenezer Torrance, by whom she had a son, Albert P., and a daughter, Mary Ann, who married Mr. McKinley, a lawyer of Newnan, Ga., and had children of whom the oldest were Charles and Anne.

Albert P. Torrance, half-brother of Frances E. Parke (Mrs. A. B. Longstreet) married, and left a number of children, in whom Judge Longstreet was always much interested, and who lived about Abbeville, Miss., until Judge Longstreet died in 1870, after which they began to scatter. The oldest of these Torrance children was Eliza, who married first a Mr.

---

*The foregoing family history was given by Mrs. Jackson, in a letter bearing date Oct. 30, 1893, she being then 72 years old, and having gathered the same from family letters and family conversations. One of Aunt Duggar's letters, written in 1834, mentions the four children of Eliza Williams, to-wit: Henry, Mary, Frances nd Georgianna; also, of the three Battle children she names Howard, Andrews and Mary Hawkins

Arnold by whom she had children, Elba, Parke, and ————; and being left a widow, married a Mr. McGregor of Abbeville, Miss.

NOTE.—**Mrs. Jackson,** in her letter of Oct. 30th, 1893, stated that John Hawkins (VI.) had a sister who was the mother of the celebrated Davy Crockett, scout, congressman, and hero of the Alamo; that she had herself seen letters written by him in which he called the children of John Hawkins "cousin." In his autobiography, Davy Crockett says that his mother was a Maryland woman named Rebecca Hawkins. No mention is made in the will of Joseph Hawkins (VII.) of a daughter Rebecca. No doubt the statement of Mrs. Jackson about the letters she saw is correct; but Davy's mother must have been a niece of John's (VI.), daughter of his brother Joseph, who may have married a Crockett and lived for a while in Maryland (David Crockett was born in 1786), or may have been a cousin of John's. Davy mentions an uncle Joseph Hawkins. [E. M.]

THE FAMILY OF TRELAWNEY.

XVIII.—WILLIAM TRELAWNEY was one of a family settled at Trelawne, in Cornwall, before the Norman Conquest, as they claimed. In 1366 he conveyed land in the vill of Trelawne to his son,

XVII.—SIR JOHN TRELAWNEY, knight, who was the first of the family to receive knighthood; who married MATILDA, daughter of ROBERT MYNWENICK (XVIII.), and who was living in 1406-7.

XVI.—SIR JOHN TRELAWNEY, knight, their son, was flourishing in 1422, succeeded to the family estates in Cornwall, was elected to parliament from that county in 1413-14, and again in 1421. He fought at Agincourt and received from Henry V., at Gisors, a pension of 20 l. a year, which was confirmed by Henry VI. Had a coat of arms. Was alive in 1423-4. Married AGNES, daughter of ROBERT TREGODECK (XVII.), and left two sons, Richard and John. Richard was member of parliament for Liskeard in 1421-2, and in 1423-4, and died in 1449, leaving daughters only.

XV.—SIR JOHN TRELAWNEY, second son, succeeded to the estates on his brother's death; was member of parliament for Truro in 1448-9, was sheriff of Cornwall in 1461-2, and left male issue.

XIV.—WILLIAM TRELAWNEY, son of above, was born about 1450, and was the father of

XIII.—JOHN TRELAWNEY, born about 1490, who married WILLIAM HAWKINS (XIII.) as told **ante**, p. D—155.

APPENDIX NO. 1.

WILL OF STOFFEL LONGSTREET.

IN THE NAME OF GOD AMEN. I Theophilus Longstreet of the town of Shrewsbury in the county of Monmouth and eastern division of the Province of New Jersey, yeoman, being in good health of body and of sound and disposing mind and memory, thanks be given to almighty God for that and all other manifold mercies to me, do in this my time of health, make, ordain and constitute this, my last will and testament, in the manner following, that is to say, first and principally, I give and recommend my soul into the hands of God that gave it and my body to the earth, to be decently buried at the discretion of my executors, nothing doubting but at the general resurrection to receive the same again by the mighty power of God; and as touching my temporal estate, wherewith it shall please God to bless me with at the time of my decease, I give, devise and bequeath the same after the following manner and form: I give unto my beloved wife, Mercy, the use of any fire room of my house which she shall choose, two featherbeds and furniture and as many household goods as will be sufficient for her to keep house with all during all the time she remains my widow and during the said time I order my sons to find her sufficient firewood cut and carted to her door and a milch cow winter and summer and if she sees cause to keep one of the young Negro wenches my will is that she may have which she pleases of them during my said wives life with this proviso, that said Negro wench at her decease, shall be reckoned and esteemed as part of my personal estate. What I have herein given to my wife is given to her instead of her thirds or dower. I give, devise and bequeath to my eldest son, Richard Longstreet, the plantation whereon he now lives and has in possession on the north side of Manasquan River to him, his heirs and assigns forever my old gun and the sum of fifty pounds out of my personal estate. I give, devise

and bequeath to my second son, Gilbert Longstreet, the plantation whereon he now lives and has possession of on the north side of said Manasquan River to him, the said Gilbert, his heirs and assigns forever. My will is, and I hereby give, devise and bequeath all my tract of land on the north side of said river and joining to my said son, Gilbert's, plantation, and all land and meadow on the south side of said river equally to be divided between my said sons, Richard and Gilbert, to them, their heirs and assigns forever. I give, devise and bequeath to my third son, Aury Longstreet, all that tract of land and meadow at Raritom whereon he now lives and has in possession to him the said Aury his heirs and assigns forever. I give, devise and bequeath to my fourth son, Theophilus Longstreet, all my land and meadow in said town on Long Branch and Raccoon Island being in my own possession, to him, the said Theophilus, his heirs and assigns forever and my best horse, he having his choice. All the rest of my lands and meadow, wheresover situate, I give, devise and bequeath to my said four sons to be equally divided in four parts to them, their heirs and assigns forever. And I hereby order my said four sons to pay unto their mother during her widowhood the sum of ten pounds yearly, that is, fifty shillings a year apiece. All the residue of my personal estate not herein before bequeathed, I give to my said four sons equally between them, share and share alike. My will is that my said four sons shall equally among them pay unto my six daughters, namely, Yonica, Catharine, Mary, Sarah, Moica and Anne, the sum of six hundred pounds, that is, one hundred pounds apiece to each of my said daughters, and that will be one hundred and fifty pounds for each of said sons to pay to their said sisters. And that my said sons pay unto them the sum of fifty pounds apiece within a year after my decease and so on in that proportion yearly till their one hundred and fifty pounds is paid and that they pay their eldest sisters first. Lastly I constitute and make my said four sons executors of this my last will and testament, to see the same performed and I do hereby disannul and make void all former will or wills by me made.

IN WITNESS whereof I, the said Theophilus Longstreet, to this my last will and testament contained in one sheet of paper have set my hand and seal this first day of December in the year of our Lord One Thousand Seven hundred and

thirty-nine and in the thirteenth year of His Majesty King George the Second's reign, etc., 1739. Memento I give to my eldest daughter, Yonica, my old loom, this being done before signing, sealing and publishing.

STOFFEL LONGSTREET. (L. S.)

Signed, sealed, published and declared by the said Testator to be his last will and testament in presence of us, John Little, Thomas Wainwright, Jo Seares, Jacob Dennis.

Note there are no razures nor interlineations in the original nor record aforegoing.

BE IT REMEMBERED that on the first day of March in the year of Our Lord One thousand Seven hundred and forty-one John Little and Thomas Wainwright, two of the within witnesses, personally came before me, Thomas Bartow, duly authorized to prove wills, qualify exec'rs, etc., in the Eastern Division of New Jersey, and they being duly sworn on the holy Evangelists, did depose that they were present and saw Stoffel Longstreet, the Testator within named, sign and seal the within written Instrument and heard him publish pronounce and declare the same to be his last Will and Testament and that at the doing thereof the said Testator was of sound mind and memory to the best of their knowledge and understanding and that at the same time John Sears and Jacob Dennis, the other subscribed witnesses, were present and that each signed his name as a witness in the Testator's presence. THOS. BARTOW.

BE IT ALSO REMEMBERED that at the same time Richard Longstreet, Gilbert Longstreet, Aury Longstreet and Theophilus Longstreet, the Executors within named, personally came before me and were sworn to the due execution and performance of the within Will and Testament according to law. THOS. BARTOW.

LEWIS MORRIS, Esqre., Captain General and Governor in Chief in and over His Majesty's Province of New Jersey and Territories thereon depending in America, and Vice Admiral in the same, etc., To all to whom these Presents shall come, Greeting. Know ye that at Perth Amboy on the first day of March in the Year of Our Lord One thousand Seven Hundred and forty-one, the last Will and Testament of Theophilus Longstreet of the town of Shrewsbury, etc., yeoman, deceased, was proved before Thomas Bartow, who was there-

unto duly authorized and appointed for that purpose and is now approved and allowed of by me, he the said deceased, having while he lived and at the time of his death, goods, rights and credits in divers places within this Province by means whereof the full disposition of all and singular the goods, rights and credits of the said deceased and the granting administration of them, also the hearing of amount calculation or reckoning and the final discharge and dismission from the same unto me solely and not unto any other inferior Judge are manifestly known to belong and the administration of all and singular the goods, rights and credits of the said deceased and his last Will and Testament in any manner of way concerning was granted unto Richard Longstreet, Gilbert Longstreet, Aury Longstreet and Theophilus Longstreet, the Executors in the said Testament named Chief of well and truly performing the said Will and of making a true and perfect inventory of all and singular the goods, rights and credits of the said deceased and exhibiting the same into the Registry of the Prerogative Court in the Secretary's office at Perth Amboy and of rendering a just and true account when thereunto lawfully required, being duly sworn on the Holy Evangelists. In testimony whereof I have caused the Prerogative Seal of the said Province to be affixed at Perth Amboy in the year of Our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred and forty-one.

THOS. BARTOW, Reg'r.

NEW JERSEY PREROGATIVE COURT.

I, HENRY C. KELSEY, Register of the Prerogative Court of the State of New Jersey, do hereby certify, that the foregoing is a true copy of last Will and Testament of Theophilus Longstreet, late of the County of Monmouth, deceased, as the same is taken from and compared with the original record, recorded in Liber C of Wills, pages 491, etc., and now remaining on file in my office.

Witness my hand and the Seal of the Prerogative Court, this twenty-sixth day of April A. D. 1893.

HENRY C. KELSEY, Register.

APPENDIX NO. 2.

WILL OF MOICA (VAN PELT) LONGSTREET.

In the name of God Amen. I, Moica Longstreet of the Township of Shrosbury in the County of Monmuth and Eastern Division of the Province of New iarsey, widow, being in but reasonabel health of body, but of sound and disposeing mind and memory, thanks be given to Almighty God for that and all others of his manifold merseys to me, done in this my time of health, I make, ordain and constitute this my last Will and Testament in manner following, that is to say, first and principally I give and recommend my sole into the hands of God that gave it and my body to the earth to be decently buried at the discretion of my executors nothing doubting but at the Resurrection to receive the same again by the mighty power of God; and as touching my temporal estate wherewith it shall please God to bless me with at the time of my dissease, I give, devise, bequeath the same after the following manner and form I Give all my Waring Close and all my household goods and all the goods that my son Stoffel Longstreet gave to me at the time that he sold his plantation to be equil divided amongst my daughters to be equil Divided amongst them namely Jeane Cattren Mary Sary Masy and Anne to them and their assigns I Give Devise and bequeat unto my dafters as follows that is to say that all the remaining part of my estate after my decease after all my just Debts be paid for to be put out at interest and the Interest to be giving to my Daughters that is to say to them that hath the most need of it that I leave to the discretion of my Executors and in Case that my Executors sees an acation for to make use of the Prinsibel for the seport of my Dafters or of any part of it I leave it to there discression and further my Will is that if my Executors sees that any of my Dafters Children that is the female kind is non capabel for to releave themselves nither anybody for to

Genealogy and History
A Branch of the Family

of

L A M A R

With It's Related Families

of

Urquhart, Reynolds, Bird, Williamson, Gilliam, Garratt,
Thompson, Herman, Empson, and others



Compiled and Written for the Private Information
of His Own Children by

EDWARD MAYS
OF JACKSON, MISSISSIPPI

Subject to Correction

THE VARIOUS LAMARS

CHAPTER ONE

Introductory

In connection with the history of this family, or rather of a branch of it, in the United States, it will perhaps be interesting to note the instances in which it occurs in other countries. No special search has been made for information in this direction; what data are presented being only such as have peen casually noted in general reading and by reference to easily accessible biographical dictionaries.

When the name is analyzed it will be perceived at once that the basic part of the name is the final sylable "mar." Indeed the name is sometimes now written "La Mar;" and formerly it was frequently so written, or even as De La Mar. The notion is suggested that there may be some ancient connection between the very early bearers of that name and the Scottish family of **Marr,** celebrated in the histories and literature of that country, which claims descent from Martacus, earl of Marr, of the year 1065. In the fifth chapter of **Quentin Durward,** Sir Walter Scott tells how it was common, in the latter part of the fourteenth, and the earlier part of the fifteenth centuries, for younger sons of noble Scottish families to find their way to France, and seek their fortunes there. Of course, however, this is simply matter of speculation and fancy.

The bearers of the name of Lamar, with its natural and obvious variants, seem to be grouped about the western coast of Europe, from Spain to Belgium, and in England. The earliest, and in more respects than one, the most notable occurrence of it, is in the case of

Gillaume de La Marre, an English theologian, apparently of Norman blood, who lived in the Second half of the 13th century; was a professor at Oxford; opposed the philosophical and theological teachings of "St. Thomas" (Thomas a Beckett?); and wrote **Reprehensori ure seu Correctoriunne fratris Thamae,**—At the same period there was also

Sir Henry de la Mare, who witnessed a charter in county Survey, England, granted by the Earl of Survey, in 1254*.

---

*County Records (Weld), p. 409.

Dr. Lemaire, also, was physician to king Henry VII (1486-1509); and resided in Derbyshire. †

Philibert de La Mare, was born at Djou in 1615, died at the same town 1687; a historian and sevant, attaining to vast learning in history and archeology.

Nicholas de La Mare, was born at Naisy-le-Grande in 1639, and died in 1723. Was commissioner of the king in various missions to the provinces when France was in distress from a grain famine, and received public commendation from Louis XIV,—Wrote **History of the Police** (government) of **Paris**; and is remembered by that book.

* * * * **La Mare,** born at Quimper. Circa. 1708, died 1746. He wrote plays and some non-dramatic poetry. A volume of his collected works was published in Paris, 1763: **Oevres Diverses de La Mare.**

Pierre Bernard La Mare, was born at Barfluer, 1753, and died at Bucharest in 1809. He was appointed civil commissioner to the "Isles du Vent;" was secretary to the minister of Foreign Affairs; Secretary to the embassy at Constantinople; Consul at Verona. He was also known as a scholar, particularly a translator. Amongest other works, he translated **The Monk,** one of the most grotesque and horrible of English novels, by Matthew Lewis.

Jaques Michel Hurel de Lamare, was born in Paris in 1772 and died at Caen, 1823. He was a celebrated musician. By the age of 22, he had arisen to the head of French violancellists; was appointed a professor at the conservatory (Paris?); resigned for a tour in Germany and Russia. At St. Petersburg, he was "attached to the service of the Czar." He also composed music; concertos, duos, and **un air varie.**

Jean Baptiste Hippolyte Lamare, was born at Bruxelles, in 1775 and died 1855. Was a French general; was appointed sub-lieutenant in 1793; promoted to a colonelcy in 1811; served in the Russian and German campaign, and was engaged in the battle of Waterloo. Under the Restoration was director of the fortifications at Bayanne; was made a **General de Brigade** in 1832. He wrote treaties on military engineering.

---

†History of Derbyshire (Pendleton), p. 19.

Pierre Alexander Lemare, born at Grand Riviere in 1766, died in Paris 1835, was active during the earlier years of the French Revolution in supporting liberal movements. As President of the Department of Administration of Jura, he combatted the reaction after the 9th Thermidor; after the 18th Brumaise he proclaimed Napoleon a traitor. He was also known as a writer and servant; was the author of numerous philological works.

Jose Lamar, Spanish-American general, was born at Cuerca, in Quito (now Ecuador) in 1778. His father was Marcas de La Mar, administrator of the Royal Treasury at Cuenca. Jose Lamar entered the army in Spain when very young; fought in the Peninsular War. Was sent to Peru, with rank of brigadier in 1815; was governor of Callao Castle when it surrendered in 1821. He resigned, joined the patroits in the war of liberation, and was made general of division. In 1822 was a member of the governmental junta; commanded the Peruvian contingent at the battle of Ayachucho (Dec. 9, 1824), and was made marshal. Was elected President of Peru, Aug. 24, 1827. In 1828 Columbia declared war on Peru. Lamar was defeated near Cuenca, Feb. 26, 1829, and signed a treaty of peace, which he afterwards tried to evade, but his own officers rose against him, arrested him; and he was exiled to Costa Rica, where he died Oct. 11, 1803. In 1847 his remains were removed to Lima with great pomp. *

of the other sketches (except where specially noted) are abridged from a French Biographical Dictionary (Paris) in the library of the University of Mississippi.

It is rather a singular and striking fact to find in the brief space of twenty years these soldiers of the name of **Lamar** so conspicuous in such widely scattered regions, and two of them raised to the dignity of President of an independent republic, to wit: Jean Lamare, serving at Waterloo and made a general in 1832; Jose Lamar at Ayachucho in 1824 and President of Peru in 1827; and Mirabeau B. Lamar, conspicuous at San Jucinto in 1836, and President of Texas in 1838.

However, these remarks are merely preliminary to the

***The Universal Encyclopedia,** vol. 7, title "Lamar"—All

history of the family in question. There is no known evidence of any relationship between any of those Lamars (except Mirabeau B. Lamar) and the subject of this sketch.

Justice L. Q. C. Lamar, in his lifetime on more than one occasion spoke to the writer of a relationship existing between his family and the French statesman and author, Alphonse de Lamartine; but the allusions were casually made, and the writer, understanding them to be mere speculations based on the similarity of names and not made seriously, paid but little attention to the matter. However, it seems that there was more of conviction or knowledge on the subject than the writer apprehended, as will appear by the following extract from a letter written December 15, 1903, by Mrs. Harriet C. L. Jones, of New York City, daughter of Garaway B. Lamar, to Mrs. Mary A. Ross, of Grenada, Miss., sister of L. Q. C. Lamar:

"It surprises me greatly to find no mention in the book about Cousin Lucius of his visit to Lamartine, and especially to learn that he never told his son-in-law, or you his beloved sister, about that visit. I **know** I did not **dream** what he told me of that interview. Why he should have spoken to me about it, and been so silent to his own family, I cannot understand excepting that he knew my mother's family, the Careneous were Huguenots and took refuge in Switzerland at the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes. Before my father died he spoke of knowing that Lamartine was our blood relation. Being a child I never thought to ask him **how** he knew it. Then years after father's death, when cousin Lucius spoke of the fact that he **knew** Lamartine was our relative, and that Lamartine acknowledged it to him very willingly; I was not at all surprised, remembering what father had said on the subject. When Dr. Currey was sent to Spain to represent the United States, he called to see me before sailing, and I told him then what cousin Lucius had said of his interview with Lamartine. I asked Dr. Currey, as the Lamars were originally Spanish (according to Lamartine) to see if he could get any trace of them in Spain. After Dr. Currey left, I was plunged into ten years of law-suits, and afterwards years of inflamation of the nerves, and consequently did not follow up the subject."

There is evidence that the English and the French Lamars claimed gentle descent; for both used coats of arms.

The blearon of the arms of the English Lamars, as given in the books on heraldry are: "**Lamare,**—Argent a lion rampant gules;" which in simple terms means: a silver shield with, on it, a rampant lion colored red.

The arms of the French Lamars were more intricate: **Blazon**: Quarterly, azure, gules, argent and rest; in the first quarter a mullett of the third: in the second quarter a harp or; in the third quarter a rose leaved and stalked all proper; in the fourth quarter a dexter arm couped at shoulder embowed vambraced hand clasping sword all proper: **Crest,** Ducal helmet affronte coronetted: **Motto,** a scroll bearing the following, "Va T'en Aux Etoiles."

Thos. J. Chappell, of Macon, Ga., kindly supplied me with a photograph of the above, and wrote: "The photo is from an ancient sheet of music, handwork, belonging to my mother" (Mrs. Loretto Lamar Chappell), "and tradition has it to represent the coat of arms."—From which it would appear that there is an "ancient" tradition of noble descent, with the design of a coat of arms to back it. No research has been made to ascertain whether such a coat of arms is known to French heraldry.

CHAPTER TWO.

THE IMMIGRANT LAMARS

Mr. Richard L. Maury, in a very interesting article on the early Huguenot settlements in Virginia (see **Virginia May, of History,** vol. XI., p. 289) says that:

Ere Jamestown was three years old, Frenchmen, presumably Huguenots, were here, and for a hundred years and more these noble Christians continued to cross the Atlantic to our hospitable shore. In 1621 sixty families under Jesse de Forest asked leave to come to Virginia, but were diverted by the Dutch to their colony of Manhattan and founded New York. In 1630 Baron de Sance seated a colony on the lower James. Thereafter, as persecution increased in France, and 'twas known how Huguenots prospered in Virginia and were welcomed there, the movement culminated in the coming of eight hundred for Manakin Town. Many others came, sometimes singly, sometimes a family or two, or a little band of relatives and friends, and located where they could in lower Virginia. . .

"Never had such immigrants crossed sea before; never have peaceful foreigners so impressed their many virtues upon their new surroundings.

"In character, cultivation and attainments they were the flower of their great party, for they were those who successfully resisted the most direful persecution, literally in mind, body and estate; the most overwhelming defeats and calamities; the most tempting bribes of honors, riches, peace and security at home for themselves, their wives and little children, if they would recant, or so pretend. Refusing, they voluntarily accepted banishment, poverty and distress in strange lands rather than renounce their belief. Louis, with all his power, could not prevail against the ramparts of their faith. Had they been weak they would have gone with the stream as king and noble and so many did, securing peace and prosperity in beloved France, but they were staunch and inflexible, courageous to brave all perils and make all sacrifices, save one, in their determination to worship God according to the dictates of their own conscience, to keep the faith at every cost, and rather than abandon the church of their fathers, to abandon all else. Refined in the fires of affliction

seven times repeated, for seven generations, purified through the unfailing laws of heredity, strengthened and developed from generation to generation in mind and faith by the constant exercise and teaching of their religion at great danger and sacrifice, and by their heritage of devotion from faithful parent to dutiful child to resist the allurements and attractions of rewards and favors constantly offered if they would recant, and by poverty and need enured to hardship, industry and danger, as survivors they were the fittest of all their glorious race in every class in France, as their children were, and are, in America.

"Nothing more clearly shows their high and noble nature, and their superiority, and great attainments in all that makes man great and woman loved, than the esteem and the successes attained in Virginia. They came in direst poverty generally, for they had forfeited all to save their faith; aliens, exiles, speaking only the tongue of hereditary foes, of foreign habit and foreign ways, from fertile, populated France, to the frontier of Virginia, to a country with whom theirs was at war and constant feud, to a colony most loyal and devoted, almost a close corporation governed by a proud and exclusive colonial aristocracy representative of a few of the English nobility jealous of its privileges, and zealously opposing any enlargement of its favored circle. Yet so impressive were they in their many virtues and attractions that prejudice was soon disarmed, exclusion forgotten, that reason and self-interest both prevailed, and the exiles are taken by the hand, and soon to the heart, and become the pastors, teachers, valued friends and esteemed and cherished companions of the best; many became prosperous farmers, merchants and professionals, and ere long gained the same social position in Virginia that had been theirs in France. The children play together and intermarry, and their posterity have ever since been found among the leaders of this land, first among the foremost wherever danger, duty, the good of mankind, or patriotism called, on sea or land, in court or senate, in peace or war, at home or abroad, in commerce or in science, brilliant examples for emulation in every community blessed by their presence, and diffusing a beneficial influence wherever they were, giving rich return for the welcome and aid given them in their dire distress.

"Of that highminded race, on all who bear
"Their names or lineage may their mantle rest—
"That firmness for the truth, that calm content
"With simple pleasures, that unswerving trust
"In toil, adversity and death which cast
"Such healthful leaven 'mid the elements
"That peopled this new world."

(Richard L. Maury in Virginia Mag. of Hist. v. XI, p. 289).

Bishop Meade, in his charming book on **The Old Churches and Families of Virginia,** tells about the immigration into that colony of the Huguenots. While he treats mainly of the later period subsequent to the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, yet he also says that "as early as the year 1660 some few came over, fleeing from the earlier persecutions. They were sufficient in number to induce an act of the Assembly granting them the privilege of citizens."*

IX—**Thomas Lamar,** is the American ancestor, the original immigrant. The date of his birth is not known; but the known dates of his denization or naturalization, in Maryland, and of his death, indicate that he was born about 1630. He and his brother Peter are said, in Maryland, to have come from Wiese a small village in Flanders, not far from Lille; but it is hardly likely that Wiese was their native place, since their naturalization entry describes them as "subject of the crown of France," and Flanders did not become a French province until 1667. The two brothers first appear in Virginia; and they probably came over with the Huguenot settlers written of by Bishop Meade as above, about 1660. From the fact that in the records of the time when the two are mentioned the name of Thomas is first written, it is fairly inferable that he was the elder brother.

It may easily be conceived that they who had abandoned their native land because of religious intolerance, and into whose souls the longing for religious freedom must have effected so strong a lodgement, would not feel altogether at home in Cavalier Virginia, where the Angliean church was established by law, and where its ritual so much resembled the Catholic.

---

*Vol. 1, p. 466.

In Maryland was a province near by, where fair and free lands were to be found, with easy citizenship and equality of civil rights, with a representative form of government, and where perfect freedom and equality of religion prevailed—Lodge, writing of the administration of the Calverts at this exact period, says: "It would have been difficult to find at that time better governors than these Calverts proved themselves. Moderate and just, they administered the affairs of Maryland sensibly and well. Population increased, and the immigration of Quakers and foreigners, and of the oppressed of all nations, was greatly stimulated by a renewal of the old policy of religious toleration."†

Moved most likely by those considerations, Thomas and Peter, after a stay in Virginia, moved into Maryland, and there obtained from Lord Baltimore a certificate of dennozacon (i. e., denization, naturalization) on Nov. 17, 1663, in which it is recited:*

"Whereas, Thomas and Peter Lamare, **late of Virginia,** and subjects of the crown of France, having transported themselves into this province here to abide, have besought us to grant them, the said Thomas and Peter Lamare, leave to here inhabit as free denizens, and freedom land to them and their heirs to purchase," etc.

The spelling of those names will be observed. During the first fifty years after the settlement of the family in America their name was variously spelled and written: as Lamore, Lamare, Lamaire, De La Maire, Lemaire, Le Mar, La Mar, Lemarre, Lemar and Lamar. In the early days of Maryland all the papers that found their way into the records, and so have been preserved, were prepared by petty officials and lawyers who had very limited educational advantages (in which respect the colony of Maryland was not singular), and the spelling of personal names varied almost with the number of instruments in which those names appeared. The simple name of Brown was spelled Broun, Brown, Browne, and Broune, all in instruments conveying property to the same individual. It is not strange therefore, that a Frenchman in an English

---

†Short History of the English Colonies, ch. 3.

*Annapolis, Md., Land Records, vol. XX, fol. 95.

colony should have his name spelled phonetically, and that the spelling by different parties, should differ in many respects.

The following entry appears, of date November 24, 1665: "Thomas Lamer demands land for the transportation of himself, and Mary, his wife, her freedom rights.* Sworn before me, Thomas Seniman,—I, Thomas Lamar do assign all my right and title of these two rights written mentioned to Cuthbert Fenwich for a valuable consideration, as witness my hand this 25 November, 1665—Thomas Lamare"—so signed.†

From 1663 to 1666 other foreigners had received naturalization papers from Lord Baltimore similar to the one mentioned above; but it would seem that some question was raised in the colony as to the power of Lord Baltimore to grant to foreigners valid rights to hold lands, without the approval of the council; and in 1666 the minutes of the council show a petition of Thomas and Peter Lamare, amongest others, wherein is cited the circular issued by Lord Baltimore in 1649 inviting immigrants to come, and by which they were induced to come, and the fact is stated that they were unable to hold title to their lands, and the Council was prayed to approve their naturalization papers—which was done.††

On March 6, 1676, James Thompson, deputy surveyor, gives certificate of survey that he has laid off for Thomas Lamare of Calvert Co., "Planter," 50 acres of land, "called the Fishing Place situate in Calvert County on the West side of the Patuxent River and the North side of Trent Creek," adjoining lands on Trent Creek already occupied by him. The records of Calvert County have been destroyed, but in 1696 that part of the county West of Patuxent River, including "Fishing Place" was thrown into Prince George county; and the records of this county show that he had large land interests acquired prior to 1696.

---

*That is, the land bounties which the Maryland proprietors allowed to each immigrant; even making an allowance on accounts of the servants bought.

†Annapolis Land Records, vol. 9, fol. 312.

††Maryland Archieves: Proceedings of the Council 1666 to 1667, fol. 489.

His will, (see Appendix A.), dated Oct. 4, 1712, probated May 29, 1714, refers to him as of Prince George County, Province of Maryland; names well-beloved wife Anne, who is appointed executrix; gives to son Thomas "the plantation on which he now dweleth with half the land which I now possess;" to son John "the plantation on which I now dwell with half of the land;" wife to "enjoy all my land and movable estate both here and in England during her widowhood;"—my well-beloved wife Anne Lamar shall not disturbing son Thomas Lamar from any priviledge or molest from clearing or building during his possession."—The witnesses were John Pottinger, Jr., Samuel Pottinger, John Turner, Jr.

Thomas seems to have been a man of deep piety. His will runs thus: "being sick and weak in body but in sound and perfect mind and memory, praise be therefore given to Almighty God," etc.—"I recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God my Creator hoping through the merits death and pashon of my Saviour Jesus Christ to have full and free pardon and forgiveness of all my sins and inherit everlasting life," etc.

Thomas was evidently married twice: (1) to Mary—who came with him into Maryland, but whether from France or from Virginia only, there is nothing to show; and (2) to Anne, who was Anne Pottinger, "a descendant of Sir Thomas or Sir William Pottinger;" this being evidenced by various things appearing in the old county records. His children were: (1) Thomas; (2) John. Before continuing their history, however, it will be well to say a few words more about the other early settlers of the name.

THE IMMIGRANT, PETER LAMAR

Peter Lamar (Lamare), younger brother of Thomas IX., owned lands, lived and died in Calvert County. He was probably unmarried when he came to Maryland. His will, dated Oct. 9, 1693, probated March 31, 1694, names wife Frances, and daughters; (1) Ann; (2) Mary; (3) Margaret. Ann married Peter O'Neal, whose will, dated April 7, 1745, probated Sept. 16, 1747, refers to himself as of St. Mary county, Maryland, and names his children: (1) John; (2) Peter Lamar; (3) James; (4) Elizabeth; (5) Sarah; (6) Mary. Since Peter Lamar seems to have left no sons, there are probably no descendants from him of the name.

THE IMMIGRANT, DR. JOHN LAMAR

John De Le Maire, in 1674, was naturalized in Maryland, and the naturalization papers show that he was a native of Aujow, France*—On Nov. 19, 1674, by virtue of a warrant issued from the office of his lordship's secretary unto John Lemair, Oct. 25, 1674, the surveyers laid out certain lands to him in Charles County, called "Hispaniola."—In 1675 and 1676 other patents were issued to him for other lands. In 1682 he had a re-resurvey made.† He seems to have come to Maryland about ten years after the two others—probably was drawn thither by them. He was a doctor as is shown by the records in the accounts of numerous administrators; and while his brothers (presumably) were planters and settled on their farms, he settled in the more populous community of Port Tobacco, about thirty-five miles away, for his business. His wife was Margaret, daughter of Archibald Waughoque (sic), as appears by a deed of gift from the latter to his son-in-law, Feb. 1, 1676 (1677, present style) of 300 acres on West side of Port Tobacco, or St. Thomas Creek, called "Waughoque Purchase." This Dr. John seems to have moved away from Charles County, and probably out of the Province, about 1687. No descendants of his are known. The only evidence of which I know that he was brother to Thomas and **Peter consists in the similarity** of the names, and a tradition in all branches of the family that the original settlers were three brothers. He may be the ancestor of some persons of the name whose connection has not been ascertained.

---

*Maryland Archives: Proc. and Acts of the Assembly, 1666-1676, p. 400.

†Annapolis Land Records, vol. 15, fol. 370, 181, 378; Idem. vol. 21, p. 404.

CHAPTER THREE

THE CHILDREN OF THOMAS (IX), THE IMMIGRANT

Returning now to the descendants of Thomas, IX., one of the three immigrants written about in the preseding chapter, attention will first be given to his older son, Thomas.

VIII—Thomas Lamar, (2), the elder son of the immigrant Thomas, was, as before stated, the son of the first wife, Mary. He was probably born between 1663 and 1670. By his father's will, as shown before, he was given the plantation whereon he then resided, and one-half of other lands subject to the right of the widow, his step-mother. Numerous land tranactions recorded in Prince George County show that he held an extensive property, about 3,000 acres, much of which was on Rock Creek, and on Muddy Creek, near Rockville, Montgomery Co., Maryland. Here was his home, and here he died, and probably is buried. His will (see Appendix B.), dated May 11, 1747, probated Jan. 31, 1748, is recorded in Prince George County, vol. 1, fol. 426. Of course, he died between those dates.

He also seems to have been a devout man. His will runs, in part, thus: "I recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God hoping through the merits of Christ to have free pardon of all my sins," etc.

An old record which has been preserved by Miss Mary Russell, a descendant, states that his wife was Martha Urquhart, sister of the Rev. John Urquhart. He seems to have been owner of several extensive tracts of land, called the "Joseph and James," (1,000 acres), the "Conclusion," the "Two Brothers," "The Pines," and "Hunting Hill."—These lands his will divides, by metes and bounds, between his sons Robert, Thomas, John, Samuel, James, Alexander, and his sons-in-law, William Williams and Clementins Davis. The wife was made executrix; but nothing was left to her or to the daughter, Elizabeth; from which facts, and the futher fact that while the first direction is that "my debts be paid," nothing is said about the means for their payment, nor any allusion made anywhere to any other property except the lands specifically devised, it is quite clear that Thomas died partially interstate, only men-

tioning in his will what property he wanted to go differently from the appointment of the law. The record of probate states that "The widow refuses to stand to the will and has recourse to her thirds."*

John Lamar, (2), younger son of Thomas Lamar (IX), the immigrant, by Anne Pottinger, the second wife, by his father's will, was given the home place, in Prince George County, and there he probably lived and died. On Jan. 21, 1714, he married Susannah Tyler, daughter of Col. Robert Tyler and Susannah Duvall, his wife.

His will, dated Feb. 28, 1758, probated Nov. 1, 1758, is recorded in Prince George County, Book TT 1, folio 267, and names his wife (as Susan), and eleven children: Thomas, John, Robert, Susannah, Ann, Mary, Elizabeth, Maseen (a son), Richard, Rachel, and Priscilla.

Thomas Lamar, (3), son of John Lamar (2) above, was a physician. He married Mary Hill, of Prince George County, moved to the Maderia Islands, engaged in merchandising, and there accumulated great wealth. He then moved to London, England where he was a merchant, and where he died about 1796 without issue. His will is recorded in London. His widow died on the 11th of Feb. 1799.

John Lamar, (3), son of John Lamar (2) above, died in 1776. He married Susannah Pigman, and they had eight children as follows: (a) Marien Lamar, who was a major in the Revolutionary Army, and was killed in battle at Parle Tavern; (b) Maximilian Lamar (who married a Swedish lady, had a son, John, and a daughter, Polly) was a general in the Revolutionary Army, and was killed at the battle of Saratoga; (c) Jacob Lamar; (d) Rebecca Lamar; (e) Susannah Lamar; (f) John Lamar, who married and had a daughter, as to whom see note 1, below; (g) Abraham Lamar, who was a captain in the Revolutionary Army; and (h) William Bishop Lamar, as to whom, see note 2 below:

NOTE 1—This daughter married a Mr. Belt, and their son seems to have been called William Belt Lamar. He married a

---

*Record of Wills, Prince George county, Liber 1, fol. 426 et seq.

Miss Waters, whose daughter, Margaret, married a Mr. Kephart and lived near Leesburg, Va.—A sister of this William Belt Lamar married a captain Herbert, who died of camp fever during the war of 1812; and their daughter married Dr. Chatard, of Baltimore.

NOTE 2.—William Bishop Lamar, above born Aug. 3, 1745, married April 19, 1767, to Elizabeth Smith. He is called "colonel," in the records. His children were: (1), Mary, born Dec. 31, 1767; (2), Herrietta, born Feb. 14, 1769, married Eli Thrasher; (3), Sarah, born Sept. 20, 1770, married Elias Thrasher; (4), John, born Sept. 28, 1772; (5), Archibald Smith, born June 25, 1774; (6), Anne, born March 26, 1776; (7) Thomas, born Dec. 17, 1777, married Mary Willard; (8), Susannah, married Eli House; (9) Richard, who married Mary John; (10), William; (11), Benjamin; (12), Rachel, who married Mr. Killenberger; and (13) Marien Tyler Lamar, who lived to be more than 100 years old.

Thomas Lamar, above, son of Wm. B. Lamar, moved to South Carolina, and had children as follows: (1), Mary Ann who was born Jan. 26, 1803, at Aiken, South Carolina and who married Dr. Tighman Biser; (2), Elizabeth, who married Robert Finley, and, second, Robert Spencer; (3), William Bishop, Jr., who married Elizabeth Hasley; (4), Rebecca, who married William Johnson; (5), Loretta, who married Andrew Kessler; (6), Benoni Smith, who married Mary Thomas; (7), Ellender, unmarried; and (8), John, who married Rebecca Johnson.

Robert Lamar, (3), son of John Lamar, (2), above, and Susannah Tyler, married Sarah Hall, and lived in Frederick County, afterwards Alleganey County, Maryland. He died in 1815. His children were: (1), William; (2), Priscilla, who married James Drane; (3) Richard, who was living in 1800; (4), John, who married Sarah Marshall, and died about 1795; (5), Marien; (6), Elizabeth, who married John Simpkins of Alleganey County.

Marien Lamar, (4), son of Robert (3) followed the example of his uncle, Dr. Thomas, and went to London, and afterward to the Maderias; he was appointed United States Counsel there on Nov. 8, 1803, and held that office until June 22, 1807.

William Lamar, (4), son of Robert (3), above, was a distinguished officer of the Revolutionary Army. He also served in the war of 1812. His remains and monument have recently been removed from the Vale Farm, near Frostbury, Maryland, to the cemetery at Cumberland. The monument is a quadrangular shaft, on a base, and surmounted by a carved capital; all of coralline limestone. The inscription is as follows:

"In Memory of

"Col. William Lamar

"A Soldier of the Revolution."

"At the tap of the Revolutionary Drum in his native State (Maryland) to the standard of his country he flew, nor left it until she was acknowledged free and independent amongst the nations of the earth. At the battles of Harlem Heights, White Plains, Germantown, Mammouth, Staten Island, in the North; at Camden, Guilford Couthouse, Eutaw, the capture of forts Motte, Granby an Watson, at the siege of Ninety-six, in the South, he was present and actively engaged, and by his coolness, bravery and skill he rendered signal and most important service to the army. At Guilford the desperate charge of the American troops which turned the scale of victory in their favor was ordered at his suggestion, which was communicated to General Greene through Major Anderson; and the plan of firing Fort Motte, which was successfully adopted and which occasioned the immediate surrender of that fort by the British, originated exclusively with him. In the disastrous battle of Camden he was foremost in the fight and was by the side of De Kalb when that brave officer fell.

"At the seige of Ninety-six the immortal Kosciusko was his fellow-soldier and served under him for a while. The noble conduct of this brave Pole was the theme of his praise and admiration through life.

"Entering the army at the commencement of the Revolution, he continued with it, engaged in active service, until the close of the war. During the contest he made but one visit home.

"He married early; had sons and daughters, the most of whom he lived to see begirt (?) with growing infancy. Possessing a heart full of kindness and a temper almost proof against

anger, he was respected in all the relations of life. He was born in Frederick County, but for 30 years previous to his death resided in Alleganey County, where he

"Died January 8, 1838,

"Aged 83 Years."

"The Patriot's corpse may rest beneath this sod,
"His spirit's home's the bosom of his God.

"Also

"Margaret (Worthington) Lamar,
His Wife."

"She was loved and esteemed by all who knew her for the many virtues that adorned her character through life. She died, universally lamented, March 17, 1821, aged 54 years." —See Note 3, below:

Susannah Lamar, above, daughter of John Lamar (2) and Susannah Tyler, born Nov. 23, 1726, married Alexander Magruder, and died in 1805; and her daughter, Eleanor, born Jan. 6, 1766, married Dr. John Briscoe, 4th, of Jefferson County, Va., (whose mother was Elizabeth McMillian), and left descendants of that name.

Anne Lamar, above, sister of Susannah above, was the second wife of Dr. John Briscoe, 3rd, of Berkely County, Va., whose first wife had been Elizabeth McMillian.

See Note 4 below:

NOTE 3.—The children of Col. William Lamar were as follows: (1), Sarah, unmarried; (2), William Lynch, who married Mary A. Briscoe; (3) Louise, married a Mr. Tilghman, of Washington, and whose daughters became Mrs. Holliday and Mrs. McKaig; (4), Anne, who also married a Mr. Tilghman, son of her sister's husband by a former wife; (5), Richard, unmarried; (6) Mary, who married M. C. Sprigg, and had numerous descendants.

William Lynch Lamar, above, and his wife, Mary Annapler Briscoe, had children, (1) Hanson Lamar; (2), William Lamar; (3) Harriet Louisa who married G. W. Richardson;

(4) Marie Lamar; (5), Eliza Lamar; (6), Mary Jordon, who married Nelson Clarke Read, and had numerous descendants.

NOTE 4.—The principal authority for the account in this chapter of the descendants of John Lamar (2), son of Thomas, the immigrant, is the statement of the same by **Emily Emerson Lautz** in two elaborate articles on "The Lamar Lineage and Arms," published in the Baltimore "Sun," of Oct. 22nd, and Oct. 29th 1905. She obtained the information from descendants of the family living in Maryland and in Washington City.

CHAPTER FOUR

THE CHILDREN OF THOMAS, Jr. (VIII)

As was shown in the previous chapter, Thomas Lamar, Jr., son of Thomas the immigrant, left the following children: 1 Robert; 2 Thomas; 3 John; 4 Samuel; 5 James; 6 Alexander; 7 Mrs. Williams; 8 Mrs. Davis; 9 Elizabeth.

VII—John Lamar (3), son of Thomas Lamar, Jr. (VIII.) by his wife, Martha Urquhart, is supposed to have been the fourth child of his parents. He was born on April 22, 1713. His wife's name was Rachel, but her surname has not been ascertained. On Jan. 25, 1755, he and his brothers, Robert, Thomas and Samuel, sold several tracts of land, part of their inheritance, to the Rev. John Urquhart, "gentleman," "Rector of Al-Faith Parish in St. Mary's County." (See Appendix ----------, for the deed by John.)

Albert (3) 00

Mrs. Davis (3)

Thomas (3) 00

Elizabeth (3)

Thos. Jr., (2), John (3) 0.

John was married at this time, as is shown by the deed he made. He then moved to South Carolina, and in 1757 had a grant of 300 acres of land there, on Beaver Dam Creek. In 1759 he removed to Georgia and in September of that year, his petition for a grant of 150 acres of land on the Savannah River, between Spirit Creek and McBear's Swamp, was before the Governor and Council, in which it was stated that he was lately come into the Province and had a child. Survey ordered (Colonial Records of Ga., vol. VIII, p. 127.). In 1771, he executed a deed to Alexander Urquhart (nephew and heir of the Rev. John) correcting the deed made by him of the Maryland lands in 1755. He was a planter and slave-owner. Died in Georgia. His children (order conjectual) were (1) Zachariah; (2) John; (3) Thomas; (4) Basil; (5) Jermiah. The child mentioned in his petition to the Governor and Council of 1759, must have been the youngest, then a minor.

Robert Lamar, (3), born about 1700, eldest son of Thomas, Jr., (VIII), married and he was amongst those who sold lands to Rev. John Urquhart and moved to South Carolina in 1755, as told above. He settled in the Edgefield District, and died there prior to 1771; for in this year Robert, Jr., his son, ~~and apparently his only heir~~, executed a deed to Alexander Urquhart, nephew and heir of the Rev. John, correcting a mistake made in the deed of 1755 by his father. ~~This latter Robert, born about 1725, (4) only son of Robert (3) above, married Sarah Wilson and had sons:~~ Thomas,[4] James,[4] Philip[4] and ~~Robert~~.

Philip Lamar, ~~Sr.~~, (5), son of Robert Lamar (4) was born about 1757; he was a planter of wealth and influence. He married his cousin, Ruth Davis, (see page_____), and died in 1807, leaving his family comfortably well off. His wife died about the same time, and they were buried in the same grave in Edgefield District. Their children were George, Philip Jr., John D., and Mrs. Ann Grice (who was mother of Washington C., Quintins C., and Yates Grice).

George Lamar, (6), son of Philip (5) above, was the father of Austin, Philip, John, George McD., Thomas J., James Anderson, Mirabeau, and Bolivar.

Philip Lamar, Jr., (6), son of Philip (5) above, was born in Edgefield District, South Carolina, in Nov. 1785; married Mary Anthony (daughter of Lewis Anthony). About 1825 he moved to Gwinnett County, Georgia, and later to Mussogee County, where he lived, a man of prominence and influence, until his death in 1857. He took much interest in the family records, and was the first to collate and prepare them. His children were: Sarah A. R., George W., John E., William Henry, James S., and Philip F.

John E. Lamar, (6), son of Philip (5) above, removed to Dennison, Texas, and was father of James E., Charles L., Henry G. and Arthur.

William Henry Lamar, (6), son of Philip (5) above, was father of Alexander B.

James Sanford Lamar, (6), son of Philip (5) above, was born May 2, 1829, in Gwinnett County. In 1856 he married Mary, daughter of Joseph Rucker. He was a clergyman of the Christian denomination; and prepared a family chart from

data gathered by his father. Died in 1905. His children were Joseph R. Philip F. and Mary.

Joseph Rucker Lamar, (7), son of Rev. James Sanford (6 above, was born at Ruckersville, Ga., in 1857; member of legislature 1886-89; commissioner to codify the laws of Georgia in 1895; associate justice of the Supreme Court of Ga. from 1903 to 1906. In Dec. 1910, was appointed to the Supreme Court bench by Pres. Taft, being the second of the family to that high place. Married Jan. 30, 1879, Clarinda H. Pendleton, daughter of William K. Pendleton, of Bethany, W. Va.; children, Philip Rucker, born Jan. 16, 1880; William Pendleton, born Oct. 5, 1882; Mary, who died an infant.

Philip F. Lamar, son of Philip (5), had Philip, Henry John, Albert J., and Miller Q., Washington C. Grice had two children, names not ascertained. Quintins C. Price had Clyde, Cora Lizzie and Anne. Yates Grice had Lamar, and Cary.

James Lamar, (4), above, son of Robert Lamar (3), above had Charles (5) (father of James, Henry and Charles); also he had Mrs. Sarah Wade (5) (mother of Mrs. Sarah Johnson, and of Mrs. Mary McCain); also he had Mrs. Mary Bacon (5).

Mrs. Sarah Johnson, above, had Landrum Johnson (father of John, George R. and J. Morgan); also she had Mary, who married Bolivar J. Lamar (9).

Thomas Lamar, (4), above, had Thomas G. (5) (father of Robert, Thomas G. Bolivar, Mrs. Martha Peay, Mrs. Eliza Starke, and Mrs. Ann Wardlaw); also he had Mrs. Ann Milledge (5) (mother of John Milledge); also he had Mrs. Elizabeth Waldo (5) (mother of Benjamin Waldo, Jacob Smith, Mrs. Elizabeth Mimms and Mrs. Sarah Mays); also he had Mrs. Sarah Starke (5); also he had Mrs. Catherine Speight (5) (mother of Mrs. Mary Hankinson and Mrs. Eliza Barnes.)

Robert Lamar, (7), (son of Thomas G.) had William, Thomas, Robert, Ella, Annie, Carrie, Mattie, and two others, names not ascertained.

Thomas G. Lamar, Jr., (6), (son of Thomas G.) had Thomas G., Cary, and five others, names not ascertained.

Bolivar Lamar, (6), (son of Thomas G.) had Bolivar J., who married Mary Johnson, as above stated.

[The futher generations of this collateral branch are too numerous to collect information about without a mass of correspondence too burdensome to undertake—E. M.]

~~**Robert Lamar**, (5), son of Robert (4), died unmarried, about the year 1808 (see 4 Dess., S. Car. Report, p. 617).~~

Thomas Lamar, (3), son of Thomas (2) (VIII), married Eleanor_____. He also sold his inherited lands in Maryland to Mr. Urquhart in 1755, and moved to South Carolina, where he had extensive grants of lands on the Savannah River, in 1756, 1757, 1758, 1764 and 1768. He settled on Beach Island, and his family remained there until of late years. He was very wealthy; was living in 1771, when he witnessed a deed. His wife died in the winter of 1777-78, and a daughter, Ruth, died in the spring of 1778. He left a son, Thomas (4), who left a son, Mack (5) and a daughter, Mrs. Elizabeth Watley (5). Mack Lamar (5) had sons: Barra (6), Thomas (6) and John H. (6). Barra Lamar (6) had sons, Thomas B. (7), George M. B. (7), and Mirabeau (7).

Samuel Lamar, (3), son of Thomas (2) (VIII), married prior to 1755, at which time he also sold his lands in Maryland and moved to South Carolina, in 1756 he held lands in Beaufort District in that state.

James Lamar, (3), son of Thomas (2) (VIII), also sold his lands in Maryland about 1755, and moved away. The name of his wife was Valinda_____.

Alexander Lamar, (3), son of Thomas (2) (VIII), married, and he also sold his Maryland lands about 1757, and moved down into Georgia. He seems to have been the first to settle in that state, of all the family. In December 1762, his petition was before the Governor and Council stating that he had been four years in the Province, and had a wife and three children, and praying for a grant of 300 acres in Halifax, next to McBear's swamp—which swamp was one of the boundaries of the tract prayed for by his brother, John in 1759. He got the land (Colonial Records of Ga., vol. VIII, p. 772, vol. IX, p. 178.

The daughter of Thomas (2) (VIII), who married William Williams, (son of William and Sarah Williams, born March 20, 1704) before her father's will was made, probably moved to North Carolina after her father's death.

Mary (3), daughter of Thomas (2) (VIII) married Clementins Davis before her father's will was made. Afterwards they moved to Edgefield District, S. Carolina, and later to Richmond County, Ga. She had a son, Clementins Davis (4), whose children were: (1) Rachel, who married Zachariah Williams (5) (mother of Calaway, Zachariah, Mrs. Sarah Lee and Mrs. Evelina Coggins); (2) Mrs. Mary Hill (5) (mother of Louisa, who married John Lamar); (3) Garaway Davis (5) married Ann Moore, father of Mrs. Mary Ann Lamar, wife of Henry Graybill Lamar).—Mrs. Mary (Lamar) Davis had also a daughter, Ruth Davis, who married Philip Lamar, Sr., her cousin.

Elizabeth Lamar, (3), daughter of Thomas (2) (VIII) was born on Oct. 26, 1722, and married June 18, 1747, Joseph Wilson, elder brother of the Sarah Wilson who married her nephew Robert Lamar (4), as told on page_____. She lived and died in what is now Montgomery County Maryland, and left a son Joesph, and other descendants, one of whom, of the present time, is Miss Mary Russell, of Rockville, Maryland.

CHAPTER FIVE

THE CHILDREN OF JOHN LAMAR, VII

As was shown in the previous chapter, John Lamar (3) son of Thomas Lamar (2), grand-son of Thomas Lamar (1), the immigrant, left the following children: (1) John; (2) Zachariah; (3) Thomas; (4) Basil; (5) Jeremiah.

VI—John Lamar, (4), son of John Lamar (3) (VII), was born about 1740. In June 1766 his petition was before the Governor and Council setting forth that he had been in the Province about one year, had two Negroes; and praying for a grant of 100 acres in St. Paul's parish, about two miles below Augusta, and adjoining the land of his father, John Lamar (Colonial Records of Ga., vol. IX, p. 533). He was three times married. The name of his first wife has not been obtained. The second wife was Sarah Bugg, daughter of Edwin Bugg, who was of a very weathy family, and who was a member of the Georgia Provincial Congress which met in Savannah, Ga., in January 1775. The third wife was Lucy Appling. This **John Lamar** lived in Putnam and Lincoln counties, in Georgia, and was a well-to-do planter and slave-owner. His children (by which wife, as to some, not ascertained): (1) Zachariah; (2) Basil; (3) Harmony; (4) John; (5) Jackson.

VI—Thomas Lamar, (4), son of John Lamar (3) (VII), was married, and lived and died in Georgia. But little has been learned about the particulars of his life, mainly because of the ill-kept condition of the public records in Georgia during that period. He married Catherine Reynolds, of Baltimore, Maryland. His children were: 1, Rebecca, who married her first cousin John (5), son of John (4) above; 2, Mary; 3, Zachariah.

Zachariah Lamar, (4), son of John Lamar (3), seems to have died without issue. He must have been born about 1755 to 1760, the date being fixed approximately by an anecdote of him which the writer remembers to have been told by Hon. L. Q. C. Lamar, the younger and which will be given in the sketch of Hon. Henry Graybill Lamar, hereafter. "Old Zach" as he was called seems to have been a truculent old gentleman, of whom his younger kinsmen, however courageous they were, stood in awe. He died about, or after, the year 1830.

Basil Lamar, (4), son of John Lamar (3) (VII), married, lived and died in Georgia. His children were: 1, John (5) (who was the father of George, Mrs. Susan Richardson, Mrs. Harriet Knox, Mrs. Martha Force, Mrs. Mary Bailey, Fannie, Mrs. Emily Moore, Thomas, Joseph B., and Mrs. Julia Davis); 2, Pennington (5) who died without issue; 3, Peter (5) (who was father of Ezekiel, Jacob, Basil, Mrs. Mary A. Daniel, Mrs. Antonia L. Moore, Mrs. Jane Gross, Lafayette, who was killed in the Confederate Army, Mrs. Sarah Fleming, Mrs. Bertha P. Howell, Mrs. Virginia Young, and Savannah); 4, Ezekiel (5) (father of Mrs. Mary Hobby); 5, Mrs. Prudence Winn (5) mother of John Winn, Mrs. Susan Curry, Jacob, Prudence, and Mrs. Mary Lyon. For the remoter descendants of Basil Lamar, see Note 1, below:

NOTE 1.—Remoter descendants of Basil Lamar (4) sprung from those named in the text, are as follows:

Thomas Lamar, (6), son of John (5), was father of (1) Ophila V. (7) (father of Thomas B. and Louise); also of (2) Charles W. (7) (father of Marie, Nicholas, and Frank E); 3, Peter (7), who in 1832 was a member from Lincoln County, in the Anti-Tariff convention of Georgia; and (4) Mrs. Imogene Etheridge (7).

Joseph B. Lamar, (6), son of John (5), was father of Fannie, Walter, Basil and Leela.

Mrs. Susan Richardson, (6), was mother of Joseph L., Sophia, Fannie, and Mrs. Mary Stockton.

Mrs. Mary Bailey, (6), was mother of Samuel, J. Lamar, Thomas P., Christopher, Lucius L., Andrew, Basil, David, Mrs. Cornelia Banbee, and Mrs. Fannie Combs.

Jeremiah Lamar, (4), son of John (3) (VII), married. Children were: 1, John (5) (father of Benjamin, Jeremiah, Henry Graybill, Mrs. Mary W. Herbert, Mrs. Nancy Morgan, James, Thomas, John, and Mrs. Sallie Jackson); 2, James (5); 3, Mrs. Moses Sinquefield (5) (mother of Mrs. Anderson Crawford, Mrs. McTyre, and Mrs. Ellis); 4, Thomas (5) (father of Mrs. Rachel Webb, and of Mrs. Snead). For the remoter descendants of Jeremiah Lamar, see Note 2, below:

Of the family founded in Georgia by this **John Lamar** (VII), Sparkes, in his **Memories of Fifty Years** (published in 1882) says, on p. 173:

"The name of Lamar has long been a synonym for talent and chivalrous honor in Georgia. They have been distinguished in every pursuit, and no stain has ever rested upon the name—in whatever avocation employed, conspicuous for capacity, honesty and energy. They are of French extraction, and to their latest posterity they continue to exhibit those traits peculiar to the French-Chivalry, intense sensibility, love of truth, refinement of manner, lofty bearing, and a devotion to honor which courts death rather than dishonor."

Mrs. Emily Moore was mother of Andrew, John L., Samuel, Edward, and Mrs. Sarah Polhill.

Mrs. Mary A. Daniel was mother of Wilberforce, John B., Mrs. Regina P. Ingles, Mrs. Martha A. Sheppard, Mrs. Jane P. Fleming, and Mrs. Clara C. Knight.

Mrs. Antonia L. Moore was mother of Julien L., Daniel C., Phineas, Peter S., Augustus, Edward, Mrs. Antonia L. Crawford, Rebecca, Mrs. Alice E. Clifford.

Mrs. Bertha P. Howell was mother of Lucien L., Charles W., James E., Sallie L., and Susie S.

Mrs. Mary Hobby was mother of Rowena, Mary, and Margaret.

Mrs. Mary Lyon married Thomas Lyon, of Lincoln County, Ga., and was mother of Richard F., John, Thomas P., Mary, Mrs. Sarah White, Mrs. Elizabeth Crisp, Mrs. Susan Douglass, and Jane, Richard F. Lyon, born Sept 9, 1879, was in 1850 made associate justice of Supreme Court of Georgia; biographical notice of him in 93 Ga. Report, p. 829, erroneously states that he was a grandson of Peter Lamar.

Mrs. Susan W. Curry, wife of Col. Wm. Curry, a planter, merchant, and member of the Georgia Legislature, and who removed to Talladega, Ala., where he died in 1855—was mother of **Dr. Jaber Lamar Monroe Curry,** of Washington, D. C., the distinguished thinker, writer, educator, manager of the Peabody fund, and United States Minister, who died in 1903. Mrs. Susan had also a son, Jackson Curry.

NOTE 2.—Remoter descendants of Jeremiah Lamar (4) above, sprung from those named in the text, are as follows:

Benjamin Lamar, (6), son of John (5), was father of Thomas, Henry J., John Philip, Mrs. Geraldine Gilmer, and Mrs. Fannie Bozeman.

Jeremiah Lamar, (6), son of John (5) was father of Thomas, and Rebecca L.

Henry Graybill Lamar, (6), son of John (5) married a cousin, Mary Ann, daughter of Garaway Davis, as told above on page_____. He was the first of the Lamars to achieve political prominence; was a distinguished man in Georgia, and member of Congress from 1829 to 1833; also was Judge of the superior court. His children were: Garaway Davis; Thornton; Anderson; Leonidas (killed in battle, 1861); John; Mrs. Aurelia Ralston; Victoria; Sarah; Gazaline; Virginia who married A. O. Bacon, U. S. Senator from Georgia; Clementins; Henry G.; Mrs. Iola Munroe; and Mrs. Ida L. Ellis. He died in 1861. (Anecdote of him and old Zach).

James Lamar, (6), son of John (5) was father of William, Thomas, Mrs. Rebecca Fulwood, Mrs. Eliza Lamar, Mrs. Ann Colvard, Mrs. Ellen Paldridge, and Mrs. Fannie Janes.

John Lamar, (6), "Black John," son of John (5), married a cousin, Louisa Hill, descended from Mrs. Clementins Davis, (see p. _____); was father of John Hill, Mrs. Augusta Ogden, Mrs. Virginia Bacon, Mary Francis, and Mary Louisa.

Mrs. Sallie Jackson (grand-daughter) was mother of Thomas L., John J., Stephen D., James H., Mrs. Rebecca W. Raines, and Martha A.

Mrs. Rachel Webb (grand-daughter) was mother of Kenney, Charles, and James.

Mrs. Snead (grand-daughter) was mother of Collier, Patrick P., and Henry E.

CHAPTER SIX

THE CHILDREN OF THOMAS LAMAR, VI

As was shown in the previous chapter, the children of Thomas Lamar (4) (VI), were three: viz., Rebecca, Mary, and Zachariah.

V—Rebecca Lamar, (5), daughter of Thomas Lamar (VI), and wife of John Lamar (V), was born in Georgia about the year 1775, was married about 1795. Her grandson, Justice L. Q. C. Lamar remembered her well and often spoke of her to his children. He described her as a handsome old lady with bright black eyes, much energy and vivacity, of great administrative ability, fond of her family, and kind to the grandchildren but fond of training them into many ways and correct principles. Her sons loved and admired her, but were a little in awe of her. She rode a little white mule over the farm; and when in her daily rounds she came about, the business in hand progressed. His reminiscenses of her were always in a mingled vein of amusement, affection and reverence, which spoke volumes for the kindly but strong character of the old lady. Surely, her sons were an evidence for her. Her children, and John's, were (1) Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus; (2) Mirabeau Buonaparte; (3) Thomas Randolph; (4) Jefferson Jackson; (5) Mrs. Evalina Harvey; (6) Mrs. Mary A. Moreland; (7) Mrs. Aurelia Randle; (8) Mrs. Louisa McGehee; (9) Mrs. Laretto Chappell.

Exactly when she died is not ascertained, probably about the time of the death of her husband in 1733; for shortly after his death the farm was sold at public auction, probably for division of the proceeds; and it passed into the hands of a family named Fairfield.

Mary Lamar, (5), daughter of Thomas (4) (VI), above, married a Mr. Jeter, and had children, Mary, and William L. Jeter.

Zachariah Lamar (5), son of Thomas (4) (VI) above, was the father of Andrew J., John B., and Mary Ann.

Andrew J. Lamar, (6), son of Zachariah (5), had (1) John B.; (2) Andrew J. Jr., and (3) Mrs. Mary Patterson, (who first

married Jefferson M. Lamar; afterward Dr. Robert M. Patterson of Macon, Ga., and had Patterson children as follows: Mary, Andrew L., Caroline, Roberta).

Mary Ann, (6), daughter of Zachariah, (5) above, was wife of Gen. Howell Cobb, who was very wealthy, was twice Speaker of the House in Congress, was Governor of Georgia, was Secretary of the Treasury in Buchanon's Cabinet, was Speaker of the Confederate Congress which framed the Confederate Constitution, was a General in the Confederate Army. Her children were: 1, John Addison Cobb (father of Howell, Sarah, John A. Jr., Lucy M., and George); 2, Major Lamar Cobb (father of John B. L., Mary N., Olivia, Lamar, Edwin N.); 3, Judge Howell Cobb, Jr., (father of William McK., Thomas A. R., Howell, Sarah, Zacharias, Caroline); 4, Andrew J., (Judge Supreme Court of Georgia, father of Jessie C., and Andrew J. Jr.,); 5, Mary Ann, wife of Judge Alexander S. Erwin (mother of Alexander, Howell C., John L., Mary L., Stanhope, William, Andrew J.); 6, Sarah M., wife of Tinsley W. Rucker (mother of Tinsley W. Jr., and Lamar C.).

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE CHILDREN OF JOHN LAMAR, VI.

As was shown in a previous chapter, the children of John Lamar (4) (VI) were: Zachariah, Basil, Harmony, John and Jackson.

V—John Lamar, (5), son of John Lamar (VI) above supposed to be a son by the first wife, was born in Georgia in 1769; died in Putnam County, August 3, 1833. He married his first cousin Rebecca Lamar (5) (V), daughter of Thomas Lamar (4) (VI). He was a planter and a thrifty one. His residence was for a time in Warren County; but later on a valuable estate of about 900 acres in Putnam County, on Little River, ten or twelve miles south of Eatonton. Here about 1810 he established what is still locally known as the "old Lamar homestead;" a large old-fashioned two-story house, of wood, with a wide gallery along its entire front. Being constructed after the enduring fashion of that period it was still standing in good condition in 1895. In the year 1877, Senator L. Q. C. Lamar wrote to his son: "According to my reccollection the place is beautiful. A large framed house, an immense front yard full of great oaks and Lombardy poplars—rolling land to the east, and a wide-spread plain in the rear, shelving gradually down to a beautiful river that gave to the owner of the place (my grand-father) the title of 'Little River John.' " Here, for many years, in great happiness and moderate prosperity, lived this couple of a century ago.

"With them lived a bachelor brother, Zachariah—a self-taught man—who, like many of the men in old plantation times, gave himself up to the ideal world of literature and history, without any further purpose than the enjoyments of that fairyland. These honest, happy—some might consider them useless—members of society belong to an extinct fauna, but they were loved and revered and humored in their day and little circles. This Lamar was one of this sort, perhaps its most striking example. Over all his intimate surroundings was cast the glamour of that realm of letters in which he lived. When he led in family prayer, good Methodists that they were, he did not think it inapt to thank God for the heroic examples of Roman or English or American history, for the march of

science, or for exemption from the crimes and miseries of less favored lands into which his geographical studies had last led him. So when son after son was born to the head of the house this bookish enthusiast claimed the privilege of naming his infant nephews after his favorite of the moment, and the amiable and doubtless amused parents consented. Thus Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus, Mirabeau Buonaparte, Jefferson Jackson, Thomas Randolph, and Levoisier Legrand (a grand-child) indicate how his interest shifted from history to politics, and from politics to chemistry.''*
5, 1879.

Zachariah certainly accomplished one thing in the Lamar family: he broke up the long and persistent succession of Johns, Thomases, Jeremiahs and Zachariahs, and established a new order of Christian names; and the Luciuses, and Mirabeaus, and Jeffersons took their places to a great extent, even in the collateral branches, and a new meaning was given to the time-worn cognomen of Thomas.

At this old homestead, buried in a quiet garden, by the side of his daughter Evalina, lies **John**. His grave is still in excellent order, and over him is a slab bearing this inscription, written by his gifted son Mirabeau:

''In memory of John Lamar, who died August 3, 1833, aged sixty-four years. He was a man of unblemished honor, of pure and exalted benevolence, whose conduct through life was uniformly regulated by the strictest principles of probity, truth, and justice; thus leaving behind him, as the best legacy to his children, a noble example of consistent virtue. In his domestic relations he was greatly blessed, receiving from every member of a large family unremitting demonstrations of respect, love and obedience.''

Surely a most enviable record; and most happy the man of whom it can be written! It is the testimony of a son, whose point of view was from the inside. Here is the unbiased testimony of one who was connected by no such endearing tie, and gave the view from the outside:

''**John Lamar,** a thrifty planter who resided on a valuable estate ten or twelve miles south of Eatonton long enough to

---

*William Preston Johnston in the **Farmers' World** of Feb.

see a large family reared and educated, and the most of them advantageously settled in his own native state of Georgia. Though not a rich man, Mr. John Lamar, by dint of industry and good management, found means to give his children the best education which the schools of the county afforded. None of them had the benefit of a college course, nor were they (it is believed) acquainted with the ancient classics, or any other language but English. But if the children of this worthy man did not bring into practical life any great amount of literary and scientific love, they certainly brought what was infinitely more valuable,—mind, morals, and most of the virtues which elevate and adorn it. In the regimen of no other family were strict veracity, "temperance in all things," probity and benevolence, more peremptorily and successfully inculcated."†

Zachariah Lamar, (5), the bachelor son of John (4) (VI), has already been fully mentioned in the preceeding sketch of his brother.

Basil Lamar, (5), son of John (4) (VI) lived in Richmond County, Ga., married a Miss Kelley, and had children as follows: 1, Priscilla, who died in infancy; 2, John Thomas, born March 13, 1797, died in Savannah in 1842, married Louisa Wray and had daughters Emma and Eliza, both of whom died young, the latter being lost on the **Pulaski**; 3, Garaway Bugg, born Oct. 2, 1798, a prominent and wealthy banker, of whom special notice will be taken hereafter (father of Martha, Charles A. L., William S., Rebecca, Thomas, Lucius, Caroline, Anthony C., Mrs. Anne Minor, G. de Rossett, Charlotte A.,_____and Mrs. Harriett C. L. Jones); 4, James Jackson, born May 9, 1800, died 21 July 1821, without issue; 5, George W., born 27 Jan. 1802 (father of John L., Mrs. Rebecca Poullian, Matthew L., Mary, Southworth H., Garaway B., George W., Frank, James, Albert R., Willam T. and Mrs. Florida Anderson); 6, Oswald Edwg, who died in infancy; 7, Sarah A., wife of Dr. Rees, of Americus, Ga., (mother of Albert Rees, of Mary Ann, of Mrs. Lamartine Parker, of Raymond, Garaway, and Mrs. Micon R. Lamar); 8, Basil, who died in 1867 (father of Garaway B., Martha, John R., Rebecca, and Mrs. Belle Stock-

---

†Hon. Joel Crawford, in **The Bench and Bar of Georgia;** vol. 2, p. 136: **L. Q. C. Lamar:** His Life, etc.: Mayes; pp. 15-17, 27.

bridge); 9, Zachariah, born in 1812, married a Miss Rice near Macon (father of John D., Zachariah, Garaway, Mrs. Emma Felder, Mary, and Rebecca); 10, Rebecca Johnson, the heroine of the **Pulaski**, who married Gen. Hugh McLeod, of Texas, in 1842, of whom special mention will be made later (mother of Cazeneau McLeod); 11, Thomas, born in 1816, died in 1831. 12, a daughter who married a Mr. Sims, and had a son, William W. Sims, who died in Savannah Nov. 23, 1850, leaving daughters, Martha M. and Ann C., both of whom died unmarried (Lamar V. Micon, 112 U. S., p. 452).

Appendix G—Further descendants of Basil Lamar (ante, p. ------), are as follows:

John T. Lamar (his grandson) had "Johnnie West," and Mrs. Mary Reynolds.

Southworth H. Lamar (his grandson) had George M.

Garaway B. Lamar (his grandson) married a cousin, Micon Reese, as above, and had Garaway D., Howell and another, name not ascertained.

George W. Lamar (his grandson) had Sallie, John W., Carrol Lucas, Pennie, Robert L., Nellie, and George W.

Albert R. Lamar (his grandson) will be noticed hereafter. Father of Mrs. Eliza T. Hull of Charles A. (father of Florence, and Alexander M.), and of Tracy, of Nana, and of Clarence.

Charles A. L. Lamar (grandson of Basil) will be noticed further; he had Mrs. Janie Cunningham, Mrs. Eliza Cunningham, Mrs. Caro Dubichon, Mrs. Georgia Malone, and Mary.

G. de Rossett Lamar (his grandson) had Henry C., Paul C., and Maria C.

Cazenove McLeod (his grandson) had Marshall, Hugh, Jennie, and Lucius Q. C.

Albert Reese (his grandson) had Micon, Walker, Law (sic), and Mildred.

Raymond Reese (his grandson) had Bruce, Lucia, Maggie, and Mrs. Cornelia Stoughton.

Mrs. Rebecca Poullain (grand-daughter), had Lamar, Rebecca, Sallie, and Florida.

Mrs. Florida Anderson (grand-daughter), had Clarence.

Mrs. Belle Stockbridge (grand-daughter) had Basil.

Mrs. Anne Minor (grand-daughter), had Harriet, and Benjamin L.

Charlotte A. (grand-daughter), daughter of Garaway B. Lamar, married, first, Mr. Sentter, by whom two sons and a daughter; afterwards she married the Duke d'Auxy, of Paris, by whom she had a daughter.

Mrs. Harriet C. Jones (grand-daughter) had Paulina and Frank.

Mrs. Lamartine Parker (grand-daughter) had Lamartine.

Harmony Lamar, (5), son of John (4) (VI), by his third wife, Sarah Bugg, lived in Columbia and Newton counties, Ga., and later in Glennville, Barbour Co. Ala., where he died. He was a wealthy and prosperous planter. It was he who is mentioned in the biography of **L. Q. C. Lamar** (by Mayes) as having been kind and helpful to Mrs. Sarah (Bird) Lamar, she being the widow of his nephew, L. Q. C. the elder. He married Martha Ann Young, a native of Baltimore Md., daughter of William Young. She died in Tuskegee, Ala.—Their children were: (1) John O., who married first Sarah, daughter of Bishop Andrew, of the Methodist Church, and second a Miss Perry (and father of Henry J., William H., Thomas and Albert); 2, Lucy B., whose first husband was James Barrett; 3, Cornelia, wife of Dr. Robt. Howard of Tuskegee, Ala.; 4, William Harmony, a physician, (died in 1906), resident in Jasper, Ala., who married Ann M. Glenn, daughter of Rev. John Bowles Glenn and his wife Maria Allen (and who was father of Theodore J., Charles R., Glenmire C., William Harmony, Jr., Howard, Annie, and George Holt); 5, Sallie, wife of William Russell; 6, Thomas; 7, Lucius M. (father of Oliver, Lucius, and Frank).*

Jackson Lamar (5), son of John (VI) left four or five daughters but no sons.

Theodore J. Lamar (his grandson) married Orlean Cleveland, and had Theodore J. Jr., Charles, Orlean, and Frank H.

---

*Notes on the above named descendants of Harmony Lamar:

Charles R. Lamar (his grandson) married Laura Cain.

Glennie C. (grand-daughter) married T. S. Phillips.

William Harmony, Jr., (grand-son), who married Virginia L. Lamar, daughter of L. Q. C., and of whom later in that connection. He is a lawyer in the department of Justice at Washington, and was a captain in the war with Spain, in 1898.

Howard Lamar (grandson), who married Alma Hayes, and lives at Jasper, Ala.

George Holt Lamar (grandson) married Edith Stonestreet, lives at Rockville, Md., practices law in Washington, D. C.

CHAPTER EIGHT

CHILDREN OF JOHN LAMAR, (5) (V), AND REBECCA LAMAR, (5) (V).

"Little River John."

As shown in the previous two chapters, the children of John Lamar (6) (V), and his wife Rebecca, (born), Lamar, (5) (V), were: 1, Lucius Q. C.; 2, Mirabeau B., 3, Thomas R.; 4, Jefferson J.; 5, Mrs. Evalina Harvey; 6, Mrs. Mary A. Moreland; 7, Mrs. Aurelia Randle; 8, Mrs. Louisa McGehee; 9, Mrs. Loretto Chappell.

IV—Hon. Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus Lamar, Sr., (6).

In the **Bench and Bar of Georgia,*** there is a long chapter on Lucius Q. C. Lamar (IV), from which the extracts following are taken. The chapter was written in part by Hon. Joel Crawford, who was Mr. Lamar's preceptor in the law and his first partner; part of it by Hon. Iverson L. Harris, one of his fellow-members at the bar; and part of it by the author of the work.

Judge Crawford writes: "This highly and justly distinguished jurist was a native of Warren county, but passed most of his youthful years in the County of Putnam. He was the oldest of four sons of John Lamar, a thrifty planter who resided on a valuable estate ten or twelve miles south of Eatonton. * * * *

"**Lucius** was born July 15, 1797, and from boyhood was a lover of books,—reading with good effect almost everything that came within his reach—but had a decided partiality for poetry and other works of imagination. In after life he was distinguished for his attainment in **belles-lettres**, for the classic purity of his compositions, and for forensic eloquence. He was educated at Franklin College.

"In 1816 he commenced the study of law in the office of Joel Crawford, at Milledgeville, where he read with great assiduity, and, among other acquisitions, became an accurate

---

*By Stephen F. Miller; published in 1858 by the Lippencott's, of Philadelphia.

pleader. Having spent twelve months or more in this office, and wishing to complete his professional education, he repaired to the celebrated law-school at Litchfield, in the state of Connecticut, in which Judges Reeve and Gould alternated in delivering a course of lectures. During a period of thirty years or more, the Litchfield school was almost the only institution of the kind, and by far the most famed, in the United States. It was sought by students from almost every part of the Union, and from no State, probably, in greater numbers than Georgia.

"About the year 1818 or 1819, young Lamar was licensed 'to plead and practice in the several courts of law and equity in this state,' opened an office at Milledgeville, and, '(on the 10th of March, 1819)' married Miss (Sarah Williamson) Bird, the daughter of an eminent physician of that place. Though few young lawyers have brought to the bar higher qualifications, he lacked some, and for a few years his prospects were anything but bright. While others, with not a tithe of his genius or learning, were seen to be reaping rich harvests of fees and crowded with clients, he remained poor and almost briefless. How and why did this happen? Courage, truth, and honor were among the most conspicuous elements of his character, and he seemed to have the esteem and confidence of everyone. But he could not count clients or solict patronage; his characteristic independence and legitimate self-esteem would not tolerate even the semblance of unworthy condescention. He doubtless wanted what is commonly called **address;** he had no turn for frivolous chat, story-telling, anecdotes, etc. In short, he lacked those qualifications on which humbler natures rely for conciliating popular favor.

"But there was another peculiarity attached to this gifted young man which is very seldom seen in persons of his age and fervid temperament. It would seem that the tone of his nervous system was liable to accidental spells of depression, which not only impaired his capacity for social companionship, but, at times, the highest energies of his mind. At the bar, and elsewhere, when under the weight of this incubus, he has been known to betray a want of thought and of expertness in the transaction of business which, to those who knew him best, was astonishing. On one occasion, an important case of his being on trial in the County of Twiggs—a case he had much at heart, and in which he had made great preparation—when in the prescribed order of speaking it became his turn to

address the special jury, he arose with perfect self-possession, and, having proceeded through an exordium of great appropriateness and beauty, suddenly came to a dead pause. No one knew the cause until he, with a humility and confusion of face that betrayed the deep mortification under which he suffered, declared, in an undertone, to his associate counsel, that he could not proceed, and that the whole advocacy of the cause must fall into the hands of the associate.

"In the summer of 1821, his first preceptor in the law, having retired from the practice some four or five years before, resumed it, and Lamar became his partner. This co-partnership, by its terms, was limited to three years; and before the expiration of that time Lamar had so many opportunities of exhibiting proofs of his great professional ability, that he never afterwards wanted clients or fees.

"Mr. Lamar, doubtless, had ambition—a legitimate ambition—to acquire by meritorious actions that fame and fortune which may at all times be justly awarded to useful and brilliant achievements; but he had an insuperable aversion to catching office as a mere fortuitous windfall, or getting it by surrendering himself to the arbitrary management of a political party. Under the influence of such generous self-denial, he more than once refused his name as a candidate when success was little less than certain. His conduct when Thomas W. Cobb—about the fall of 1828—became a candidate for the bench of the Ocmulgee circuit, will serve to exemplify some of the lofty traits which belonged to the character of Lamar.

"Mr. Cobb was an experienced and, confessedly, an able lawyer—had been for many years a respectable member of Congress, desired to continue in the public service, but, in the decline of life, preferred a station nearer home. That popularity, however, which carried him three times to the House of Representatives, and afterward to the Senate of the United States, now forsook him. He was beaten on joint vote of the General Assembly by a large majority; but, for some cause best known to himself his successful opponent, within a few days, resigned the commission of judge, and the vacancy had again to be filled. Cobb's friends again presented his name, and Lamar was importuned to offer as the rival candidate. Had he consented, his election was morally certain; but he had

a becoming respect for Mr. Cobb's seniority and past services, was no stranger to the unworthy motives of those who were most intent on a second defeat, nor to the plasticity of that illy-organized college of electors, the General Assembly. His refusal was peremptory and Mr. Cobb was permitted to take the office he so much coveted.

"Before the term for which Mr. Cobb had been elected expired, his death made a vacancy which Mr. Lamar could honorably consent to fill. He came, then, into office on such conditions as met his approbation, and continued, until the day of his own lamented death, to discharge its duties with signal ability, and with public applause which few in judicial stations have had the good fortune to receive." (This office was at that time the highest grade of judicial preferment in the state. There was no **Supreme** court, and no supreme judges, E. M.).

"The melancholy event of Judge Lamar's death (occasioned, as it was, by his own hand) filled the wide circle of his friends and acquaintances with lamentation and astonishment. He was yet a young man, with sufficient wealth for entire independence, unequalled popularity, a wife and children on whom he doted; no man, indeed, seemed to have more to attach him to life. To the inquiry everywhere made, 'What could have caused the suicide?' No satisfactory answer was given. Some supposed it to be religious frenzy, originating in recent and deep impressions on that subject. One who knew him intimately has assigned that which was probably the true and only cause—**insanity**, resulting from accidental derangement of cerebral organism. The disease of which the judge died may, therefore, be assumed as a natural one; and as explicable, on pathological principles, as apoplexy or any other malady of the brain.

"Whatever may have been predicted of the eventful career of Judge Lamar had he lived longer and been placed in Congress, or on some other theatre favorable to the display of his splendid oratory and ardent patriotism, it is admitted that, both at the bar and on the bench, he attained the first rank. He presided with great dignity, and was most effective in the despatch of business. No one who knew the man ever ventured on an act of rudeness or disrespect to his court; yet every person whose deportment was worthy of it had unfailing assurances of his kindness. His lectures of instruction to the grand

juries, at the opening of a term, were delivered in admirable style; and his charges to special and petit juries, engaged in the trial of difficult and much-litigated cases, might well serve as models to any bench.

"His manners in public and private life were wholly free from useless formality, but frank, bland, and refined. He left a young family of sons and daughters, who, under the judicious training of an intelligent, kind, and pious mother, give hopeful promise of future usefullness and respectability."

In politics Judge Lamar was a State Rights Democrat. He was one of the thirteen appointed by the State Rights convention of 1833, styled "The Central Committee of the State Rights Association of Georgia."

Mr. Miller, the author of the work, now continues the sketch which is quoted from above. He says: "After this testimony from one so competent, establishing the high rank of Judge Lamar in the profession and also as a citizen, the attempt to improve the picture would be vain, no room is left for art or friendship to throw further light on a character so nobly moulded. He was truly a man of great moral elevation, and universally beloved. His sensibilities were very acute, and his emulation was entirely unselfish. Aiming to extend the conquests of his profound intellect to the verge of human possibility, he overtasked his nervous system, resulting in that deplorable act which deprived his country and his friends of a pattern of excellence. His fame secure, his virtues without a blemish, the memory of Judge Lamar will ever remain dear to the people of Georgia and to all who can rightly appreciate an exalted nature.

"When quite young in his profession, Mr. Lamar was chosen by the Legislature to compile the laws of Georgia from 1810 to 1820. He arranged the several acts under their appropriate divisions, and made such references and explanations, in notes, as were necessary to show what had been repealed or modified. The result of his labors was reported to Gov. Clark in 1821, and by him submitted to the inspection of Simon Whitaker, James Camak, William Y. Hansell, and James Bozeman, Esquires, who, having carefully examined it, pronounced in its favor. It was then published in quarto form of thirteen hundred pages, and may be found occasionally in the clerks' and lawyers' offices. Its enormous bulk owing to the avarice

or bad taste of the printer, renders it a very inconvenient book to handle. It is vol. III of Georgia Statutes, so called by Mr. Prince in compiling his Digest—Marbury and Crawford's being vol. I, and Clayton's vol. II, to which may be added Dawson's, from 1820 to 1830, vol. IV, the last of the quartos. Prince, Hotchkiss, and Cobb have published Digests, retaining and classifying the statutes, or such portions as are of general operation. Mr. Lamar also revised Clayton's "Georgia Justice" about the year 1819—now rarely found.

"At the session of the Legislature in 1830, the vacancy in the judgeship of the Ocmulgee circuit was filled by the election of Mr. Lamar, who, up to that time, had never worn what he had longed richly deserved—the judicial robes. There were between thirty and forty ballotings before a choice was made—Judge A. G. Saffold, who was the Executive appointee, and Mr. Lamar, both Troup men, and the late James Smith, Esquire, of the Clark party, as distinctions were then held, all competing for the office." * * * *

"Judge Lamar had no adventitious aids to rely upon, not even the prestige of family; for, although the name had ever been exemplary, it was indebted to him for its first enthronement. His active genius, lofty virtues, and profound erudition would have given **eclat** to any name. There is no instance in England or America where a judge so rapidly gained public favor. In less than four years from his accession to the bench, he was its brighest luminary. (Sparks says, in his **Memories of Fifty Years** p. 173. that "at thirty-two years of age he was known throughout the State as the great Judge Lamar.") He could not have been displaced; there was no desire felt by his political opponents to give his office to another; and it was his singular merit, his crowing glory, that both Union and State Rights men would equally have renewed his commission. And, to complete his blessings, he was happy in his domestic circle. Wife and children, relatives and friends and everybody, loved him, and he loved all. Yet, amid all this innocence, this cause for satisfaction, there was a secret canker in his mind; he was unhappy. His angelic nature shrunk from the conflicts of his own imagination; and, in his thirty-seventh year he sought repose in the grave."

Iverson L. Harris says of Judge Lamar, in the chapter quoted from, this: "Judge Lamar's education was received in common schools and academies. He was the graduate of no

college. Much of his time, until he read law, was behind the counter as a clerk. Yet no man had more literary taste. Nothing delighted him more than for his brethren of the bar to mingle literary anecdote or classical allusion in their arguments. He was a great admirer of Hugh S. Legare, of South Carolina, as presenting the finest model of the profound lawyer and accomplished scholar; and such, since Legare's death, was the judgment of Mr. Justice Story.

"As a specimen of Judge Lamar's style and reasoning on legal topics, I refer you to two cases in Dudley's Reports—Brewster vs. Hardeman, and Kendrick vs. The Central Bank—the latter sustaining **notes,** when the statute required **bonds.** They are both fine specimens."

"In the case of Brewster vs. Hardeman and others, the question arose on the plea of the statute of limitations on an open account, whether, after the dissolution of the partnership, the admission of one partner can bind the other partners, so as to prevent the statute from obtaining in their favor. The case came before the convention" (**i. e.,** of the superior court judges, who met together annually for conference; a kind of **court in banc)** "in June 1831, and was referred to Judge Lamar for an opinion, which was adopted by the convention in June 1832. It occupies more than fourteen printed pages, elaborating the points and sifting the authorities with wonderful ability. In a letter to Mr. Dudley" (the reporter) "in 1835, the Hon. Joseph Henry Lumpkin says: 'The case of Brewster vs. Hardeman and others, in this county, and of Wakeman and wife vs. Rooche, in Chaltam Superior Court, may be placed on a level with the best productions of the American or English bench.' "

"I regret that I am unable to give you the outline of a remarkable case from Jasper, brought before the convention of Judges. I think it arose under the statute in reference to charitable uses. The case was well argued by the late Charles P. Gordon and Thomas F. Foster, and others, was thoroughly discussed and authorities examined by the convention, Judge Lamar leading the convention to adopt his reasoning. An opinion **unanimously** was rendered.

"During the interval between one convention and another, Judge Lamar was engaged in my office looking through my library, when he met with a case that gave him a new view.

He pursued the examination closely for several weeks, reading the authorities very carefully. When the next convention assembled he stated what had occurred—how his opinions had undergone an entire change. The authorities were reviewed, criticised, and applied by the convention, and it **unanimously** reversed its former decision—Judge Lamar leading both times the argument and writing out the opinion of the Judges. This is very remarkable, and furnishes high proof of his intellectual powers and honesty, more especially when it is remembered that William H. Crawford, Judge Law, Judge Dougherty, and, I believe, Judge Warner, were members of the convention. There is no report of this case in Dudley. L. Q. C. Lamar, Jr., now of Mississippi,* has a manuscript volume containing both opinions, but it is not accessible to me now. I give you my recollection of the matter."

In November 1831, a public dinner was given in Milledgeville to Governor Gilmer, and among the toasts offered, "and received with marked approbation" was the following, by G. M. Dudley, Esquire, the reporter: "The Honorable Lucius Q. C. Lamar; a junior in years, but a sage in jurisprudence; the wisdom, purity, and impartiality of his administration, hitherto, furnished such pledges of future usefulness and eminence as all parties in the Legislature are bound to regard in the approaching election of judges."

The proceedings had in the Baldwin Superior Court, his Honor John G. Polhill presiding, on the accasion of the death of Judge Lamar, are given below:

"Tribute of Respect

"The lamented death of Judge Lamar being announced, on motion of Edward Y. Hill, Esq., it is ordered that Edward Y. Hill, Samuel Rockwell, J. H. Howard, Wm. H. Torrence, Thomas Haynes, C. P. Gordon, John A. Cultbert, R. K. Hines, I. L. Harris, and James Smith, Esquires, be a committee to recommend suitable testimonials of respect for the memory of the deceased, and that the committee be requested to report tomorrow morning at the opening of the court.

"The court adjourned, without doing any business, until tomorrow.

---

*Written in 1858.

"Col. Rockwell, from the committee appointed by the foregoing resolution, submitted the following, which was adopted:

"On ordinary occasions, when we are called to mourn the loss of those dear to us in the private circles of life, our grief for the bereavement should be indulged in silence; but, when the social ties formed by professional brotherhood, cemented by an uninterrupted intimacy for a series of years, and strengthened by an unbroken chain of friendship, are suddenly rent asunder by the hand of death—when the virtuous, the gifted, the exalted of our land are stricken down under the most afflicting circumstances—it becomes our melancholy privilege to give vent to our feelings by a public expression of sorrow. The custom which has consecrated this privilege has its origin in the best feelings and purest affections of the human heart. Such is the sorrow awakened by the heart-rending catastrophe which has deprived us of the useful labors of the Hon. **Lucius Q. C. Lamar** and consigned him to an early and untimely grave.

"The qualities of a judge are best appreciated by those who have constantly witnessed their exercise; and the virtues of a man can be truly estimated by those only who have had a long and intimate intercourse with him. Justly, then, can we appreciate the judicial qualities, and truly can we estimate the virtues, of our lamented friend, who have marked his short but brilliant career—who have known the powers of his mind and the excellence of his heart.

"At the bar he was an ingenious and able advocate and excellent jurist. Possessing a mind far above the ordinary grade, distinguished alike for acuteness and discrimination, it could grapple with the giant difficulties of the science and master its obstruse theories. On the bench he exhibited a soundness of judgment and depth of learning beyond his years. His candor, ingenuousness, and modesty were no less conspicuous than his amenity and kindness to all in any way connected with the administration of justice. His expositions of the law, his charges and instructious to the juries, were uniformly marked by precision, beauty, and eloquence, imparting interest to the subject and instruction to the hearer. Devoting himself to the arduous duties of his station, he seldom erred in judgment; but, ever anxious that his judicial opinions should be correct, he sought occasion for their revision, and, with the noble impulse of an upright mind, rejoiced in the opportunity for their revision. Always guided by humanity, he truly ad-

ministered justice in mercy. To the youthful aspirant for professional distinction he was indeed a friend, exciting his ardor, aiding his exertions, commending his efforts, alluring him onward, and extending a fastening hand for his support when difficulties surrounded him.

"In all the relations of private life he was blameless, ever kind, ardent, and affectionate. Of unblemished integrity and pure morals, no whisper injurious to either ever rested on his name. He was beloved for his amiable disposition, his bland deportment, his noble frankness, and his generous sentiments. But he is gone, leaving behind him a numerous circle of friends to deplore his sudden and premature departure.

"The endearing recollection of his social virtues, of his personal kindness, of his unsullied purity, of his singleness of heart, and of the intellectual brilliance that surrounded his character as an upright, enlightened and human judge, will soften the poignancy of our grief for his loss, and, while they remind us of the extent of our deprivation, will embalm his virtues in our hearts. As a testimony of our sorrow for his death and of our regard for his memory,—

"**Be it resolved,** That we will wear crape on the hat during the continuance of the circuit, and that the absent members of the Ocmulgee bar, and the several officers of court in the several counties composing this circuit, be respectfully requested to conform to this resolution.

"**Resolved,** That his Honor Judge Polhill be respectfully requested to transmit a copy of these proceedings to the bereaved widow of the deceased, assuring her of our profound respect for the afflicted relict of our departed friend, and of our sincere condolence on the melancholy event which has deprived her of a tender and affectionate husband, her children of a kind and indulgent father, this circuit of an enlightened judge, and the State of one of her noblest sons.

"**Resolved,** That these proceedings be transcribed by the clerk upon the minutes of the court, as a memorial of departed worth."

"A true extract from the minutes of Baldwin Superior Court, July 15, 1834.

RANSOM H. SMITH, Clerk."

A handsome monument, in the form of an obelisk, twelve or fifteen feet high, was erected by the members of the bar over the remains of Judge Lamar in the cemetary near Milledgeville, where it still stands (1905). It bears the following inscription.

"Sacred to the memory of **Lucius Q. C. Lamar,** late Judge of the Superior Court of the Ocmulgee circuit, who, during a brief period of four years, discharged the duties of that high office with probity, firmness, efficiency, and unquestionable reputation. The devoted love of his family, the ardent attachment of personal friends, the admiration of the bar, and the universal approbation of his enlightened administration of justice, attest the goodness and greatness of one arrested by dealth too early in the bright career in which he had been placed by his native state.

"Born July 15, 1797.
"Died July 4, 1834."

Judge Lamar left his family a comfortable property, which was afterward considerably increased by the skillful management of his brother Jefferson. He had eight children : (1) Susan Rebecca, born Dec. 18, 1819; (2) Mary Elizabeth, born Oct. 24, 1821, died Jan. 23, 1823; (3) Sarah Williamson, born Sept. 13, 1823, died June 7, 1824; (4) Lucius Q. C., born Sept. 17, 1825; (5) Thompson Bird, born Jan. 27, 1828; (6) Louisa Leonora, born June 2, 1830, died Nov. 26, 1833; (7) Mary Ann Washburn, born Aug. 20 1832; (8) Jefferson Mirabaeu, born Jan. 3, 1835.

Susan Rebecca Lamar, oldest child of Judge L. Q. C. Lamar (6) (IV), was born Dec. 18, 1819, in Milledgeville, Ga. On Aug. 6th 1835, when not quite sixteen years of age, she married Lemuel G. R. Wiggins, who was at first a planter, and later an itenerant Methodist minister. Mr. Wiggins seems to have been a man of ability. In the year 1860, he was stationed at Covington, Ga., and Jefferson N. Lamar in a letter to his brother Lucius, wrote of him this: "He is a much better preacher than I supposed him to be. He is a man of much more than ordinary ability. His sermons are well considered and sensible, evincing strict regard for logical arrangement. He speaks with ease and fluency, and with propriety, and even elegance of language."—Mrs. Wiggins is disclosed by

her letters as a cultivated, loving, thoughtful, and deeply pious woman. She died in Muscogee County, near Columbus, March 23, 1864, having lost both of her two children, and after a long and painful illness.

Dr. Thompson Bird Lamar, (7), fifth child of Judge L. Q. C. Lamar (6) (IV), born Jan. 27, 1828. He was educated at Covington, and in Emory College at Oxford, Afterward he attended the Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia, at which his maternal grandfather, Dr. Thompson Bird, had taken his degree. On April 25, 1850, he married Sarah B. Bailey, the daughter of a wealthy planter of Jefferson County, Florida. He settled about seven miles out from Tallahassie with a view to the practice of his profession, but circumstances caused him to devote himself to planting and politics. He was a clear headed and sagacious politican; was elected to the State Senate, of which body he made an active, attentive and influential member. Indeed it was said of him that he was regarded as the ablest member. He enlisted in the C. S. Army in April 1861, and became Colonel of the 5th Florida regiment. He died on the____day of_____, 1864, from wounds received in one of the battles around Petersburg. He left five children: William Bailey, born June 12, 1853; Jefferson M., Sarah, Mary Elizabeth, and Clyde. Of those children, William B. became in time a lawyer, Attorney-General of Florida in 1888, and in 1903, a member of Congress from that state which position he still fills in 1907, and in 190__, married_____ _____; Sarah was educated at Staunton, Va., with much credit to herself, and married_____Lewis; Jefferson M., _____; Mary Elizabeth married Geo. P. Rainey, who became Attorney-General, State Reporter and Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, of Florida, and she died in 18____, leaving two children, Clide_____

Mary Ann Washburn, seventh child of Judge Lamar, was born in Scottsborough, Ga., on the 20th of August, 1832. On Nov. 9th 1852, she was married at the home of her step-father, Col. H. B. Troutman, in Crawford County, Ga., to James Carter Longstreet, a young lawyer of most estimable character, brilliant mind and unusually fine promise. She had three children: Sarah, William, and James Carter, of whom the two first named died in infancy. Her husband James C. Longstreet died in _____. The widow continued to reside in Macon, Ga. On Oct. 30th 1866, she married John B.

Ross (third wife) a wealthy merchant of Macon. By this marriage she had three sons: John B., Thompson Lamar, and Donald Graeme. Mr. Ross died in 1877, and in 1878 she removed to Oxford, Mississippi, at which place her brother Lucius Q. C. Lamar then lived. There she resided until the year 19____, when she moved to Grenada County, Mississippi, where she now (1905) resides with her son Donald Ross.

James Carter Longstreet, Jr., grandson of Judge Lamar, was born in _____, Ga., on the____ day of_____, 185__. He was educated at Emory College, Oxford, Ga., took his B. L. at the University of Mississippi, Oxford, Mississippi, in June 1878. Entered on the practice of his profession at Grenada, Mississippi, in 1887 was appointed Chancellor of the Judicial district, which honorable office he filled with great credit until July, 1903, when he resigned in order to move to Jackson, Mississippi, in order to accept, in partnership with Edward Mayes, the District Attorneyship for the Illinois Central and Yazoo & Miss. Valley Railroad systems in the State; also to engage in a general practice. In December 1898, he married Mary Ann Ragsdale, of Grenada, widow of Mr. W. S. Pass.

John Bennett Ross, grandson of Judge Lamar, was born in Macon, Ga., on the____day of_____, 186__. He was educated at the University of Mississippi, taking both A.B., and B.L., and entered in the practice of the law in 18____, at Grenada, Mississippi. There he married on the ____day of _____, 18____, Courtney Stone, adopted daughter of Gen. and Senator Edward C. Walthall (being Mrs. Walthall's niece). In the year 189__, he moved to Memphis, Tennessee, and engaged in the practice at that city. His children are * * * *

Thompson Lamar Ross, grandson of Judge Lamar, was born in Macon, Ga., on the _____ day of _____, 18____. Was educated at the University of Mississippi, University of Georgia, Vanderbilt University, and Harvard University, taking degrees in both literary and legal departments. Preferred banking as a business, and followed that calling in Oxford, Miss., Grenada, Miss., Kansas City, Mo., and finally as credit agent of the Oriental Bank in New York city where he is now (1905). On the ____day of_____, 19____, he married Juanita Brinker, of West Point, Miss. His children are * * * *

Donald Graeme Ross, grandson of Judge Lamar, was born in Macon Ga., on the _____day of_____, 1877. Educated

at the University of Mississippi. Is a farmer, living near Grenada, Mississippi, and his mother resides with him (1905).

Jefferson Mirabeau Lamar, eighth child of Judge Lamar, was born in Milledgeville, Ga., Jan. 3, 1835, six months after his father's death. He was educated at the University of Mississippi, taking his degree of _____in 18____. Settled at Covington, Ga., where he quickly established an enviable reputation as a highly gifted and most promising young lawyer, orator and politician. He was a delegate to the Charleston Democratic National Convention in April, 1860. When the civil war began he enlisted in the Confederate army. On the 23rd of July, 1861, he married, at Athens, Ga., his cousin Mary Ann, daughter of Andrew J. Lamar (she being fourth in descent from John VII above). A week after his marriage he returned to active service in Virginia. In Sept. 1862, being the Lieutenant-Colonel of Cobb's Legion, while leading his command in the engagement at Crampton's Gap, he received a mortal wound, was captured, and died a prisoner, Sept. 15th. He had no children. His widow afterwards married Dr. Patterson, of Macon, Georgia.

CHAPTER EIGHT

JUSTICE LUCIUS Q. C. LAMAR, THE JUNIOR

III—Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus, fourth child of Judge L. Q. C. Lamar, was born in Putnam County, Georgia, at the residence of his grandfather "Little River John," on the 17th of Sept. 1825.

His biography has been written by Edward Mayes, his son-in-law, and published, in 1896, by the Publishing House of the Methodist Episcopal Church South at Nashville, Tenn., in octavo form, 806 pages, including the Appendix which contains his speeches. In view of that fact, and of the further fact that it would be impossible in a brief sketch such as would comport with the general design of this family history to give any complete account of his long and distinguished life and services, nothing will be attempted here more than a meagre outline. Reference is made to the Biography.

Mr. Lamar was educated at Emory College, graduating in July, 1845. He studied law at Macon, Ga., in the office of Hon. Absalom H. Chappell, who had married his aunt Loretto. Admitted to the bar in 1847, Judge Chappell took him into partnership; but this arrangement lasted only a short time; Judge Chappell moved to Columbus, Ga., and Mr. Lamar offered for the practice at Covington. On July 15th, 1847 he married Virginia Lafayette, daughter of Hon. Augustus B. Longstreet.

In 1849 Judge Longstreet accepted the Presidency of the University of Mississippi; and this fact, and the general attractiveness of Mississippi at that time, determined Mr. Lamar to remove to Oxford in that state, which he did in 1850. In July of that year he was elected adjunct professor of mathematics in the University, and accepted. In 1851 he made reputation in a political discussion with Senator Henry S. Foote at Oxford, in which he was suddenly called on, in an emergency, to uphold and defend the principles of the States-Rights Democrats.

In the summer of 1852, he resigned his connection with the University, and returned to Covington, Ga., where he resumed the practice of law, in partnership with Robert G.

Harper. In 1853 he was elected to represent Newton county in the Georgia legislature, which he did with much credit to himself, coming quickly to the front as a leader, and making reputation as an orator. In 1854 he moved to Macon, Ga. In 1855 his friends offered his name as a candidate for Congress, at the nominating convention held in Bibb County. The opposing candidate was Hon. David J. Bailey. The two-thirds rule having been adopted, a deadlock resulted, which finally led to the nomination of James M. Smith.

In October, 1855, Mr. Lamar returned to Lafayette County, Mississippi. There he engaged in the law practice as a member of the firm of Lamar, Mott & Autrey, with an office in Holly Springs. In July, 1857, he was nominated to the Thirty-fifth Congress by the democratic convention at Holly Springs, as the result of a deadlock, by acclamation, on the sixtieth ballot. He quickly made a reputation in Congress as a thinker and orator. He was re-elected to the 36th Congress, in 1859; was a member of the National Democratic convention at Charleston in April, 1860. He there made a conservative speech which was commonly pronounced one of the best of the occasion; and he was opposed to the withdrawal of the Southern delegates from the convention, but when that course was determined on, withdrew with them. In June, 1860, he was elected professor of Ethics and Metaphysics in the University, and accepted.

When Mr. Lincoln was elected, and the agitation for immediate secession began in Mississippi, Mr. Lamar resigned his seat in the 36th Congress, and on the 12th of December, 1860, left Washington for the purpose of canvassing the state for the coming session convention. He was a member of that body, was the mover of the resolution for a committee to prepare an Ordiance of Session, was Chairman of the Committee, prepared the Resolution, and reported it to the Convention. He joined the Confederate Army, resigning his professorship in the University, and was made Lt. Colonel of the Nineteenth Miss. Regiment. At the battle of Williamsburg, May 5, 1862, the command of the regiment devolved on him by the death of Col. Mott on the field, and he discharged this duty so well that he was favorably mentioned in the reports of three Brigadiers, and in that of the Major General. But his precarious health, being subject to alarming attacks of vertigo followed by temporary partial paralysis, unfitted him for active ser-

vice; and on Nov. 19th, 1862, President Davis appointed him Special Commissioner of the Confederate States to the Empire of Russia, his mission being to secure if possible a recognition by that empire of the independence of the Southern Confederacy. Russia, however, would have nothing to say to the Confederacy, and Mr. Lamar's mission was fruitless. After some sojourn in Paris and London he returned home in December, 1863. In December, 1864, he was appointed Judge Advocate of the military court in the third army corps (A. P. Hill's) with the rank of Colonel of Cavalry. He was present at the surrender at Appomattox.

In September, 1865, Mr. Lamar settled at Coffeeville, Miss., forming a law partnership with Gen. E. C. Walthall; but in June, 1866, he again accepted the chair of Ethics and Metaphysics in the University, and returned to Oxford. In Jan. 1867, he was transferred to the Professorship of Law, and placed in charge of the Law School, in which position he remained until June, 1870, when he resigned, and devoted himself exclusively to the practice of the law.

In November, 1872, although still under political disabilities because of his participation in the Civil War, he was elected to the Forty-third Congress. His disabilities were removed by special act, and he took his seat, occupying for two years the unique attitude of being the only Democratic representative from any of the states which had been members of the Confederacy.

In March, 1874, he made a great and a national reputation as an orator and a patriotic statesman by a eulogy which he pronounced in the House on the occasion of the memorial services over Senator Sumner of Massachuetts.

In November, 1874, he was re-elected. The democrats had a great national victory that fall and captured a majority in the House. When the 44th Congress organized in December 1875, Mr. Lamar was chosen permanent Chairman of the Democratic Caucus, becoming thereby the leader of the majority party of the House. "His leadership," says Carson in his **History of the Supreme Court** "was marked and masterly, and fixed the gaze of the nation." He was made Chairman of the standing committee on the Pacific Railroad.

Mr. Lamar, in Jan. 1876, was elected to the Senate of the

United States, for the term to begin March 4, 1877; was re-elected in Jan. 1882, for a second term, without opposition.

When Mr. Cleveland was inaugurated President he called Mr. Lamar to his cabinet as Secretary of the Interior; and this important office, with all of its varied and onerous duties, he discharged with great industry and success until January, 1888, at which time he was appointed a Justice of the Supreme Court of the United States. Of the correspondence between Mr. Lamar and the President, by which Mr. Lamar resigned his Secretaryship in advance of the action of the Senate as to his confirmation, the **New York Herald** said this:

"The correspondence between the President and Mr. Lamar is removed from the ordinary routine of public communication by the grace and delicacy of their letters, and especially the tenderness and appreciation shown in the letter of the President. We are reminded in their tone of those between Washington and Hamilton, as well as those between Jackson and the men whom he trusted. To have inspired so high a feeling in the heart of a man as resolute and perhaps as severe as Mr. Cleveland, shows the possession of Mr. Lamar of rare personal traits of loyalty which are the reserve of true character. Mr. Cleveland in his tenderness and sincerity shows the same qualities. It is this capacity for strong, sincere friendship which gives the President so firm a hold upon the public heart. The people like a man who can feel like a man."

"Mr. Lamar did not ascend the bench rashly or vaingloriously. He was, on the contrary, deeply impressed with a sense of the weight of the obligations assumed, and gravely and humbly doubtful of his power to meet the burden cast upon him so fully as it should be met. It was characteristic of him to distrust his qualifications for new fields of labor, and it was only when experience had justified him to himself that he took courage and rose to the confidence which also characterized him in familiar walks. * * * * From this time forth his labors were incessant and arduous. It was nothing uncommon for him to spend the entire night working on his opinions, and to all remonstrances from his family and his friends on his overwork, his response was that he would rather die than fail in the discharge of his full duty.

Indeed, there is but little doubt that his labors did shorten his life."*

He died in Macon, Ga., on Monday, 23rd of January, 1893, suddenly, although his health had been failing for months, and he was then on his way to Florida hoping to recuperate.

As to his connection with the Supreme Bench, let the following extracts serve to speak, out of scores:

Senator Geo. F. Hoar, of Massachusetts, who had opposed his confirmation, wrote to Mr. Mayes:

"I did not expect, when Mr. Lamar went upon the Bench, that he would succeed, although I had then a very high opinion of his intellectual power. I supposed that his life had been so far from the experience and training of the judge that he would find it impossible to fill that character to his own satisfaction or that of the public. But I was most agreeably disappointed. I think some of his judgments models, both in matter and manner."

While the question of Mr. Lamar's confirmation was pending, Mr. Vilas, himself an accomplished lawyer, then Postmaster General, said:

"Lamar is a man of magnificant surprises. I did not know him well until we met in the Cabinet, and during the past two years I have been very intimate with him. I think that I have never met any man whose intellect has grown upon me so overwhelmingly as has Lamar's. * * * Such a faculty of clear, limpid statement is seldom met. I think that in my time no man that I have known possessed it so well as Mr. Lamar, unless it was the late Matt Carpenter of Wisconsin. * * * * Without making invidious comparisons, it is my judgment that Mr. Lamar will add strength and adornment to the Supreme Bench. I believe that he possesses some qualifications that the Bench needs, and as the years go on the wisdom of his appointment will establish itself far above criticism."

After Mr. Lamar's death, Chief Justice Fuller said of him:

---

*L. Q. C. Lamar: His Life, etc. (Mayes), p. 540, 541.

"He rendered few decisions, but he was invaluable in cousultation. His was the most suggestive mind that I ever knew, and not one of us but has drawn from its inexhaustible store."

In the History of the Supreme Court of the United States, a sumptuous and excellent work prepared under the direction of the Judiciary Centennial Committee, by Hampton L. Carson, an eminent lawyer of Philadelphia, published in 1891, it is said of Mr. Lamar that:

"As a jurist he has taken high rank, his opinions being marked by scholarship and careful study of principles and of cases. * * * * The logical power of Mr. Justice Lamar, his striking talents as a rhetorician, his clearness of vision in detecting the true point in controversy, and his tenacious grasp upon it through all the involutions of argument, his familiarity with adjudged cases, his well defined conception of the nature of the general government and the distribution of its powers under the constitution, are best displayed in his dissenting opinion **in re** Meagle," etc.

Mr. Lamar's first wife died in the night of December 30, 1884. Their children were: (1) Frances Eliza; (2) Lucius Q. C.; (3) Sarah Augusta; (4) Virginia Longstreet. On January 5, 1887, he married Herrietta J. Dean, of Macon, Ga., widow of Gen. Wm. S. Holt, formerly President of the Southwestern Railroad Company.

Frances Eliza, oldest child of Justice Lamar, was born in Oxford, Ga., on July 20, 1848. On the 11th of May, 1869, she married at Oxford, Mississippi, Edward Mayes. She still lives in 1908. It would ill beseem the writer of this sketch to pronounce any eloborate eulogium upon this lady, his wife. Her children and her friends do know her. Hostile criticism has never touched her, and after thirty-eight years of the intimacy of married life, her husband here declares that she is the perfect flower of her exceptional ancestors, in mind and in soul beautiful and flawless. Her children are: 1, Mary Lamar; 2, Lucius Lamar, born Nov. 21, 1872, died 27 March, 1873; 3, Elizabeth Lamar, born Jan. 28, 1878; 4, Edward Walthall, born May 1, 1880, died June 14, 1886; 5, Lucius Lamar, born July 21, 1882; 6, Francis Lamar (a son), born July 26, 1885; 7, Basil Robert, born October 13, 1889. Mary Lamar Mayes (1) was born March, 22, 1870, educated at

Whitworth College, married at Carbondale, Ill.; Alexander Bennett Sanders, a contracting engineer, on 22 Sept., 1898, and now (1908) resides at Jackson, Mississippi. She had children: Alexander Bennett, Jr., born in Palestine, Texas, on the 10th day of July, 1899; and Fannie Mays born in Beaumont, Texas, Jan. 24, 1902, died Jan. 31, 1904; and Mary Mayes and Edward Mayes born in St. Louis, Mo., Nov. 2, 1905.

Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus, second child of Justice Lamar, was born at Oxford, Mississippi, on the _____day of _____, 185__, he married Kate Lester, of Oxford, Miss., by whom he had one child, Lucius Q. C. (fourth of the name in direct line, now a young lawyer in Dallas, Texas). On the _____day of _____, he married, second, Attala_____ _____, of Washington City, by whom he has had children. _____He now lives in Washington, and is a clerk in the U. S. Land Office.

Sarah Augusta, called "Gussie," third child of Justice Lamar, was born in Oxford, Miss., on the_____day of 186__. Was educated at Wellesly, Mass. On the____day of May, 1880, she married F. Hugh Heiskell, an attorney of Memphis, Tenn. (now Judge of the Chancery Court), where they now live. Children: 1, Joseph Heiskell, born_____, died_____; 2, Lamar, born_____; 3, Virginia Longstreet, born_____; 4, Longstreet; 5, Hugh; 6, Mary.

Virginia Longstreet, youngest and fourth child of Justice Lamar was born in Oxford, Miss., _____1865. On the_____ day of_____, 18____, she married a distant cousin, William Harmong Lamar, of Alabama, then a young lawyer in Washington, D. C. They live (1908) in Rockville, Md., and Mr. Lamar holds an office in the Department of Justice at Washington. Children: 1, Virginia Longstreet, born 2nd March, 1889; 2, Augusta Glenn, born 24th June 1891; 3, Lucius Q. C., born 14th Oct. 1892; 4, William Harmong, Jr., born 21st March, 1897.

John Basil Lamar never married.

He was a member of the Georgia Secession Convention of 1861.

"The names of Washington Poe, Engenius A. Nisbet and John B. Lamar are inseparably associated among the most honored in the history of Macon, and are among the purest recorded in the galaxy of the State.

"Colonel Lamar was a gentleman of the noblest type of honor and chivalry, refined in manners and highly educated. He had served in the Legislature and been elected to Congress. The honors of office were forced upon him contrary to his inclinations. Possessing much wealth, he preferred the ease of private life to the honors of any public office. He was devoted to the works of the standard authors, and being gifted with a bright mind, he acquired high literary attainments. He was a most interesting and perspicuous writer, and his contributions upon various subjects ever attracted complimentary attention. Though possessing a great determination of character, he was noted for his modesty, which was of female delicacy. The most distinguished quality in his noble nature was his unostentatious benevolence. No man ever lived in the community who had been more generous to the poor. He was also liberal to several benevolent institutions and to the church, and exercised a deep interest in their success.

"Contrary to the urgent solicitations of his friends, who thought his services to his country more valuable, at home, he entered the Army of Virginia as Aid to his brother-in-law, General Howell Cobb. On the 16th of September, 1862, during the battle at Crampton's Gap, where two thousand Confederates heroically held the pass against fifteen thousand Federals, in riding alone through a storm of the evening's bullets to deliver an important command, a fatal minnie ball pierced his left breast, and he poured forth his blood as he had most patriotically appropriated his purse, for the Confederate cause."*

At this same fatal battle fell the brilliant and heroic Lt-Colonel Jefferson M. Lamar.

---

*__Historical Record of Macon & Central Georgia__: Bulter; pp. 243, 244.

ZACHARIAH LAMAR

There were three of the older Lamars who bore this name. First, there was Zachariah one of the five sons of the first John (VII, p. ____, **ante**); and then there were two grandsons of the first John named Zachariah; one being son of the second John (VI, p. ______, **ante**) as to whom particular mention has been made on p.____; the other being Zachariah son of Thomas (VI, p. ____, **ante**).

The last Zachariah named above, was therefore nephew to the first, cousin to the second, brother-in-law and cousin to "Little River John" (V), and uncle to Mirabeau B. and to the Judge Lucius Q. C., the elder.

He is mentioned in **White's Hist. Collections of Georgia,** p. 267, under the style of "Col. Zachariah Lamar," as being among the early settlers of Baldwin County, Ga.

Sparks says of him in his **Memories of Fifty Years,** on p. 173 that he "was a man of high order of mind, distinguished for his love of truth, stern honesty, and great energy. He was the father of Colonel John B. Lamar, who fell in the service of the South in the recent conflict. He was one of Georgia's noblest sons, and his memory is cherished by all who knew him."

He was also the father of Mary Ann, who married Gov. Howell Cobb, as told previously (p. ____); and through her was maternal ancestor of the distinguished group of Georgians composing the descendants of Gov. Cobb.

Evalina Lamar, (6), daughter of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V), married Michael Harvey. She is buried in the garden on the old farm, by her father's side. There is also over her a slab, with the following inscription on it, also written by Mirabeau, her brother:

"Sacred to the memory of Evalina Harvey, wife of Michael Harvey, and daughter of the late John Lamar. Born November 4th, 1903, died April 3rd, 1833. She was justly endeared to all her friends for the many amiable qualities that adorned her character. In the various relations of life she performed her duty with the steady devotion and humble patience of a Christian.

" 'Thou shalt guide me with thy counsel, and afterwards receive me to glory.' "

Mary Ann Lamar, (6), daughter of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V) married_____Moreland; children, Ella; 2, Turner; 3, John Thompson; 4, Lucius; 5, Joseph; 6, Aurelia; 7, Loretto; and 8, Mrs. Rebecca Forest (mother of Macon).

Aurelia Lamar, (6), daughter of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V), married _____ Randle; children: John M. Randle (who was father of Eva, Lilla, Corinne Aureila, and Mrs. Mary Chappell Morton); Lackington Randle (father of Ralph); Xenophon Randle. Aurelia died July 15, 1870, at Columbus, Ga., while on a visit to Mrs. Chappell, her sister.

Louisa Lamar, (6), daughter of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V), married_____ McGehee; children: Mrs. Loretto Randle, Abner, Mrs. Keenan, Lucius M., (who was father of Walter); Jefferson L., and Thomas L.

Loretto Lamar, (6) youngest child of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V) was born about 1825; married Hon. Absalom H. Chappell, of Macon Ga., a very distinguished lawyer, in whose office L. Q. C. Lamar, her nephew, afterwards studied law, and who afterwards in 1847 associated him as a junior partner. Judge Chappell and his wife removed to Columbus, Ga., about 1849, died in 1906. In May, 1850, Mr. L. Q. C. Lamar, wrote to Judge Chappell, from Oxford, Miss., as follows:

"After my own immediate family there is no being on earth for whom I entertain and affection so devoted and abiding as that which I cherish for my aunt Loretto. The year I lived with you was fraught with benefits to my character of incalculable value, and from you in particular I have received impressions which I shall carry with me to my grave."* The children of this lady are: Mrs. Rebecca D. Toomer; John Lamar Chappell (who was a bachelor, in business in Memphis, Tenn.); J. Harris Chappell, (who is President of the Agricultural College of Georgia); Thomas J. (who is an attorney, in Columbus, Ga., and with whom his mother resides); and Lucius H.

---

*L. Q. C. Lamar, His Life, etc.; Mayes; pp. 37, 45.

Thomas Randolph Lamar, (6) third son of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V), was a physician. He was still living in Georgia in 1858. He married Louisa Hill (6), grand-daughter of Clementins Davis (4) the grandson of Thomas Lamar (2) (IX). His only adult son Lavoisier Legrand Lamar, (7) married----------, and had children: Mrs. Lula Strother (mother of Nellie); Henry R.; and Thomas R. (father of Lamson L., Lavoisier, Susan, Louisa and Clara).

Jefferson Jackson, (6), fourth son of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V) married his distant cousin Rebecca (7), daughter of Jeremiah Lamar (6) son of John (5), son of Jeremiah (4), son of John (3) (VIII). His children were: (1) Lucius M. Lamar (a very favorite cousin of Senator L. Q. C., and father of Jefferson, John Rawls, Lavoisier LeG. Jr., Lucius M., Charles, Carrie, and Mrs. Mary L. Lewis); (2) Rebecca Evelina, who married William Polk, a wealthy planter of Louisiana, and became mother of William, Mrs. Alice Kinney, and Mrs. Eloise Ferris.

Mirabeau Buonaparte Lamar, (6), second son of John (5) (V) and Rebecca (5) (V), was born at Louisville, Georgia, August 16, 1798. He was a man of much genius and of great versatility of talent—writer, soldier, lawyer, statesman, and diplomatist—in each career he was successful, and in some brilliant. Beginning life as a planter and merchant, he cultivated letters; and in 1828 he established the **Columbus Inquirer,** a States-rights paper. Some of the best essays upon the government of the United States which appeared in the press of Georgia, were from his pen. Later, he displayed a capacity of no mean order for poetry, publishing a volume of "Verse Memorials."

When the struggle for Texan independence reached its acute stage in the latter part of the year 1835, he went to that province to lend his personal aid to the struggling province. Mexico was a federal union of states much like the United States; and that region of the country which is now Texas, in which were then about 20,000 American settlers, had been annexed to the Mexican state of Coahuila. The people of Texas conceived themselves entitled to statehood within the union, and an agitation was begun looking to that end; but President Santa Anna not only rejected the demand, but also imprisoned Mr. Austin the Texan agent. At this juncture

President Santa Anna overthrew the federal administration by the popular party in Mexico and set up a central administration by an aristocratic and church party, with a view to establishing himself more firmly and permanently in power. The discontent in Texas with this revolution led to a movement for a convention to adopt a government separate from that of Coahulia, but within the Mexican union—much as in later times California did in our union. Santa Anna sent the Mexican General Cos with troups to restore order in Texas, and hostilities began. Lamar is said to have been the first man to declare publicly for Independence. On the 2nd of March, 1836, Texas declared its independence of Mexico; on the 6th occurred the butchery at the Alamo; on the 20th the Texian troops under Fannin surrendered at Goliad, under a stipulation that they were to be received and treated as prisoners of war, but on the 27th Santa Anna had 330 of them shot, being all of them except a few surgeons and attendants.

On the afternoon of April 20th, the Mexican army, about 1,500 strong, under Santa Anna, and the Texian army about 800 strong under Gen. Sam Houston, confronted each other on the San Jocinto. There was some preliminary skirmishing. "The day closed," says Pease, "by a very brilliant feat of arms on the part of the Texian cavalry, in which Gen. Lamar, the present Vice-President of Texas, who had then but recently arrived in the country, led a charge against the Mexican cavalry, with an intrepedity and success that would have done honor to Murat, the quowdan king of Naples, in the midst of his splendid career of arms."*—"He was not less ardent as a soldier than as a speaker; and, in the cavalry-skirmish on the day before the battle of San Jocinto, saved the life of General Rusk by a free exposure of his own."†

The battle of San Jocinto, which secured the independence of Texas occurred on the next day, April 21st. "The first regiment," says Gen. Houston, "commanded by Col. Burlson, was assigned to the centre. The second regiment,

---

*Hon. H. M. Pease, in his **Account of the Texian Revolution and War,** published by H. Huntington Jr., Hartford, 1838, p. 347.

†Wm. Preston Johnston, in his **Life of Gen. A. S. Johnston,** p. 93.

under the command of Col. Sherman, formed the left wing of the army. The artillery, under the special command of Col. Geo. W. Hockley, inspector-general, was placed on the right of the first regiment; and four companies of infantry under the command of Lieut. Col. Henry Millard, sustained the artillery upon the right. Our cavalry, sixty-one in number, commanded by Col. Mirabeau B. Lamar (whose gallant and daring conduct on the previous day had attracted the admiration of his comrades, and called him to that (station) placed on our extreme right, completed our line. Our cavalry was first dispatched to the front of the enemy's left, for the purpose of attracting their notice, whilst an extensive island of timber afforded us an opportunity of concentrating our forces and displaying from that point, agreeably to the previous design of the troups. * * * * Col. Sherman with his regiment, having commenced the action upon our left wing, the whole line, at the centre and on the right, advancing in double quick time sung the war-cry, "**Remember the Alamo,**" received the enemy's fire, and advanced within point-blank shot before a piece was discharged from our lines. Our line advanced without a halt, until they were in possession of the woodland and the enemy's breast-work. The right wing of Burleson and the left of Millard taking possession of the breastwork; our artillery having gallantly charged up within seventy yards of the enemy's cannon, when it was taken by our troops. The conflict lasted about eighteen minutes from the time of close action until we were in possession of the enemy's encampment, taking one piece of cannon (loaded), four stand of colors, all their camp-equipage, stores and baggage. Our cavalry had charged and routed that of the enemy upon the right, and given pursuit to the fugitives, which did not cease until they arrived at the bridge which I have mentioned before, Captain Karnes, always among the foremost in danger, commanding the pursuers. * * * * In the battle, our loss was two killed and twenty-three wounded, six of whom mortally. The enemy's loss was 630 killed * * * * wounded 208 * * * * prisoners 730—President General Santa Anna, Gen. Cos, four colonels, aids to Gen. Santa Anna, and the colonel of the Guerrero battalion, are included in the number."†

---

†Gen. Houston's Official Report to President Burrett, quoted in Pease, p. 349.

Having captured Santa Anna, the question was, what to do with him in view of his tyranical and barbarious conduct, especially the butcheries at the Alamo and Goliad.

"In the council which decided the fate of Santa Anna, we find Lamar acting as Secretary of War, and measuring his political strength with Houston and Burret. His vote was, **'Death to the Murderer,'** and he gave cogent reasons in support of its justice and policy.

"Houston, who, though not in the cabinet, exercised a patent influence on its action, was for the mildest measures, but proposed nothing. Burnet **felt** with Lamar but **reasoned** with his cabinet, that it would be most expedient to make by treaty the life of Santa Anna available. To this Lamar replied with keen foresight, that treaties made in duress are invalid—that their prisoner had not the power to keep his contract, and that, granting the validity of the treaty and his ability to enforce it, Santa Anna's proverbial faithlessness would preclude even the wish. He had violated every law of humanity and every usage of civilized warfare, and as the greatest of criminals, should have 'his punishment read from the code of Draco. If terms were made, however, he would not have the nation faithless to her word. * * * * At last, however, to the great relief of President Burnet, Gen. Santa Anna was despatched in honor and safety to his own country."*

"After the battle of San Jocinto General Rusk had assumed command of the army, in the absence of General Sam Houston, who had taken a furlough on account of his wound. About the 1st of July the contending factions in the army had reached such a point that the Government thought the best way to reconcile them was to appoint as major-general the gallant and eloquent Lamar, who had won distinction at San Jocinto, and was popular with both soldiers and citizens. On his arrival at the army he found it greatly excited and a strong opposition organized against him. He made a persuasive speech to the soldiers, and then appealed to a vote, which, proving largely against his taking the command, he was constrained to retire, General Rusk remaining in command. Rush

---

*C. Montgomery in the **Democratic Review** for March 1845, p. 285, article on "The Presidents of Texas."

soon found that Felix Huston, who had been chairman of the organization that resisted and finally rejected Lamar, had superseded him in the suffrages of the army. * * * * Huston was a Kentuckian who * * * * had been disappointed in arriving too late to share in any of the combats of the revolution; but he thought, nevertheless, that the contingent recruits that he brought to the defense of the frontier entitled him to the command of the army * * * * and, as he soon won the suffrages of the soldiers by his audacity and popular manners, it was not long before he spoke of the troups as my army,' and really felt that such was the case."*

In December, 1836, Gen. Lamar was elected the first Vice-president of Texas, Gen. Sam Houston being President. In December 1838 he became President, with ex-President Burnet as Vice-President.

"The outlook of Texas seemed anything but bright at the beginning of Lamar's administration. Fortune, which at first appeared to smile upon the rising republic, finding her favors neglected, had now begun to turn away her face. Nearly three years had passed since San Jocinto, and yet no government, except the United States, had acknowledged the independence of Texas. The European powers refused recognition, and pointed to the claim of title maintained by Mexico, with an annual invasion that disputed possession of the soil and pretended to imperil the national existence. * * * * The treasury was empty, the paper-money much depreciated, and public credit gone. No army, no navy, no money, nor credit, and no national recognition; with Mexico relieved of French invasion, and an Indian war was ready to burst upon the country—what was left? Hope, God's gift to the young—men or nations. * * * *

"Lamar was a man of high, unbending honor; his native gifts were fine—largeness and brilliancy of conception, fancy, eloquence, readiness, and courage. His impetuous valor, enthusiastic temper, and unselfish aspirations for the honor and welfare of his country, made him the fit choice of Texas as her President. Though ardent, impulsive, and open to present impressions, sometimes, especially in seasons of

---

*Life of General A. S. Johnston (by Wm. Preston Johnston), pp. 71, 74, 75.

ill-health, he gave way to the reaction that displays itself in waywardness, dejection and lassitude. But he was brave, affectionate, open as the day, lofty, and magnanimous. * * * *

"The Administration accepted the trust imposed upon it, with the full purpose and reasonable expectation of carrying out a broad plan for the security and greatness of the country. It achieved much; and even where it fell short of the design, as is apt to be the case in a free government whose legislation is based upon compromise, it laid the foundation of future power and progress for the State. The financial policy proposed by the President was rejected by Congress. While, of course, it cannot be asserted that a national bank, which he recommended, with its credit based upon the public domain and the public deposits, would have created financial confidence and maintained values in those distressed times, still the adherence to a system of unlimited, unguaranteed, irredeemable issues was not the device nor the choice of this adminstration. * * * *

"To the eloquent appeals of Lamar are due the foundation of the educational system of Texas, and the conservation of noble grants of public lands to the School and University funds. By him, too, a great tide of corruption and public plunder was suddenly stopped. * * * * The land-pirates and bogus-claim swindlers, forming a numerous and adriot class, were roused into an active and bitter hostility, which was not without effect in hampering the measures of the administration.

"The foreign relations of Texas were now put upon an entirely new footing. Her independence was acknowledged by France, England, Belgium, and Holland; treaties of amity and commerce were made, and diplomatic relations were established which, by alternately piquing the pride and the interest of the great powers, eventually had to annexation to the United States. The two subjects most pressing, however, were the defense of the frontier and the settlement of the Indian question. A navy was put upon the Gulf, which not only secured the coast of Texas but annoyed that of Mexico, lent aid to her rebels, and helped to embarrass her counsels. By judicious encouragement to the Federalists, and by letting loose upon her the more restless spirits of the border, Mexico was kept busy in defense of her own soil, so that,

during this administration Texas was not invaded by land or sea—the best justification of its foreign policy. This energetic line of action was stigmatized as a war policy; but it was in fact, the only true peace policy, since it transferred the theatre of war to the enemy's territory, gave to foreign countries an assurance of strength, and by an exhibition of interval security, unknown before, invited capital and population. * * * *

"President Lamar's Administration found a host of haughty and cunning savages occupying and claiming the best part of the republic, engaged in actual hostilities against Texas, and threatening a devastating war. Whatever might have been their original rights, the law of necessity and self-preservation must finally have led to their expulsion; but, in truth, they were treated with forbearance, though with firmness; and, if the present possessors of the soil have a little adjudicated by the sword, yet this remedy was tired only when all others failed. * * * *

"Congress passed an act, Jan. 14, 1839, appointing five commissioners to select a site for the capital of the republic. * * * * To the situation selected there were objections not to be disregarded, except by men mindful not of themselves but of posterity only. It was an outpost, within the range of the fierce Comanches, 35 miles beyond Bastrop, the extreme settlement in that direction. * * * * General Johnston wrote May 9, 1839, 'The agent has gone forth with his workmen **armed**, under the protection of a company of riflemen, to begin the new city of Austin. * * * * General Johnston, who was a citizen of Austin in the first month of its existence, said fifteen years afterward: 'I believe the foundation of this town has no precedent in history. The Government placed itself on a frontier open to its foes, and fixed there the center of its future dominion. By doing so it secured the desired result. Where an American has planted his foot he will not go back.'

In August, 1839, the new capital was laid out: in September the government officers were removed from Houston; on the 1st of October the officers of government resumed their

---

*__Life of Gen. A. S. Johnston,__ pp. 92, 93, 94, 95, 108, 113, 114.

duties 'as directed by law, with very little inconvenience to themselves and no derangement of the public business beyond its temporary suspension.' "*

The story of Mirabeau Lamar's Presidency is told thus by Montgomery in his article on "The Presidents of Texas," already quoted from:†

"With **Mirabeau B. Lamar** we open a new chapter of Texian history. Hitherto Texas had existed by sufferance. She had stood at the door, but had not entered the Hall of Nations. Lamar felt that she deserved and must have a place and name, and boldly took the helm. If he steered too directly to his landmarks—and this is the only accusation—without due attention to the shoals and drifts of the channel, it must at least be conceded that he made a splendid and successful voyage. Up to his administration the young nation had lived on in the choas of revolutionary expedients. She had no revenue on which to base credit, and her rich wilderness of unappropriated land could only be made available under a settled government and with an increased population. Meanwhile a navy was to be created, and an efficient border defense organized, for Mexico was continually threatening invasion, and the Indian tribes pressed sorely on the frontier settlements. Lamar reduced public business to form and order, and strengthened the navy so effectually that, so far from being molested at home, the Lone Star became a frequent and dreaded victor in the Mexican waters. He effectually protected the Western frontier, by carrying the government thither and establishing the capital at once on the spot Congress had designated as its eventual site. It was situated at the extreme verge of the white setlements, and in great danger of Indian forays, but the increase of population consequent to the permanent location of the government, was a better safegard to the border than all the forts or disciplined regiments Texas could command. On the beautiful Colorado, in a region of surpassing beauty, and in a clime of unmatched purity, rose as if by magic the romantic village of Austin, and there for three years the restless Congress and Cabinet of Texas had a constitutional abiding place. But—alas for Texas stability!—on the fourth it was abandoned to the Indians, the

---

†Democratic Review for March, 1845, p. 287.

'government' resumed its wanderings, and the wild buffalo and ravening wolf were invited to make their liar in its abondoned halls. Since then the representatives of foreign powers (written in 1845) have been kept making perpetual excursions in search of the Executive. Still it is something that the government was 'at home' for three years, and that fact lends a kind of distinctive complexion to the administration of Gen. Lamar.

"The cause of education received its first national impulse under Lamar. The Texians are intelligent, liberal, and alive to the vital importance of this great element of republicianism, but there were so many calls upon their inadequate means, that they had overlooked making provision for its support. With a broad forecast for the future, Lamar pointed out how the timely appropriation of a minute fraction of the national domain would secure eventually the blessings of universal instruction, and urgently recommended that suitable grants should be selected and set aside while the best lands were vacant. * * * *

"The periodic revulsion of feeling which seems a stated epidemic in Texas re-elected Houston; and his predecessor descended to private life with the same serene dignity he had evinced in taking the chair of state. Without dispute or comment he resigned his name to the verdict of his compatriots, and he may safely rely on their justice.

"Lamar cannot be portrayed in a few bold strokes like his Presidential compeers. He has, as it were, a double character, not inconsistent, but in strong contrast; and the shades, as they cross and blend, can only be traced by the hand of a master. He is scarcely of middle height, and of the full and rounded proportions that we associate with a love of ease and self-indulgence. This is true of him, but with an exciting cause he courts peril and is indifferent to privation. This benign, meditative, repose-loving expression indicates strong domestic virtues, and a temper not easily chafed, yet his impetuous energy in his hour of trial startles even his friends, and his enemies have good reason to speak severely of the fiery harshness of his anger. He is remarkably gentle and affectionate in his manners, habitually self-controlled, as men of volcanic passions sometimes are, careful of the feelings, and studious of the happiness of all around him, but there is withal an occasional quickness of gesture, and a latent sparkle in the

mild blue eye, that hint strongly of the dangerous fire that sleeps beneath that placid exterior. Each of his high qualities, and he has many, walks hand in hand with some collateral fault; but his faults spring so naturally from his unpruned virtues, that they are excused with a warmer love than we give to the cold merits of more correct men.

"General Lamar is a Georgian by birth, and of that rough old Huguenot blood which, for so long a space, seemed only to be created to be poured out for freedom. He is a legitimate scion of that honorable stock, and wherever liberty has work to do, he is ready to bleed or toil for her sake. His local predilections are of the strongest, but his indomitable sense of justice protects him from unfair prejudices. All his associations are with the South, and he loves the Southern land with a filial and unreasoning devotion. Who but glances contemptiously at her institutions, insults his household gods, and he would deal with him as a heretic and a stranger; but he would war with equal vehemence against him who would invade the repose of the North. With still deeper enthusiasm he loves the beautiful land which has lavished so much affection on him. It has been well said of him that 'His native Union he honors as a mother—to Texas he gives the passionate love of a bridegroom; he wooed her by his eloquence, he won her with his sword. He may chide her wayward fancies, and fly from her caprices, but he perpetually retraces his truant steps, to repose at her feet.'

"Gen. Houston's second administration has been called 'the government of omission.' * * * * Elated by the triumph of his non-action plan, Houston resolved to test the utmost capabilities of the system. He deliberately went to work to nulify all Lamar had done or amied to do. * * * * His policy has laid waste the Eden of the West. All the farms around Austin have been deserted, and the country house of President Lamar, only two miles from the capital, can no longer be inhabited. The tenants would be scalped in a week. The Red men do not reciprocate, as yet, the loving kindness of the Texian government."

After the annexation of Texas to the United States, **Mirabeau Lamar** served efficiently in the Mexican war, fighting at Monteray and on the Comanche frontier. In 1857 he was appointed United States Minister to the Argentine Republic, and

in 1858 to Costa Rica and Nicaragua. He died at Richmond, Texas, Dec. 19, 1859.

The following personal sketch of him is extracted from **The Memories of Fifty Years**:*

"He received his education principally at Milledgeville and at Putnam. From his earliest boyhood he was remarkable for his genius and great moral purity. His ardent, practical temperament was accompanied with exquisite modesty, and a gentle playfulness of disposition; with an open unaffected kindness of heart, which as a boy rendered him popular with his fellows at school, and beloved by his teachers. There was in him a natural chivalry of character, which characterized him above all of his early compeers, and made him a model in conduct. Truthful and manly, retiring and diffident, until occasion called out the latent spirit of his nature; there the true greatness of his soul would burst forth in an impetuous eloquence, startling fierce and overwhelming. Nor was this excitement always wasted in words—not a few, when yet a boy, have regretted the awakening of his wrath. It was upon occasions like this that his eye assumed an expression which I have never seen in the eye of any other human being. His eyes were beautifully blue, large, and round, and were always changing and varying in their expression, as the mind would suggest thought after thought; and so remarkable were their variations that, watching him in repose, one who knew him well could almost read the ideas gathering and passing through his mind. There was a pleasant vein of satire in his nature, sometimes expressed, but always in words and in a manner which plucked away its sting. * * * *

"He was my school-fellow and companion in childhood, my friend and associate in early manhood; our intimacy was close and cordial, and in after life this friendship became intense—and I knew him perhaps better than any man ever knew him.

"All the peculiarities of the boy remained with the man, distinguishing him in all his associations. The refined purity of his nature made him naturally to despise and scorn all meanness and vice, and so intensely as to render an association with

---

*Published in 1882, by W. H. Sparks, an octogenarian who knew Mirabeau Lamar personally.

any man distinguished by these, however exalted his intellect, or extensive his attainments, impossible. Falsehood, or the slightest dishonorable conduct in any man, put him at once beyond the pale of his favor or respect. In all my association with him, I never saw an indelicate act in his conduct or heard an obscene word in his conversation. In youth he was fond of the society of ladies—fond of this society not for a pastime, but because of his high appreciation of the virtues of those he selected for society. * * * *

"The love of fame, more than any other passion, fired his ambition; but it was not the love of notoriety—the fame he counted was not that which should only render his name conspicious among men, that he might receive the incense of hypocritical flattery or be pointed at by the fickle multitude —for such, his contempt was supreme; but it was the desire of his heart, and the struggle of his life, to be enbalmed in men's memories as the benefactor of his race. to be remembered for his deeds as the great and the good. * * * *

"Much of his early life was devoted exclusively to literature. His reading, though without order, was select and extensive. He was well versed in ancient history. The heroic characters of Greece and Rome were his especial admiration, and that of Brutus above all others. Of the nations of modern Europe and their history, he knew everything history could teach. His imagination was fired with the heroic in the character of those of modern times, as well as those of antiquity, and seemed the model from which was formed his own. The inflexible integrity, the devoted patriotism, the unselfish heroism of these were constantly his theme when a schoolboy, and the example for his imitation in manhood.

"When a school-boy, and at a public examination and exhibition (then common at the academies throughout the state) our teacher, that paragon of good men, Dr. Alonzo Church, selected the tragedy of Julius Caesar for representation by the larger boys, and, by common consent, the character of Brutus was assigned to Lamar. Every one felt that the lofty patriotism and heroic virtues of the old Roman would find a fit representative in Lamar. I remember, in our rehersals, how completely his identity would be lost in that of Brutus. He seemed to enter into all the feelings and the motives which prompted the great soul of the Roman to slay his

friend for his country's good. * * * * Though a boy, the effect upon the audience was electrical. * * * * There were not ten perhaps who had ever witnessed a theatrical entertainment, but their hearts were mortal and honest, and they saw in the mimic youth the impersonation of the nobility of soul, and mighty truth; and the spontaneous applause was but the sincerity of truth. The exclamation of one I shall never forget: "He is cut out for a great man."—There was no stage-trick; he had never seen a theatre. There was no assumption of fictitious feeling; but nature bubbled up in his heart, and the words of Shakespeare, put into the mouth of Brutus, were but the echo of the deep, true feelings of his own soul. Through all his life this great nature adorned his conversation, and exemplified his conduct.

"The soul of Brutus was born in Lamar. All the truth and chivalry illustrative of the conduct of the one, was palpable in the other. Get those who saw him at San Jacinto, at the head of his sixty horsemen, ride upon the ranks of Santa Anna's hosts, tell of his bearing in that memorable charge, when he rose in his stirrups, and, waving his sword over his head, exclaimed: "Remember, men, the Alamo! Remember Goliad, Fannin, Bowie and Travis! Charge! and strike in vengeance for the murdered of our companions!" Resistless as the tempest they followed his lead, and swept down upon the foe, charging through and disordering their ranks, and, following in their flight for miles, made many a Mexican bite the dust, or yield himself a prisoner to their intrepidity. To this charge was solely attributable the capture of Santa Anna, Almonte, and the principal portion of the Mexican army, and the establishment of Texas independence.

"As a poet, he was above mediocrity, and his **Sully Riley,** and many of his fugitive pieces, will long survive, to perpetuate the refined delicacy of his nature, when, perhaps, his deeds as a soldier and as President of Texas shall have passed away. In statute he was below the medium height, but was stout and muscular. His face was oval, and his eyes blue, and exceedingly soft and tender in their expression, save when aroused by excitement, when they were glazing and luminous with the fire of his soul, which enkindled them. He was free from every vice, temperate in living, and remarkable for his indifference to money—with a lofty contempt for the friends and respectability which it alone conferred. If there ever lived

four men insensible to fear, or superior to corruption, they were the four brothers Lamar. They are all in eternity, and their descendants are few, but they wear unstained the mantle of their ancestry. * * * *

"The name of M. B. Lamar is identified with the history of Texas, as a leader among that band of remarkable men who achieved her independence of Mexican rule. Houston, Sidney Johnston, Bowie, Travis, Crockett and Fannin. He was twice married; his first wife, Miss Jordan, died young leaving him a daughter. This was a bitter blow, and it was long ere he recovered it. His second wife was the daughter of the distinguished Methodist preacher John Newland Moffitt, and sister of Captain Moffitt, late of the service of the Confederacy. He died at Richmond, Fort Bend County, Texas, beloved and regretted as few have been." Dec. 19, 1859.

Mirabeau left no children except the daughter spoken of above, Mrs. Loretta Calder.